TO THE MEMORY

OF

GRIFFITH JOHN WILLIAMS

MEDIAEVAL AND MODERN WELSH SERIES

Supplementary Volume

A GRAMMAR OF MIDDLE WELSH

by

D. SIMON EVANS

THE DUBLIN INSTITUTE FOR ADVANCED STUDIES

1970

FIRST PUBLISHED 1964

REPRINTED 1970

REPRINTED LITHOGRAPHICALLY IN GREAT BRITAIN
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, OXFORD
BY VIVIAN RIDLER
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

PREFACE

My *Gramadeg Cymraeg Canol* was published in 1951. In the meantime scholars and university teachers have expressed the view that an English version should be produced for the benefit of students from outside Wales. That explains the appearance of this present work, which the Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies kindly undertook to publish.

This work is not a translation of the Welsh grammar. It contains many additions and amplifications, as well as alterations which were required in the light of more recent research. In the Introduction I have included a discussion of the present state of MW scholarship, and also a description and classification of the sources for our period. This description is not meant to be exhaustive, and is intended merely as a guide to students who are not familiar with the MW material. Unpublished manuscript material is seldom referred to, and references to printed versions are in the main limited to such books and journals as are readily accessible.

Notwithstanding the work that has already been accomplished, we have still a long way to go in our study of Middle Welsh. At this stage, no authoritative work on the language of the MW period (or, for that matter, of any other period) is possible, and the most that can be claimed for this work is that it seeks to present in as clear and concise a manner as possible the knowledge acquired to date. It would surely be difficult for any such presentation to escape criticism. Here I have throughout aimed solely at a descriptive and synchronic study of Middle Welsh; there is seldom reference to the evidence of other Celtic languages or to historical development. The prominence given here to syntactic features may well be objected to. Syntax, however, is a subject from which grammarians too often shy away, and it certainly merits some discussion in a linguistic work of this kind. I should in fairness add that it is a branch of linguistic discipline in which I have a special interest.

In citing forms I have throughout adhered strictly to the orthography of the text from which they were taken. Endings and prefixes are usually given in the prevailing orthography of the

fourteenth century (i.e. that of WBRh and RBH). This means that *t* and *c* are employed throughout for *-d* and *-g*; *d* is usually used for ModW *dd*, but *d̂* is sometimes used in cases where confusion might arise.

Questions of MW phonology require a fuller and more thorough investigation than has been possible in the preparation of this work. The conservatism of bardic learning tends to conceal certain phonetic developments which were already complete by the MW period. We have a clear example of this in the case of the development of certain diphthongs, which are usually assigned to the ModW period. In listing the MW diphthongs (p. 3) I have omitted *uw* [üu̯], *ai* [ai̯], *au* [aü̯], although there can in fact be little doubt that they were real diphthongs by the MW period. We must await the results of further investigation before arriving at definite and firm conclusions.

I had the good fortune of being able to seek the expert advice of Professor Calvert Watkins of the University of Harvard on points of phonology, and I wish to express my gratitude to him for his help. Professor D. A. Binchy of the Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies has throughout taken a keen interest in the preparation of this work. He read it in manuscript and later in proof, and I need hardly say that I benefited much from his advice and encouragement. I am indebted to the Director of the Institute, Professor Myles Dillon, and to Professor Proinsias Mac Cana, for reading through the final proofs and for helpful comments; and my thanks are also due to the Senior Clerk, Miss Maura Devoy, who has been most forbearing as well as superbly efficient in steering this work through the press.

Finally, I must place on record my debt to the late Professor G. J. Williams, who also read this Grammar in proof. Indeed it was he who first suggested (as far back as 1948) that I should write a Grammar of Middle Welsh. In inscribing this work to his memory, I only wish it were a more fitting witness to the constant encouragement and help given to me (as to many others) by this generous and righteous scholar, certainly one of the greatest Welsh scholars of all time.

March 1963 D. SIMON EVANS

CONTENTS

PREFACE v

ABBREVIATIONS x

INTRODUCTION xvi

MIDDLE WELSH xvi

SOURCES xxi

POETRY: Early Poetry xxi

The Court Poets or *Gogynfeirdd* xxv

The Poets of the *Uchelwyr* xxix

PROSE: Tales, Romances, &c. xxx

Laws xxxii

Historical Works xxxiv

Religious and Devotional Works xxxvi

Miscellaneous xl

WORKS OF REFERENCE xliii

PHONOLOGY 1

THE VOWELS 1

THE DIPHTHONGS 3

Ŵ AND *Ŷ* 5

THE CONSONANTS 7

INITIAL MUTATION OF CONSONANTS 14

MORPHOLOGY AND SYNTAX 24

THE ARTICLE 24

THE NOUN 27

THE ADJECTIVE 35

COMPARISON 38

SYNTAX OF THE COMPARED FORMS 41

THE NUMERALS 45
CARDINALS 45
ORDINALS 47
PRONOUNS 49
PERSONAL PRONOUNS 49
INDEPENDENT PRONOUNS 49
DEPENDENT PRONOUNS 53
Conjugated Prepositions § 63
THE RELATIVE PRONOUN 60
THE INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN 74
THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN 82
PRONOMINALIA 85
THE VERB 108
THE REGULAR VERB 114
IRREGULAR VERBS 130
Bot § 144
Syntax of the verb **Bot** § 145
The Mixed Order § 146
COMPOUNDS OF *Bot* 145
MISCELLANEOUS VERBS 149
THE VERBAL NOUN 156
Morphology 156
Syntax 159
VERBAL ADJECTIVES 165
PRE-VERBAL PARTICLES 166
Affirmative 166
Negative 173
Interrogative 174
THE VERBAL SENTENCE 179
The Abnormal Order § 199
PREPOSITIONS 181

ADVERBS 220
CONJUNCTIONS 230
CO-ORDINATIVE 230
SUBORDINATIVE 233
INTERJECTIONS 245

INDEXES 248

ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA 265

ABBREVIATIONS

1. GRAMMATICAL, &c.

adj.	adjective	lit.	literally
c.	*circa*, about	masc.	masculine
cf.	compare	ms(s).	manuscript(s)
col.	column	n.	note
comp.	comparative	neut.	neuter
conj.	conjunction	pers. pron.	personal pronoun
consuet.	consuetudinal	pl.	plural
dem.	demonstrative	plup.	pluperfect
dial.	dialect	poss.	possessive
equat.	equative	p(p).	page(s)
fem.	feminine	prep.	preposition
fut.	future	pres.	present
gl.	glossing	pret.	preterite
ib.	in the same place	pron.	pronoun
imper.	imperative	rel.	relative
imperf.	imperfect	sec. fut.	secondary future
impers.	impersonal	sing.	singular
indic.	indicative	subj.	subjunctive
interject.	interjection	syll.	syllable(s)
interr.	interrogative	v.n.	verbal noun
l.	line	wr.	written
leg.	read		

2. LANGUAGES

A.S.	Anglo-Saxon	Gaul.	Gaulish	MW	Middle Welsh
Bret.	Breton	Gr.	Greek		
Brit.	British	IE	Indo-European	OIr.	Old Irish
Corn.	Cornish	Ir.	Irish	OW	Old Welsh
Engl.	English	Lat.	Latin		
Fr.	French	ModW	Modern Welsh		

3. BIBLIOGRAPHICAL

AC	*Archaeologia Cambrensis*, 1846–.
AL i, ii	*Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales*, Aneurin Owen, 2 vols. London, 1841.
AP	*Armes Prydein*, Ifor Williams. Caerdydd, 1955.

B	*The Bulletin of the Board of Celtic Studies*. Cardiff.
BB	*Brut y Brenhinedd*, John Jay Parry. Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1937.
BBC	*The Black Book of Carmarthen*, J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Pwllheli, 1906.
BD	*Brut Dingestow*, Henry Lewis. Caerdydd, 1942.
BDe	*Buched Dewi*, D. Simon Evans. Caerdydd, 1959.
BM	A manuscript in the British Museum.
BR	*Breudwyt Ronabwy*, Melville Richards. Caerdydd, 1948.
BSL	*Bulletin de la Société de linguistique de Paris*. Paris.
BT	*The Book of Taliesin*, J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Llanbedrog, 1910.
BU	*Barddoniaeth yr Uchelwyr*, D. J. Bowen. Caerdydd, 1957.
BY	*Y Bibyl Ynghymraec*, Thomas Jones. Caerdydd, 1940.
CA	*Canu Aneirin*, Ifor Williams. Caerdydd, 1938.
Card.	A Cardiff manuscript in the Cardiff Free Library.
CFG	*Cystrawen y Frawddeg Gymraeg*, Melville Richards. Caerdydd, 1938.
CLlGC	*Cylchgrawn Llyfrgell Genedlaethol Cymru—The National Library of Wales Journal*. Aberystwyth.
CLlH	*Canu Llywarch Hen*, Ifor Williams. Caerdydd, 1935.
CLlLl	*Cyfranc Lludd a Llevelys*, Ifor Williams. Bangor, 1910.
CMRM	*Census of Medieval and Renaissance Manuscripts in the United States and Canada*, Seymour de Ricci and W. J. Wilson, vol. 1. New York, 1935.
Comp.	*The Computus Fragment*, see ZCP viii. 408, B iii. 256, xiii. 128–9.
Contrib.	*Contributions to a Dictionary of the Irish Language*. Dublin.
Cott.	A manuscript of the Cottonian Collection in the British Museum.
CT	*Canu Taliesin*, Ifor Williams. Caerdydd, 1960.
Cwrt	A manuscript in the Cwrt-mawr collection (NLW).
Cymmr.	*Y Cymmrodor*. London.
Cymmr. Trans.	*The Transactions of the Honourable Society of Cymmrodorion*. London.
ChCC	*Chwedlau Cymraeg Canol*, A. O. H. Jarman. Caerdydd, 1957.
ChO	*Chwedlau Odo* (new edition), Ifor Williams. Caerdydd, 1958.
ChSDR	*Chwedleu Seith Doethon Rufein* (new edition), Henry Lewis. Caerdydd, 1958.
DB	*Delw y Byd* (*Imago Mundi*), Henry Lewis a P. Diverres. Caerdydd, 1928.

DGG	*Cywyddau Dafydd ap Gwilym a'i Gyfoeswyr* (second edition), Ifor Williams a Thomas Roberts. Caerdydd, 1935.
DWB	*Dictionary of Welsh Biography*. London, 1959.
EC	*Études Celtiques*. Paris.
EEW	*The English Element in Welsh*, T. H. Parry-Williams. London, 1923.
EGC	*Elfennau Gramadeg Cymraeg*, Stephen J. Williams. Caerdydd, 1959.
EL	*Yr Elfen Ladin yn yr Iaith Gymraeg*, Henry Lewis. Caerdydd, 1943.
FAB	*The Four Ancient Books of Wales*, 2 vols., W. F. Skene. Edinburgh, 1868.
FfBO	*Ffordd y Brawd Odrig*, Stephen J. Williams. Caerdydd, 1929.
G	*Geirfa Barddoniaeth Gynnar Gymraeg*, J. Lloyd-Jones. Caerdydd, 1931–63.
GDG	*Gwaith Dafydd ap Gwilym* Thomas Parry. Caerdydd, 1952.
GGGl	*Gwaith Guto'r Glyn*, Ifor Williams a J. Llywelyn Williams. Caerdydd, 1939.
GM	*Gwassanaeth Meir*, Brynley F. Roberts. Caerdydd, 1961.
GMWL	*A Glossary of Mediaeval Welsh Law*, Timothy Lewis. Manchester, 1913.
GOI	*A Grammar of Old Irish* (translated by D. A. Binchy and Osborn Bergin), Rudolf Thurneysen. Dublin, 1946.
GP	*Gramadegau'r Penceirddiaid*, G. J. Williams ac E. J. Jones. Caerdydd, 1934.
GPC	*Geiriadur Prifysgol Cymru*. Caerdydd, 1950–.
GTA	*Gwaith Tudur Aled*, 2 vols., T. Gwynn Jones. Caerdydd, 1926.
Handlist	*Handlist of Manuscripts in the National Library of Wales*, 3 vols. Aberystwyth, 1943, 1951, 1961.
Hav.	A manuscript in the Havod collection in the Cardiff Free Library.
HGCr	*Hen Gerddi Crefyddol*, Henry Lewis. Caerdydd, 1931.
Hg MSS ii	*Selections from the Hengwrt MSS.*, vol. ii, Robert Williams and Hartwell Jones. London, 1892.
HGrC	*The History of Gruffydd ap Cynan*, Arthur Jones. Manchester, 1910.
HRB	*The Historia Regum Britanniae of Geoffrey of Monmouth*, Acton Griscom. London, 1929.
IEW	*An Introduction to Early Welsh*, John Strachan. Manchester, 1909.

IGE	*Cywyddau Iolo Goch ac Eraill*, Lewis, Roberts, a Williams. Bangor, 1925. (IGE², 1937 edition.)
JCS	*The Journal of Celtic Studies*. Baltimore, Md.
Jes. Coll.	A manuscript in the Jesus College, Oxford, collection.
Juv.	Fragments of Old Welsh in the Juvencus MS., Cambridge University Library, Ff. 4. 42: a copy of Juvencus's poetical version of the Gospels. Glosses, see *Kuhn's Beiträge* iv. 385–423, *Transactions of the Philological Society* (1860–1) 204–49. Two poems, see B vi. 101–10, 205–24, xiii. 205. See also LHEB 49–53.
L & P	*A Concise Comparative Celtic Grammar*, Henry Lewis and Holger Pedersen. Göttingen, 1937.
LBS	*The Lives of the British Saints*, 4 vols., Baring-Gould and Fisher. London, 1907–13.
LHEB	*Language and History in Early Britain*, K. H. Jackson. Edinburgh, 1953.
LL	*The Text of the Book of Llan Dâv*, J. Gwenogvryn Evans and John Rhŷs. Oxford, 1893.
LlA	*The Elucidarium and Other Tracts from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi*, J. Morris-Jones and John Rhŷs. Oxford, 1894.
Llan.	A manuscript in the Llanstephan collection (NLW).
LlB	*Cyfreithiau Hywel Dda yn ôl Llyfr Blegywryd*, Stephen J. Williams a J. Enoch Powell. Caerdydd, 1942.
LlC	*Llên Cymru*. Caerdydd.
LlCC	*Llawlyfr Cernyweg Canol* (new edition), Henry Lewis. Caerdydd, 1946.
LlDW	*Llyvyr Du or Weun, Facsimile of the Chirk Codex of the Welsh Laws*, J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Llanbedrog, 1909.
LlHen	*Llawysgrif Hendregadredd*, Rhiannon Morris-Jones, J. Morris-Jones, a T. H. Parry-Williams. Caerdydd, 1933.
MA	*The Myvyrian Archaiology of Wales* (second edition). Denbigh, 1870.
MC	OW glosses in the Corpus Christi College (Cambridge) MS. of the *De Nuptiis Philologiae et Mercurii* by Martianus Capella, edited by Stokes in AC (1873) 1–21. See also B vi. 110–12, LHEB 53.
MFLl	*Mynegai i Farddoniaeth y Llawysgrifau*, Elizabeth J. Louis Jones a Henry Lewis. Caerdydd, 1928.
MM	*Le plus ancien texte des Meddygon Myddveu*, P. Diverres. Paris, 1913.
Most.	A manuscript in the Mostyn collection (NLW).
MS(S).	Manuscript(s).
NLW	The National Library of Wales.

Ox 1	OW material in the *Liber Commonei*, part of Bodleian MS. Auct. F. 4. 32 (Oxoniensis Prior); see *Grammatica Celtica* 1054–9, B v. 1–8, 226–48, vi. 112–15, xiii. 129, xiv. 203, LHEB 47.
Ox 2	OW glosses in Bodleian MS. 572 (Oxoniensis Posterior); see *Grammatica Celtica* 1060–3, *Early Scholastic Colloquies*, W. H. Stevenson (Oxford, 1929), pp. 1–11, LHEB 54–56.
Pant.	A manuscript in the Panton collection (NLW).
Pen.	A manuscript in the Peniarth collection (NLW).
PG	*The Poetry of the Gogynfeirdd from the Myvyrian Archaiology of Wales*, E. Anwyl. Denbigh, 1909.
PKM	*Pedeir Keinc y Mabinogi*, Ifor Williams. Caerdydd, 1930.
R	*The Poetry in the Red Book of Hergest*, J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Llanbedrog, 1911.
RB	*The Text of the Bruts from the Red Book of Hergest*, John Rhŷs and J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Oxford, 1890.
RBH	*The Red Book of Hergest* = Jes. Coll. MS. cxi.
RC	*Revue Celtique*. Paris.
RM	*The Text of the Mabinogion . . . from the Red Book of Hergest*, John Rhŷs and J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Oxford, 1887.
RMWL	*Report on Manuscripts in the Welsh Language*, 2 vols., J. Gwenogvryn Evans. London, 1898–1910.
SG	*Y Seint Greal, Selections from the Hengwrt MSS.*, vol. i, Robert Williams. London, 1876.
St. Chad	The *Surexit*-memorandum, probably constituting the earliest OW material in the *Book of St. Chad*; see LL xliii–xlviii, Cymmr. xxviii. 268–79, CLlGC iv. 46–49, LHEB 42–47.
SW	*The Sentence in Welsh* (The Sir John Rhŷs Memorial Lecture), Henry Lewis. London, 1942.
TC	*Y Treigladau a'u Cystrawen*, T. J. Morgan. Caerdydd, 1952.
TYP	*Trioedd Ynys Prydein*, Rachel Bromwich. Cardiff, 1961.
VKG	*Vergleichende Grammatik der keltischen Sprachen*, 2 vols., Holger Pedersen. Göttingen, 1909, 1913.
VSBG	*Vitae Sanctorum Britanniae et Genealogiae*, A. W. Wade-Evans. Cardiff, 1944.
VST	*Vita Sancti Tathei* (The Bangor Welsh MSS. Society), H. Idris Bell. Bangor, 1909.
WBRh	*The White Book of Rhydderch* = Pen. 4 and 5.
WG	*A Welsh Grammar*, J. Morris-Jones. Oxford, 1913.

WM	*The White Book Mabinogion*, J. Gwenogvryn Evans. Pwllheli, 1907.
WML	*Welsh Medieval Law*, A. W. Wade-Evans. Oxford, 1909.
WS	*Welsh Syntax*, J. Morris-Jones. Cardiff, 1931.
YBH	*Ystorya Bown de Hamtwn*, Morgan Watkin. Caerdydd, 1958.
YCM	*Ystorya de Carolo Magno*, Stephen J. Williams. Caerdydd, 1930.
YMTh	*Ymddiddan Myrddin a Thaliesin*, A. O. H. Jarman. Caerdydd, 1951.
ZCP	*Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie*. Halle a. S.

INTRODUCTION

MIDDLE WELSH

THE early development of Welsh (as of Cornish and Breton) has been exhaustively investigated by Professor Kenneth Jackson in his massive and masterly work, *Language and History in Early Britain* (LHEB). Although his conclusions should not in every case be accepted as final, his chronological history of the sound-system for this early period provides a genuinely firm basis for further investigation. It has been convincingly demonstrated that the major phonetic changes which transformed the parent British into Welsh, Cornish, and Breton, belong to the period *c.* A.D. 450–*c.* 600—roughly the period of the Anglo-Saxon conquest and settlement. Welsh, Cornish, and Breton were separating languages from about the middle of the sixth century, and separate from about the end of that century.

The history of Welsh as a separate language dates from that time. The language of the period from the end of the sixth century to the later eighth is designated Primitive Welsh: there are virtually no direct sources for this period, only inscriptions and a few names in Latin texts.

The Old Welsh period extends from the late eighth century to about the middle of the twelfth. It begins at the point where written records in the language first appear. Our sources for Old Welsh, however, are very meagre. For the most part they consist of proper names or glosses found mainly in Latin texts and occasionally in Anglo-Saxon documents. There are also Latin inscriptions containing Welsh names. Continuous texts are rare, and the few that survive consist of small fragments written by Welsh scribes working on Latin manuscripts. In the *Book of St. Chad* we have the *Surexit*-memorandum and the *Ostenditur hic* entry. The so-called *Computus Fragment* is found in the Cambridge University Library MS. Add. 4543. The *Book of Llandâv* (*c.* 1135–40), written towards the end of the Old Welsh period, contains many pieces of Welsh, notably the Privilege of Teilo

(p. 120) and a number of land boundaries. The amount of verse preserved from this period is very small indeed: there remains hardly anything outside of the two anonymous poems (one of three, the other of nine, stanzas or *englynion*) found in the Juvencus MS. (Juv.). For a useful résumé of the sources for this period, see LHEB 42–59.

The Middle Welsh period extends from the twelfth century to about the end of the fourteenth. Its beginning coincides more or less with the first penetrations of Norman influence into Wales; an influence which was to bring the native culture into contact with cultural movements from outside and end the state of comparative isolation that had obtained hitherto. A considerable body of literature has been preserved in manuscripts from this period. A glance, however, at the sources (pp. xxi–xliii) will show that some of the manuscripts contain material which must have been originally composed in an earlier period. This applies in particular to the poetry of the *Cynfeirdd* for which there is no manuscript evidence before the Middle Welsh period. It is not possible, for the present at any rate, to restore the text of such works to its original form, since our knowledge of the language of the Old Welsh and earlier periods is far too inadequate. Already much work has been done on the Old Welsh period, notably by scholars such as Joseph Loth, Ifor Williams, and Kenneth Jackson, but the surviving material (meagre as it is) still requires an exhaustive and systematic investigation. Such a study, covering morphology, syntax, &c., as well as phonology, is an absolute prerequisite to a more definitive and exact treatment of the early poetry. A solid linguistic foundation is required on which to build valid hypotheses regarding the original form and date of these poems. And it need hardly be added that this in turn would provide us with a clearer and more exact knowledge of the language of the pre-Middle Welsh period. Old Welsh lies outside the scope of this work, and is barely touched upon. Reference is made here to the problems affecting that period only to explain why in this Grammar the early poetry is not treated differently from the remainder of the material which was composed within the Middle Welsh period itself.

It is from the Middle Welsh period then that we have for the first time a corpus of literature preserved in Welsh. The grammarian is here provided with ample material for his study of the language. In it there is wide variety of literary form, style, and subject-matter; it also presents considerable variety of linguistic features as regards orthography, morphology, and syntax. This becomes evident if we examine subjects such as the plural of nouns (pp. 27–33), the 3. sing. pres. indic. of the verb (pp. 116–19), or, in the domain of syntax, the form of a consecutive clause after an equative adjective (pp. 41–42). In writing a 'grammar' of MW, therefore, it must be realized that the best we can achieve is an ordered presentation of this variety within the framework of recognized grammatical divisions and categories. In the present state of MW scholarship, such a presentation cannot be made definitive and exact, especially from the point of view of a diachronic study. We must remember that the language we study is the literary language, in all cases removed from the spoken medium, and sometimes, as in the works of the early *Gogynfeirdd*, very far removed from that medium. On the evidence of such a language, it is often a hazardous undertaking to try and determine with any precision the date for a linguistic change. We are handicapped further by the fact that the date of composition of many works even within the MW period is imperfectly known; we are usually encompassed by even thicker darkness as regards the place of composition. More accurate and reliable information on the date and provenance of individual works is required for a more definitive study of the language of this period. For such information we must rely on internal evidence, derived in the main from a study of textual history, of literary form and content, and also from a detailed linguistic analysis of individual works. From time to time there has been considerable investigation along these lines, but much still remains to be done.

Yet despite our inadequate knowledge, it is possible even at this stage to make certain general observations. We are justified in further subdividing MW into two periods. The first of these extends as far as about the middle of the thirteenth century and may be designated early MW. To this period belong the early

Gogynfeirdd, some of the early sagas, the early recensions of the laws, and some of the historical works. The second may be designated late MW, and covers the period from about the middle of the thirteenth century to about the end of the fourteenth. Within this period fall the works of the later *Gogynfeirdd*, and the earlier *cywydd* poets, the later sagas—especially those of foreign origin, the later recensions of the laws and of the historical works, practically all the religious works, and most of the other prose compositions, such as the grammatical tracts, medical tracts, &c. Taking a general view of the whole field of MW, we can observe certain distinct tendencies and changes, most of which serve as a basis for this division. The changes for the most part relate to orthography, morphology, and syntax. In the field of phonology there is little change: all the major phonetic developments were already complete before our period.

The following are some of the more important changes which can be observed over the MW period. They serve to show that even the literary language of that period was far from static.

Orthography. The use of *e* for *y* (both [ï] and [ə]), common in early MW, is later largely abandoned, as is the use of *u*, *v* for *w* [u] (§ 1); *w* is found for *f* [v] in the earlier but not in the later period, when the sound is represented by *u*, *v*, *f*, *fu*. In the earlier period *t* stands for *d̄*: later *d̄* came to be represented by *d*, and ultimately by *dd* (§ 9).

Morphology and Syntax

Nouns, *Adjectives*, *Pronouns*. The pl. ending *-awr* is superseded by *-eu*, *-oed̄* (p. 28); the infixed possessive pron. comes to be used in the pl. (§ 56 n. 3); the use of the infixed pronoun object with dative meaning is almost entirely abandoned (§ 61); the ending *-u(d̄)* of the 3. pl. of the preposition is replaced by *-unt* (§ 63 n. 1 *b*); the practice regarding the initial mutation of the verb after the negative becomes uniform for both principal and relative clauses (§ 65 n. 1); the use of *yn y(d)* 'where, when' is largely abandoned (§ 76); so is the use of *pa*, *py* substantival (§ 83), and of the construction *pa* / *py* + preposition—except, of course, in the case of *paham* 'why?' (§ 84 *a*); the use of *pet* 'how many?'

(§ 85) and of *cwt*, *cw(d)* 'where?' (§ 86) is almost entirely confined to early MW; the interrogative *pan* develops as relative, and is finally superseded by *y(d)*, *yr* (§ 87); *pan yw* 'that it is' gives way to *mae*, *taw* (ib.); the use of *hynn*, *hynny* (pl.) as substantives becomes less common, these forms being replaced by *y rei hynn* / *hynny* (§ 93); the reflexive forms *uy hun*, &c., come to be used independently even as early as the late MW period (§ 98).

Verbs. The use of the pres. subj. to express futurity is given up (§ 124 *b*); the ending *-if* of the 1. sing. pres. indic. is abandoned early (§ 128 *a*); in the 2. sing. pres. indic. we witness the change *-y(d)* > *-y* (> *-i* in the Mod. period) (§ 128 *b*); archaic endings in the 3. sing. (and pl.) and in the impers. pres. indic. are abandoned (pp. 120–1); so is the use of the 3. sing. imperf. ending *-i* (§ 132 *b* 1); *-awd* gradually encroaches on the older endings *-as*, *-es*, *-is*, *-wys*, &c., of the 3. sing. pret., and has almost completely ousted *-wys* by the end of the MW period (§ 133); the formations found in *gwnedwyf*, *athwyf*, *dothwyf*, &c., are largely abandoned (§ 143 n. 3); the order copula + predicate + subject is replaced by other sequences (§ 145 n. 3); in the 'mixed order' *ys* spreads at the expense of other forms of the copula, but finally the copula is dropped altogether (§ 146); the forms *yssit*, *yssym*, &c., are gradually abandoned (§ 147 *c*, *d*); *pei* is gradually replaced by *po* in clauses expressing degree (§ 149 n.); there is a marked decline in the use of the pre-verbal particle *ry* (§ 185 n. 2); the use of the particle *yt* is abandoned (§ 190 n.), and *y(d)* is gradually replaced by *yr* (§ 187 n.).

Prepositions, *Adverbs*, *Conjunctions.* The simple preposition *ar* 'to' is replaced by *at* (§§ 205, 207); some adverbial forms such as *nw*, *moch*, *rwy* become obsolete (p. 221); the use of the object of destination without a preposition belongs mostly to the earlier period (§ 249 n.); the conjunction *can* is gradually replaced by *canys* (§ 261 *c*), while *os* is occasionally found for *o(t)* in the later period (§ 272 *c*); *pei* develops as a conjunction = 'if' (§ 274).

Early Modern Welsh dates from the fourteenth century, and its beginning is usually associated with the appearance of the poetry of Dafydd ap Gwilym and the other *cywydd* poets of that century.

Late Modern Welsh dates from the sixteenth century, and more especially from the Welsh translation of the Bible (1588).

SOURCES

POETRY

EARLY POETRY

Under this heading are included the works of the *Cynfeirdd* and various other poems which derive originally from a period earlier than that of MW. The earliest extant manuscripts were written in the MW period. In many cases these works have undergone considerable changes in the process of transmission, both oral and written, and now appear mainly in a MW garb. Nevertheless, many earlier features have been preserved.

Most of this early material is preserved in four manuscripts,[1] termed by Skene *The Four Ancient Books of Wales* (FAB i, ii). These are Pen. 1 (xiith and xiiith centuries) = *The Black Book of Carmarthen* (BBC), Card. 1 (*c.* 1250) = *The Book of Aneirin*, Pen. 2 (*c.* 1275) = *The Book of Taliesin* (BT), Jes. Coll. cxi (*c.* 1375–1425) = *The Red Book of Hergest* (RBH)—see *The Poetry in the Red Book of Hergest* (R).

[1] In this chapter reference is made only to manuscripts written before *c.* 1500, although MW material is copiously preserved in later manuscripts of the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries. It is certain that very many manuscripts have perished, and there can be no doubt that some at least of the material from our period has been irretrievably lost. A little over a hundred manuscripts of the period *c.* 1200–1500 have survived, about eighty of which are deposited in the National Library of Wales, Aberystwyth. Most of the others are found in the British Museum, the Bodleian Library, Oxford, and the Cardiff Free Library. The dates of the manuscripts given here are in the majority of cases tentative, and are for the most part those suggested in RMWL. For catalogues of the manuscripts of this period, see RMWL i, ii, Handlist i, ii, *Catalogue of Additional Manuscripts in the Collection of Sir John Williams, Bart.*, J. H. Davies, Aberystwyth, 1921; also *A Catalogue of the Manuscripts relating to Wales in the British Museum*, Edward Owen (Cymmrodorion Record Series, No. 4), London, parts i, ii, iii, iv—1900, 1903, 1908, 1922, 'The Welsh MSS. in the British Museum' (Cymmr. Trans. 1936, 15–40).

References to printed editions are mostly limited to works published since 1900.

The works found in these (and other) manuscripts may be briefly classified as follows:

Y Gododdin and other poems: Card. 1 = *The Book of Aneirin*. See *Canu Aneirin* (CA).

The Taliesin historical poems: twelve poems in Pen. 2 = *The Book of Taliesin*. See *Canu Taliesin* (CT).

The *englynion* of the Llywarch Hen and Heledd cycles (ixth century), remnants of earlier sagas, the prose sections of which are lost: RBH and partly in BBC (originally in WBRh also). See *Canu Llywarch Hen* (CLlH).

The poems of the Taliesin saga (xth century): in *The Book of Taliesin*:

Buarth Beird (7.13–8.20).
Angar Kyvyndawt (19.1–23.8).
Kat godeu (23.9–27.12).
Kadeir taliessin (31.21–32.25).
'Golychafi gulwyd arglwyd pop echen' (33.1–34.14).
Kadeir Teyrnon (34.15–35.21).
Kadeir Kerrituen (35.22–36.22).
'Torrit anuynudawl' (47.19–48.27).
Preideu Annwvyn (54.16–56.13), *c.* 900; see also R. S. Loomis, *Wales and the Arthurian Legend* (Cardiff, 1956) 133–6.
Marwnat uthr pen (71.7–72.8). See also CT x–xvii.

(A prose account of Taliesin's adventures, interspersed with verse elements, is found in a late manuscript; see Ifor Williams, *Chwedl Taliesin*, 1957.)

Poems from various other cycles (Arthur, Gereint, &c.), originally accompanied by explanatory prose passages:

Gereint filius erbin, before 1100: Pen. 1, Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh[1])—a fragment, RBH. See BBC 71–73, Cymmr. vii. 154 (also 121–2), R 1042–3.
'Pa gur yv y porthaur': Pen. 1. See BBC 94–96, also *Aberystwyth Studies*, viii. 54–57—translation.
'Tarv trin anvidin blaut': Pen. 1. See BBC 97–100.

[1] Now restored to its proper place in the original manuscript.

'Englynyon yr Eryr', *c.* 1150: Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350) and later mss. See B ii. 269–86.

Ymddiddan rhwng Arthur a Gwenhwyfar: Llan. 122 (*c.* 1648), Wynnstay 1 (*c.* 1575). See B viii. 203–8, also *Speculum* xiii. 38–51—with translation.

'Seithenhin sawde allan': Pen. 1. See BBC 106–7, *The Early Cultures of North-West Europe* (Cambridge, 1950) 217–18—with translation.

'The Colloquy of Llywelyn and Gwrnerth': RBH. See R 1026–7, ZCP xxi. 24–32—with translation.

Early vaticinatory poetry (ixth–xiith century), mostly linked with the names and legends of Myrddin and Taliesin; see M. E. Griffiths, *Early Vaticination in Welsh*, 1937, pp. 85–137; for the later vaticinatory poems of the xiiith and xivth centuries, see pp. 139–93.

(*a*) The 'Myrddin' poems (see A. O. H. Jarman, *The Legend of Merlin*, 1960):

Bedwenni (but with no hint of Myrddin): Pen. 1. See BBC 47–48, FAB ii. 17–18.

Afallennau: Pen. 1, Pen. 3 (*c.* 1300), Pen. 50 (*c.* 1425–56) = *Y Cwtta Cyfarwydd*. See BBC 48–52, B iv. 121–5, also MA 115–18, FAB ii. 18–21.

Hoianau: Pen. 1, Pen. 3, NLW MS. 6680c, Pen. 50. See BBC 52–63, LlHen 73–74, B. iv. 125–9, also MA 106–8, FAB ii. 21–28.

Ymddiddan Myrddin a Thaliesin, before 1100: Pen. 1, Pen. 26 (*c.* 1456). See YMTh.

Cyfoesi Myrddin a Gwenddydd ei Chwaer, before 1100: Pen. 3—incomplete, RBH, Pen. 20 (*c.* 1350–1400), Pen. 26. See B iv. 114–21, R 577–83, also MA 108–15, FAB ii. 218–33.

Gwasgargerdd Fyrddin yn y Bedd (see Cymmr. vii. 112–21): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), RBH, Pen. 50. See Cymmr. vii. 151–4, R 584–5, also MA 104–6, FAB ii. 234–7.

Peirian Faban: Pen. 50. See B xiv. 104–8.

(*b*) The 'Taliesin' poems, all later than 900—Ifor Williams; in *The Book of Taliesin*:

'Priv gyvarch gelvyd pan ryleat' (1.1–35, R 1054–5).
Arymes prydein vawr (13.2–18.25). See AP.
Daronwy (28.22–29.20).
Glaswawt Taliessin (30.24–31.20).
'Dygogan awen dygobryssyn' (70.16–71.6).
'Kein gyfedwch yam deulwch' (72.9–22).
'Rydyrchafwy duw ar plwyff brython' (72.23–73.19).
Gwawt lud ymawr (74.12–76.14).
'Yn wir dymbi romani kar' (76.15–78.18).
Ymarwar llud bychan (78.19–79.8).
Darogan katwal' (80.17–26). See also CT x–xvii.
'Anrec Vryen': Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), RBH. See Cymmr. vii. 125–6, R 1049–50.

(*c*) 'Anonymous' poems: RBH. See R 1050–3:

'Mal rot yn troi tramhweilyeu' (1050.7–22).
'Moch daw byt yn gryt yn gredyf carant' (1050.23–1051.3).
'Llynghes von dirion direidi' (1051.4–28).
'Crist iessu llwyr uedu lleuuer' (1051.29–1053.15).
'Mor yw gwael gwelet' (1053.16–41).

Early nature poetry, including gnomes, riddling verse, &c., ixth–xiith century: Pen. 1, Pen. 2, BT, RBH, Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350), Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500), &c. See Kenneth Jackson, *Early Welsh Gnomic Poems* (1935), *Early Celtic Nature Poetry* (1935).

The *englynion* of the graves: Pen. 1. See BBC 63–69, FAB ii 28–35.

Other poems, edited and published in various journals:

'Marwnad Cynddylan': BM Addl. MS. 14867, Pant. 14 (both xviiith century)—B vi. 134–41, CLlH 50–52. But see B xx. 102.
'Moliant Cadwallawn': BM Addl. MS. 14867, Pant. 14 (see above)—B vii. 23–26, also MA 133b.
'Moliant Dinbych Penfro', *c.* 875: Pen. 2, Pen. 1 (last stanza only, see BBC 46.1–8)—Cymmr. Trans. 1940, 66–83, also BT 42.16–44.16.

'Echrys ynys gwawt huynys', a poem to Aeddon (xth century): Pen. 2—*Transactions of the Anglesey Antiquarian Society*, 1941, 23–30, 1942, 19–24, also BT 68.5–69.8.

'Englynion y Clyweit', ? *c.* 1200: Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), also Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350)—B iii. 9–15, also MA 127–30, based on a copy similar to that of Jes. Coll. xx.

THE COURT POETS OR *GOGYNFEIRDD*, *c.* 1100–1350

Odes by about sixty of these poets have been preserved. The bulk of the poetry is found in two early manuscripts, namely Jes. Coll. cxi = *The Red Book of Hergest* (RBH), and NLW MS. 6680c (xivth–xvth century). Other early manuscripts containing scraps of poetry from this period are Pen. 1, Pen. 2, Pen. 3 (*c.* 1230–50), Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400). The RBH text is published in *The Poetry in the Red Book of Hergest* (R), that of NLW MS. 6680c in *Llawysgrif Hendregadredd* (LlHen). The religious poetry has been edited in *Hen Gerddi Crefyddol* (HGCr); see also Cymmr. vii. 148–50, B ii. 118–30, iii. 119–22, v. 14–18, x. 33–36. The versions found in the *Myvyrian Archaiology* (MA) (published later in the *Poetry of the Gogynfeirdd* (PG)) are from later copies. See further B xx. 95–103.

The diction of the *Gogynfeirdd*, especially in the earlier period, is often stilted and artificial, and their poetry is not infrequently obscure in meaning. The language here is highly archaic, abounding with words, forms, and constructions which reflect features of an earlier stage, and it must have been far removed from the current speech of that time.

The poetry in the main consists of panegyric and elegy; there is also a considerable body of religious verse. See J. Lloyd-Jones, *The Court Poets of the Welsh Princes* (the Sir John Rhŷs Memorial Lecture, British Academy, 1948).

It is possible to identify and also approximately to date most of the poets from this period whose works have survived. They are listed here, and along with their names are given their approximate floruits as well as references to printed versions of their poems:

? 'Duv in kymhorth in nerth in porth in canhorthuy', *c.* 1100 (BBC 73.11–77.12, EC iv. 275–300).

Meilyr Brydydd, *c.* 1100–37 (LlHen 1–8, PG 28–30, HGCr 21–22, RC xl. 241–7).

Gwalchmai ap Meilyr, *c.* 1130–80 (LlHen 9–33, PG 30–37, HGCr 23–26, R 1184–6, RC xl. 248–66, *Hermathena*, 1935, 67–77).

Llywarch Llaety, *c.* 1140–60 (LlHen 294–6, PG 167–8, NLW MSS. 4973.47b, 5274.18—see Handlist ii. 59, 83).

Hywel ab Owain Gwynedd, *c.* 1140–70 (LlHen 315–21, R 1428, PG 85–87, RC xli. 96–101).

Seisyll Bryffwrch, *c.* 1155–75 (LlHen 180–1, PG 42, 123–5).

Peryf ap Cedifor Wyddel, *c.* 1170 (LlHen 332–3, PG 168, 227, see *Transactions of the Anglesey Antiquarian Society*, 1923, 49–58, DWB 750).

Owain Cyfeiliog, *c.* 1130–97 (LlHen 313–15, PG 78–80, R 1395–6, 1432–5, Cymmr. xxxii. 46–57—with translation).

Daniel ap Llosgwrn Mew, *c.* 1150–1200 (LlHen 48–49, R 1401–5, PG 81, RC xli. 101–2, EC i. 303–19).

Gwilym Ryfel, *c.* 1150–1200 (LlHen 182–5, PG 84–85, RC xli. 104–6).

Cynddelw, *c.* 1155–1200 (BBC 78–79, 85–87, 103–6, LlHen 81–181, 252–6 (see DWB 596–7 under Llywarch ap Llywelyn), R 1165–77, 1396–1401, 1425–8, 1428–32, 1436–42, PG 37–78, HGCr 26–43, RC xl. 249–319, EC iv. 1–47, v. 87–104).

Gwynfardd Brycheiniog, *c.* 1180 (LlHen 197–207, R 1186–92, PG 81–84, HGCr 43–52, RC xli. 102–4).

Llywelyn Fardd, *c.* 1150–75, also *c.* 1220–50; there were probably two different poets of this name, DWB 601 (LlHen 42–48, 208–12, 222–4, PG 134–8, R 1182–4, 1387–96 (1392–4 belong to Cynddelw according to LlHen 172–7, PG 51–52), Cymmr. vii. 146–8, HGCr 80–93, RC xli. 444–51).

Meilyr ap Gwalchmai, *c.* 1170–1220 (R 1146–51, PG 114–18, HGCr 57–64).

Llywarch ap Llywelyn (Prydydd y Moch), *c.* 1173–1220 (LlHen 212–14, 256–93, 296–311 (299–300 attributed to Daniel ap Llosgwrn Mew in R 1401–2), R 1419–25, 1442, PG 87–105, ? HGCr 53–57—but see p. xi, RC xli. 65–95, EC ii. 95–102).

Gruffudd ap Gwrgenau, *c.* 1200 (LlHen 59–60, 190–1, PG 144–5, RC xli. 463–5).

Bleddyn Ddu, *c.* 1200 (R 1249–53, 1284–5).

Einion ap Gwalchmai, *c.* 1203–23 (LlHen 33–41, R 1177–81, PG 118–20, HGCr 65–71, RC xli. 428–30, NLW MS. 1553. 542—see Handlist i. 128).

Elidir Sais, *c.* 1190–1240 (? LlHen 322, R 1143–6, PG 128–33, HGCr 71–78).

Einion ap Gwgon, *c.* 1215 (LlHen 50–54, PG 113–14, RC xli. 424–8).

Phylip Brydydd, *c.* 1220–30 (LlHen 225–9, 231–3, PG 145–7, RC xli. 465–71).

Einion ap Madog ap Rhahawd, *c.* 1237 (LlHen 54–55, PG 154).

Gwgon Brydydd, *c.* 1200–40 (PG 123; see DWB 326).

Einion Wann, *c.* 1230–45 (LlHen 185–90, 192–3, R 1405–7, PG 120–3, RC xli. 430–5, EC i. 114–33, ii. 102–17).

Dafydd Benfras, *c.* 1220–60 (LlHen 191–2, R 1381–3, 1384–7, PG 105–13, RC xli. 413–24).

Y Prydydd Bychan, *c.* 1220–70 (LlHen 233–52, PG 147–54, EC iii. 274–334).

Hywel Foel ap Griffri ap Pwyll Gwyddel, *c.* 1255–70 (LlHen 55–57, PG 154–5).

Madog ap Gwallter, *c.* 1250–1300 (R 1151–4, PG 160–2, HGCr 102–7).

Llygad Gwr, *c.* 1268 (LlHen 60–64, 214–22, R 1383–4, PG 125–8, 143–4, RC xli. 435–44).

Bleddyn Fardd, *c.* 1257–85 (LlHen 57–58, 64–72, 75–80, 181–2, PG 139–43, HGCr 93–94, RC xli. 451–63, xlix. 189–264).

Gruffudd ab yr Ynad Coch, *c.* 1280 (PG 155–60, R 1192–3, 1417–18, HGCr 94–102, RCl. 143–65, Pen. 10—see RMWL i. 320–1).

Gwilym Ddu o Arfon, *c.* 1280–1320 (PG 162–4, R 1225–30, RC xlvii. 406–26; see MFLl 158–9).

Hillyn, *c.* 1280–1330 (LlHen 193–5, PG 165–6).

Y Prydydd Breuan, *c.* 1290–1340 (R 1349, 1355–6, PG 208; see MFLl 299).

Iorwerth Fychan ab Iorwerth ap Rhotbert, *c.* 1300 (LlHen 324–7, PG 166–7).

Gruffudd ap Dafydd ap Tudur, *c.* 1300 (PG 205–7, R 1253–5, 1264–6, *Aberystwyth Studies*, iv. 92–95, NLW MS. 4973. 294b–299—see Handlist ii. 59; see MFLl 113).

Iorwerth Beli, *c.* 1300–25 (PG 204–5; see MFLl 228).

Llywelyn Brydydd Hoddnant, *c.* 1300–50 (LlHen 327–9, PG 164–5, Cwrt 14.172—see RMWL ii. 908, NLW MS. 5274—see Handlist ii. 83; see MFLl 278).

Hywel Ystorym, *c.* 1300–50 (R 1337–48, PG 223–5; see MFLl 190).

Trahaearn Brydydd Mawr, *c.* 1300–50 (R 1221–5, 1357, PG 212–13; see MFLl 359).

Llywelyn Ddu ab y Pastard, fourteenth century (LlHen 229–30, R 1353–5, PG 167; see MFLl 278).

Goronwy Gyriog, *c.* 1310–60 (R 1349–50, PG 213–14, 228–9; see MFLl 105, DWB 284).

Casnodyn, *c.* 1320–40 (LlHen 331–2, R 1233–48, PG 170–6 (176 b 25–55 belong to Cynddelw = R 1176.32–1177.15); see MFLl 14).

Meurig ab Iorwerth, *c.* 1320–70 (R 1373–4, PG 217–18).

Goronwy Ddu, *c.* 1320–70 (PG 218; see MFLl 104–5).

Hywel ab Einion Llygliw, *c.* 1330–70 (PG 220–1, NLW MSS. 1553.275, 4973.369b, 6209.216—see Handlist i. 128–9, ii. 59, 158–9; see MFLl 168).

Iorwerth ab y Cyriog, *c.* 1360 (R 1285–7, PG 216, 234, IGE 213–14; see MFLl 227–8).

Madog Dwygraig, *c.* 1370 (R 1267–80, 1310–11, 1359, 1407, MA 321–7; see MFLl 282–3).

Gruffudd ap Maredudd, *c.* 1350–90 (R 1194–1220, 1230–1, 1313–36, PG 180–204, 232; see MFLl 117).

Llywelyn Goch ap Meurig Hen, *c.* 1360–90 (R 1301–3, 1306–10, PG 221–34; see MFLl 279–80, DWB 601–2).

Dafydd y Coed, *c.* 1380 (R 1303–5, 1330—see RMWL ii. 22, 1359–60, 1375–9, PG 209–12, 232–3; see MFLl 98–99).

Mab y Clochyddyn, *c.* 1380 (R 1350–2, PG 219–20; see MFLl 281).

Ieuan Llwyd ab y Gargam, *c.* 1350–1400 (R 1415–16, PG 216–17—Iorwerth Llwyd; see MFLl 214).

Sefnyn, *c.* 1350–1400 (R 1259–63, PG 214–16; see MFLl 329).
Rhisierdyn, *c.* 1350–1400 (R 1281–4, 1287–91, PG 177–80; see MFLl 308, B i. 123–33, DWB 836–7).
Y Proll, *c.* 1400–40 (R 1311, PG 208–9).

THE POETS OF THE *UCHELWYR*, *c.* 1300–1600

In the fourteenth century there comes into vogue poetry of a different genre, written for the most part in the *cywydd* metre. The earliest and most important of these *cywydd* poets is Dafydd ap Gwilym (*c.* 1320–80). Other poets from the fourteenth and early fifteenth century who belong to the same 'school' are Madog Benfras (*c.* 1320–60), Iolo Goch (*c.* 1340–98), Llywelyn Goch (*c.* 1360–90), Gruffudd Gryg (*c.* 1360–1410), Gruffudd Llwyd (*c.* 1380–1420), Rhys Goch Eryri (*c.* 1385–1448), Siôn Cent (*c.* 1400–30), Llywelyn ab y Moel (*c.* 1400–40).

The language of these poets shows a marked divergence from that of the earlier *Gogynfeirdd*, in vocabulary, morphology, and syntax. It marks the beginning of ModW and is usually designated early ModW. Nevertheless, the earlier poets, more especially those of the fourteenth and early fifteenth centuries, often employ forms and constructions characteristic of MW (see GDG lxxx–xc). Consequently they must be consulted for a study of the language of that period, and are occasionally cited in this Grammar.

For editions of these works, see *Cywyddau Dafydd ap Gwilym a'i Gyfoeswyr* (DGG), *Gwaith Dafydd ap Gwilym* (GDG), *Cywyddau Iolo Goch ac Eraill* (IGE), *Barddoniaeth yr Uchelwyr* (BU), also EC v. 116–47 (Iolo Goch, Ithel Ddu).

PROSE

Some of the prose material, notably one or more of the earlier sagas and parts of the laws, probably dates from a period earlier than that of MW, but no manuscript containing this material is earlier than the thirteenth century.

The prose literature may be generally classified thus: 1. TALES, ROMANCES, &c., 2. LAWS, 3. HISTORICAL WORKS, 4. RELIGIOUS AND DEVOTIONAL WORKS, 5. MISCELLANEOUS.

TALES, ROMANCES, &c.

(*a*) The native tales, collectively known as the Mabinogion. These are preserved in Pen. 4 = part of *The White Book of Rhydderch* (WBRh), and in Jes. Coll. cxi = *The Red Book of Hergest* (RBH). For diplomatic editions of these texts, see *The White Book Mabinogion* (WM), and *The Text of the Mabinogion and other Welsh Tales from the Red Book of Hergest* (RM). For a translation, see *The Mabinogion* (Everyman's Library, No. 97, Romance), Gwyn Jones and Thomas Jones. A French translation was produced by J. Loth in *Les Mabinogion* i, ii (2nd edition, Paris, 1913).

The Mabinogion consist of the following:

Kulhwch ac Olwen, final redaction *c.* 1050–1100: WBRh—incomplete, RBH. See WM 452–507, RM 100–43. Its language is earlier than that of any of the other sagas.

Pedeir Keinc y Mabinogi 'The Four Branches of the Mabinogi', twelfth century: Pen. 6 i, ii (*c.* 1225)—two small fragments, WBRh, RBH. See PKM, also R. L. Thomson, *Pwyll Pendeuic Dyuet* (Dublin, 1957), D. S. Thomson, *Branwen verch Lyr* (Dublin, 1961).

Kyfranc Llud a Llevelys: Pen. 44 (*c.* 1200–50), Llan. 1 (*c.* 1225–50), BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra B v (xvth century and earlier)—as part of *Brut y Brenhinedd*, but independently in RBH, also in WBRh—a small fragment. See CLlLl, also EC i. 261–71.

Breudwyt Maxen Wledic, *c.* 1150–1200: Pen. 16 (*c.* 1250)—imperfect, WBRh, RBH. See Ifor Williams, *Breuddwyd Maxen* (3rd edition, 1928).

Breudwyt Ronabwy, *c.* 1220–5: RBH. See BR.

The three Arthurian romances, *c.* 1200:

Gereint vab Erbin: Pen. 6 iv (*c.* 1275), iii (*c.* 1285)—a fragment, WBRh, RBH. See WM pp. 193–226, 283–5, RM 244–95, also RC vii. 401–35, viii. 1–29—with French translation.

Iarlles y Ffynnawn: WBRh—a fragment, Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350)—a fragment, RBH. See WM 223–61, RM 162–92, B xv. 114–16.

Peredur vab Evrawc: WBRh, Pen. 7 (early xivth century)—incomplete, Pen. 14 (*c.* 1325–50)—a fragment, RBH. See WM pp. 59–89, 286–90, 291–312, RM 193–243, also Leo Weisgerber, ZCP xv. 66–186.

(*b*) Tales, romances, &c., derived from foreign originals, mostly Latin and French:

Ystorya Bown de Hamtwn, *c.* 1250–75 (see YBH lv–lix), from *La Geste de Boun de Hamtone*: WBRh (Pen. 5, end of xiiith century, see YBH xxix–xxxiii), RBH. See *Ystorya Bown de Hamtwn* (YBH).

Tales from the Charlemagne cycle, *c.* 1275–1325, from Latin and French originals: variously grouped and preserved (often imperfectly) in Pen. 5 (*c.* 1325–50) = part of WBRh, Pen. 7 (xivth century), Pen. 8 i, ii (xivth century), Pen. 9 (1336), RBH, Pen. 10 (late xvth and xvith centuries). See *Hengwrt Manuscripts*, vol. ii (Hg MSS ii), 1–118—with translation, Cymmr. xx—a translation with a historical and critical introduction, *Ystorya de Carolo Magno* (YCM), B v. 203–26.

The Legend of the Holy Grail, a Welsh adaptation of two independent French Grail texts, namely *La Queste du Saint Graal* and *Perlesvaus*: Pen. 11 (end of xivth century), Most. 184 (late xvth century). See *Seint Graal* (SG).

Kedymdeithas Amlyn ac Amic, a Welsh version of *Vita Sanctorum Amici et Amelii*: RBH. See RC iv. 201–44—with French translation, J. G. Evans, *Kymdeithas Amlyn ac Amic* (Llanbedrog, 1909), *Chwedlau Cymraeg Canol* (ChCC) 136–41.

Chwedlau Odo, *c.* 1350–1400, 'Odo of Cheriton': Llan. 4 (*c.* 1400). See *Chwedlau Odo* (ChO).

Chwedleu Seith Doethon Rufein, *c.* 1350, 'The Seven Sages of Rome': RBH, Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350), Llan. 2 (*c.* 1450–1500). See *Chwedleu Seith Doethon Rufein* (ChSDR).

Hystoria Gwlat Ieuan Vendigeit, a Welsh version of *Epistola Presbyteri Joannis*: Jes. Coll. cxix (late xivth century), Pen. 15 (xvth century), NLW MS. 5267B (xvth century). See *Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi* (LlA) 164–71.

LAWS

For a general and useful survey of questions relating to composition, content, and manuscript sources, see *Welsh Medieval Law* (WML) vii–xcvi, *The Laws of Hywel Dda* (*Aberystwyth Studies*, x, 1928), *Llyfr Blegywryd* (LlB) vii–xlvi, *The Laws of Hywel Dda* (Liverpool, 1954) 7–22.

It is now generally recognized that the law-books fall into three main groups, roughly representing three editions. These have been styled 'The Book of Blegywryd' (A), 'The Book of Cyvnerth' (B), and 'The Book of Iorwerth' (C).

The earliest manuscript dates from *c.* 1200 (and possibly later), but legal tracts must have been in existence before that time.

Manuscript Sources

A considerable number of manuscripts (in Latin and Welsh) have survived. Timothy Lewis catalogued upwards of eighty in *Aberystwyth Studies*, x. 159–69. The following are the earliest and most important; reference is made to the Welsh material only:

Pen. 29 = *The Black Book of Chirk* (*c.* 1200)—C.
BM Addl. MS. 14931 (*c.* 1250)—C.
BM Cott. MS. Caligula A iii (*c.* 1250)—C.
BM Cott. MS. Titus D ii (*c.* 1282)—C.
BM Harleian MS. 4353 (? *c.* 1285)—B.
Pen. 36^{A} (shortly after 1282)—A.
Pen. 36^{B} (late xiiith century).
Pen. 37 (late xiiith century)—B.
Pen. 35 (*c.* 1275–1300)—C.
Pen. 30 (xiiith century)—C.
BM Harleian MS. 958 (early xivth century)—A.
Trinity College Cambridge MS. O vii. 1 (early xivth century)—A.
BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra A xiv (*c.* 1300–25)—B.
Pen. 31 (*c.* 1300–50)—A.
BM Cott. MS. Titus D ix (*c.* 1325–50)—A.
BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra B v (xvth century and earlier)—B.

Pen. 32 (*c.* 1380)—C.
Jes. Coll. lvii (*c.* 1400).
NLW MS. 11125B (xvth century); see also CMRM 938, no. 5.
Pen. 38 (xvth century).
Pen. 33 (early xvth century).
Pen. 164 (early xvth century).
Pen. 40 (*c.* 1469).
Pen. 258 (*c.* 1450–1500).
Llan. 116 (*c.* 1450–1500).
Pen. 175 (late xvth century).
BM Addl. MS. 22.356 (late xvth century).
Pen. 259^{A} (*c.* 1475–1500).
Pen. 39 (*c.* 1500).
Llan. 29 (*c.* 1500).
Pen. 36^{C} (late xvth and xvith centuries).
Pen. 259^{B} (*c.* 1500–50).

Published Texts

Cyfreithjeu Hywel Dda ac Ereill . . ., William Wotton (London, 1730)—with Latin translation.

Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales (AL)—4 parts: an amalgam of all the available manuscript sources, with translation.

'Peniarth MS. 37' (Cymmr. xvii. 129–63)—with translation.

Welsh Medieval Law (WML): BM Harleian 4353, also Cott. MS. Cleopatra A xiv.

The Laws of Hywel Dda, Timothy Lewis (University of Wales, Welsh Texts, No. 1, London, 1912): Llan. 116.

Facsimile of the Chirk Codex of the Welsh Laws, J. Gwenogvryn Evans (Llanbedrog, 1909)—lacunae in the text filled in from BM Addl. MS. 14931, also from BM Cott. MS. Caligula A iii (one page only).

'Copy of the Black Book of Chirk Peniarth MS. 29, National Library of Wales, Aberystwyth' (ZCP xx. 30–96).

Llyfr Blegywryd (LlB): Pen. 36^{A}, Trinity College, Cambridge MS. O vii. 1, also BM Cott. MS. Titus D ix (translated in *The Laws of Hywel Dda*, Melville Richards. Liverpool 1954); on this text see Hywel D. Emanuel, B xix. 23–28.

'Llawysgrif Goll Llanforda o Gyfreithiau Hywel Dda' (B xiv. 89–104. Pp. 100–4 contain a copy from Pant. 17 (1773) of a transcript of parts of an early lost manuscript, dated *c.* 1325).

Coleg yr Iesu, Rhydychen LVII (*Cyfreithiau Hywel Dda*), Melville Richards (Cardiff, 1957)—an edited transcript of Jes. Coll. lvii.

Llyfr Iorwerth, Aled Rhys Wiliam (Cardiff, 1960): BM Cott. MS. Titus D ii, also Pen. 29, BM Cott. MS. Caligula A iii, BM Addl. MS. 14931, Pen. 32.

Llyfr Colan, Dafydd Jenkins (Caerdydd, 1963): Pen. 30.

HISTORICAL WORKS

These are all derived from Latin originals:

(*a*) *Ystorya Dared*,[1] *c.* 1300–50, versions of the Latin *Historia Daretis Phrygii de excidio Troiae*: Hav. 1 (*c.* 1300–50), Pen. 47 i (*c.* 1325–50)—a small fragment, BM Addl. MS. 19709 (*c.* 1300–50)—imperfect, BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra B v (xvth century and earlier)—imperfect, Most. 116 (xivth century), RBH, Pen. 19 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 263 (*c.* 1450), NLW MS. 7006D (late xivth century), Jes. Coll. cxli (*c.* 1460–1500), Pen. 25 (? *c.* 1500)—imperfect. See RB 1–39, also B. G. Owens: 'Y Fersiynau Cymraeg o *Dares Phrygius* (*Ystorya Dared*)'—M.A. Thesis (Wales), 1951.

(*b*) *Brut y Brenhined* or *Ystorya Brenhined y Brytanyeit*, Welsh versions of Geoffrey of Monmouth's *Historia Regum Britanniae* (1136). The first Welsh translation probably dates from *c.* 1200.

Some sixty manuscripts are extant. The various texts contained in them represent at least three independent translations.

Manuscript Sources

Pen. 44 (*c.* 1200–50), also Llan. 1 (*c.* 1225–50); see RMWL i. 378, ii. 420.

Pen. 45 (*c.* 1270).

NLW MS. 5266 B = Dingestow 6 (*c.* 1250–75).

[1] Many manuscripts contain the three texts, namely *Ystorya Dared*, *Brut y Brenhined*, and *Brut y Tywysogyon*, grouped together in that order, thus constituting a complete 'history' of the Welsh from the earliest times down to 1282 (and later).

Most. 117 (*c.* 1275–1300).
Hav. 1 (*c.* 1300–50).
BM Addl. MS. 19709 (*c.* 1300–50).
Pen. 21 (? *c.* 1300–50).
Pen. 46 (*c.* 1325–50).
Most. 116 (xivth century).
Hav. 2 (*c.* 1350–1400).
Jes. Coll. cxi = *The Red Book of Hergest* (RBH).
Pen. 19 (*c.* 1400).
Pen. 22 (1444).
Pen. 24 (1477)—a fragment.
BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra B v (xvth century and earlier).
NLW MS. 7006D = *The Black Book of Basingwerk* (xivth–xvth century).
Jes. Coll. cxli (*c.* 1460–1500).
Jes. Coll. lxi (*c.* 1500).
Pen. 25 (*c.* 1500).
See further RB xiii–xix, HRB 586–99, BB ix–xviii, BD xviii–xx.

Published Texts

The Text of the Bruts from the Red Book of Hergest (RB) 40–256: RBH.
Brut y Brenhinedd (BB): BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra B v.
Brut Dingestow (BD): NLW MS. 5266B.

(*c*) *Brut y Tywysogyon* 'The Chronicle of the Princes', a chronicle of the history of Wales from the end of the seventh century to 1282 (a later continuation extends as far as 1332), originally compiled as a continuation of Geoffrey's *Historia*. Of the surviving manuscripts about seven date from the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries.

There are three different versions from the MW period:

The Peniarth 20 Version: Pen. 20 (*c.* 1350–1400) and later manuscripts. See *Brut y Tywysogyon Peniarth MS. 20*, Thomas Jones (Caerdydd, 1941). Translated with introduction and notes by the same editor in *Brut y Tywysogyon Peniarth MS. 20 Version* (Cardiff, 1952).

The Red Book of Hergest Version: RBH, Pen. 18 (*c.* 1300–50), Pen. 19 (*c.* 1400), Most. 116 (xivth century). Edited with introduction, translation, and notes by Thomas Jones in *Brut y Tywysogyon, Red Book of Hergest Version* (Cardiff, 1955).

Brenhined y Saesson 'The Kings of the Saxons': BM Cott. MS. Cleopatra B v (xvth century and earlier; printed in MA 652–84), NLW MS. 7006D = *The Black Book of Basingwerk* *c.* 1470–95). A critical edition is in course of preparation by Thomas Jones.

(*d*) *Brut y Saesson* 'The Chronicle of the Saxons', *c.* 1375–1400: RBH, Pen. 19 (*c.* 1400)—imperfect, Pen. 32 (*c.* 1450)—imperfect, Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500)—imperfect. See RB 385–403.

(*e*) 'O oes gwrtheyrn gwrtheneu . . .'—a brief chronology of events from Gwrtheyrn Gwrtheneu to the thirteenth century: RBH, Pen. 32 (before 1416), Llan. 28 (*c.* 1470–95). See RB 404–6.

(*f*) *Historia Gruffud vab Kenan*, *c.* 1200–25: Pen. 17 (*c.* 1250) —imperfect, also Pen. 267 (1635–41). See *The History of Gruffydd ap Cynan* (HGrC).

(*g*) Genealogies (see p. xlii).

(*h*) Triads (see p. xliii).

RELIGIOUS AND DEVOTIONAL WORKS

These include lives of saints, apocryphal gospels, visions, translations from scripture, creeds, theological treatises, &c. They are based on Latin originals, and most of them were composed during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. Some manuscripts consist entirely (or almost entirely) of religious texts. Such are Pen. 14 (*c.* 1250, *c.* 1325–50), Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25) = part of WBRh, Jes. Coll. cxix (late xivth century), Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 190 (*c.* 1400–25), Pen. 191—Llan. 200—Bangor 1 (see GM lvi–lvii) (*c.* 1450), Shrewsbury School MS. xi (*c.* 1400), BM Cott. MS. Titus D xxii—Latin and Welsh (*c.* 1430), Pen. 15 (xvth century). Religious texts are also found in other manuscripts along with secular material. See Idris Foster, *The Book of the Anchorite* (The Sir John Rhŷs Memorial Lecture, British Academy, 1949).

Published Texts

The Elucidarium and Other Tracts in Welsh from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi (LlA): Jes. Coll. cxix. It contains the following texts:

'Hystoria Lucidar' (3–76); found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 15 (xvth century), Pen. 190 (*c.* 1400–25), Jes. Coll. xxiii (? early xvth century).

'Y mod yd aeth Meir y nef' (77–85); found also in Pen. 14 (*c.* 1250)—printed in B x. 29–33, see 'Gwyrthyeu y Wynvydedic Veir' below—, Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 15, Pen. 27 iii (*c.* 1470–95), NLW MS. 5267B (xvth century).

'Kyssegyrlan Uuched' (86–104); found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 15 (xvth century), Pen. 190 (*c.* 1400–25), Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350—'pryt y mab' only), Jes. Coll. xxiii (? early xvth century), Llan. 3 (xvth century—'pryt y mab' only).

'Hystoria o uuched Dewi' (105–18); see BDe.

'Hystoria o uuched Beuno' (119–27); found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Llan. 4 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 15 (xvth century). See also VSBG 16–22.

'Hystoria Adrian ac Ipotis' (128–37); found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 15 (xvth century), NLW MS. 5267B (xvth century).

'Credo Seint Athanasius' (138–40); found also in Llan. 27, Pen. 15. A different version occurs in Pen. 5; see p. xxxix.

'Py delw y dyly dyn credv y Duw' (141–6); found also in Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), Llan. 27, Shrewsbury School MS. xi (*c.* 1400), Pen. 15, Llan. 3 (xvth century)—imperfect, NLW MS. 5267B (xvth century), Pen. 50 (*c.* 1425–56), Pen. 191 (*c.* 1450), Llan. 2 (*c.* 1450–1500).

'Pwyll y Pader o dull Hu Sant' (147–51); found also in Pen. 16 (xiiith century), Llan. 27, NLW MS. 5267B.

'Rinwedeu gwaranndaw offeren' (151); found also in Llan. 27, Pen. 15, Llan. 3, Pen. 32 (*c.* 1450).—Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), NLW MS. 5267B.

'Breudwyt Pawl Ebostol' (152–6); found also in Pen. 3 ii (*c.* 1300), Pen. 14 (*c.* 1325–50), Llan. 27, Llan. 4 (*c.* 1400),

Shrewsbury School MS. xi (*c.* 1400), Pen. 50 (*c.* 1425–56), Pen. 191 and Bangor 1 (*c.* 1450), Pen. 32 (*c.* 1450), Pen. 15, NLW MS. 5267B.

'Am gadw dyw Sul' (157–9); found also in Llan. 27, Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350), BM Cott. MS. Titus D xxii (*c.* 1430), Pen. 15; also styled 'Ebostol y Sul'.

'Rybud Gabriel at Veir' (159); found also in Llan. 27, Pen. 15. See also *Gwassanaeth Meir* (GM) 6–8, CLlGC iv. 103.

'Euegyl Jeuan Ebostol' (160–2); found also in Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), Pen. 15, NLW MS. 5267B. See CLlGC iv. 105–6.

'Y Drindawt yn vn Duw' (162–3); found also in Llan. 27, Llan. 3 (xvth century).

'Hystoria Gwlat Ieuan Vendigeit' (164–71), see p. xxxi.

Vita Sancti Tathei and Buched Seint y Katrin (VST), pp. 31–39, a Welsh version of the Life of Saint Catharine: BM Cott. MS. Titus D xxii (*c.* 1430); found also in Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400)—a fragment, Llan. 28, Pen. 27 iii (*c.* 1470–95), NLW MS 5267B, Pen. 15 (xvth century).

Y Bibyl Ynghymraec (BY), a Welsh version of the *Promptuarium Bibliae*: mainly from Pen. 20 (*c.* 1350–1400).

Buched Dewi (BDe): from Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400).

Gwassanaeth Meir (GM), *c.* 1350–1400—a translation of *Officium Parvum Beatae Virginis Mariae*, mostly in metrical form, both strict and free: mainly from Shrewsbury School MS. xi (*c.* 1400).

Various texts from Pen. mss. (among them 'Purdan Padric', see CLlGC iii. 102–6) are printed in Hg MSS ii.

The following texts have been published in the *Bulletin of the Board of Celtic Studies* (B):

'Breudwyt Pawl' (iii. 81–89): Pen. 191 and Bangor 1 (*c.* 1450), Pen. 14 (*c.* 1325–50), Pen. 3 (*c.* 1300), Pen. 32 (*c.* 1450).

'Buchedd Mair Fadlen' (iv. 325–39): Pen. 225 (1594–1610), Pen. 217 (1607–11); found also in Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500).

'Ysbryd Gwido a'r Prior' (v. 100–12): Llan. 200 and Pen. 191 (*c.* 1450); found also in Shrewsbury School MS. xi (*c.* 1400), Llan. 3 (xvth century).

'Credo Athanasius Sant' (v. 193–203): Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25).

'Penityas'—*Peniteas cito* (vii. 370–8, viii. 134–40, x. 124–6): Pen. 190 (*c.* 1400–25).

'Ystoria Bilatus' (ix. 42–49): Pen. 7 (xivth century); found also in Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25; see Hg MSS ii. 267–71), Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400).

'Gwyrthyeu y Wynvydedic Veir' (ix. 144–8, 334–41, x. 21–33, also EC ii. 45–49 'Buchedd Mair o'r Aifft'): Pen. 14 (*c.* 1250); (xiv. 186–9): Hav. 16 (*c.* 1400).

'Ystorya Titus Aspassianus' (ix. 221–30): Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25); found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), NLW MS. 5267B (*c.* 1450).

'Buchedd Fargred' (ix. 324–34): Pen. 5; (x. 53–59): Pen. 14 (*c.* 1325–50); (xiii. 65–71): Llan. 28 (*c.* 1470–95); found also in BM Cott. MS. Titus D xxii (*c.* 1430), Pen. 15 (xvth century).

'Yr Anghrist a Dydd y Farn' (xiii. 174–84): Llan. 2 (*c.* 1450–1500).

'Dehongyl Teruyneu y Byt' (xiv. 8–13): Llan. 2.

'Efengyl Nicodemus' (xiv. 257–73): Pen. 5; found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), Llan. 2 (*c.* 1450–1500).

A Welsh translation of 'Anima Christi' (xvi. 270): Shrewsbury School MS. xi (*c.* 1400).

'Gweddi Boneffas Bab' (xvi. 271–3): Llan. 3 (xvth century).

'Transitus Beatae Mariae' (xviii. 146–53): Pen. 5; (xviii. 153–7): Llan. 27; for other texts see under 'Y mod yd aeth Meir y nef' (LlA) on p. xxxvii above.

The following texts have been published in various other journals:

'A Description of the Day of Judgement' (Cymmr. iv. 106–38, with translation): BM Cott. MS. Titus D xxii (*c.* 1430).

'Ebostol y Sul' (Cymmr. viii. 162–72, with translation): BM Cott. Titus D xxii. See also Hg MSS ii. 289.6–291, where it is tacked on to 'Breudwyt Pawl Ebostol'. Copies are also found in LlA (after 'Breudwyt Pawl Ebostol', but apparently not forming part of it), in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), and in Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350).

'Ystorya Adaf' (Cymmr. Trans. 1919–20, 121–9): Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), where it has the title 'Euangel Nicodemus' in a late hand; also Hg MSS ii. 243–50 (a careless copy); found also in Pen. 14 (*c.* 1325–50), Pen. 7 (xivth century)—imperfect.

'Llyma Vabinogi Iessu Grist'—The Gospel of the Pseudo-Matthew (RC xxxiii. 184–248): three independent versions, namely those of Pen. 14 (*c.* 1325–50)—with translation, Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), and Pen. 14 (*c.* 1250); found also in Pen. 27 iii (*c.* 1470–95)—imperfect.

'Deuddeg Pwnc y Gredo'—an exposition of the Apostles' Creed (CLlGC iv. 77–78): Pen. 16 (xiiith century).

'Pre-Reformation Welsh Versions of the Scriptures' (CLlGC iv. 97–114). See also Cymmr. Trans. 1919–20, 95–120.

'Gvyrthyeu Seint Edmund Archescop Keint' (CLlGC v. 58–67): Pen. 14 (c. 1250), with variants from Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25).

'Ystorya Adaf ac Eua y Wreic' (CLlGC vi. 170–5): Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–25), with variants from Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400); found also in NLW MS. 5267B (*c.* 1450).

'Welsh Prose Versions of the Fifteen Signs before Doomsday' (*Speculum*, xix. 421–32): Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), 28 (1455–56).

MISCELLANEOUS

Grammars and Metrical Treatises

In their written form these grammars, which were composed for the instruction of the bards, date from a period at least as early as the fourteenth century. An authoritative and exhaustive treatment of the *Gramadegau* of the period from the fourteenth to the sixteenth century is found in *Gramadegau'r Penceirddiaid* (GP). The earliest grammars are those fathered on Einion Offeiriad and Dafydd Ddu Athro o Hiraddug. The earliest copies date from around the end of the fourteenth and the beginning of the fifteenth century. They are found in RBH, Llan. 3, Pen. 20 (see GP 1–58), Pen. 191, and Bangor 1 (see B ii. 184–200).

'The Welsh Bardic Vocabulary' (B i. 310–33, ii. 135–48, 229–42)—an alphabetical list of words compiled from glossaries in Pen. 50, 51, 27 iii, 55, 138, 155, 118, 169 (xvth and xvith centuries). See also Cymmr. ix. 332–3, 'Old Words Glossed', from Pen. 50.

Geographical Works, &c.

Delw y Byd (DB)—a translation of the first book of *Imago Mundi* by Honorius Augustodunensis: Pen. 17 (*c.* 1250), Pen. 5 (*c.* 1300–50), RBH—two different copies; found also in NLW MS. 5267B (xvth century). The texts in these manuscripts represent more than one version, but in none of them has a complete copy been preserved.

'Seint awstin a dywawt hyn yn wir' (Cymmr. vii. 145): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), found also in RBH.

'Kymydeu a Chantreui Kymry' (Cymmr. ix. 325–32): Pen. 50 (*c.* 1425–56); 'Cantreds and Commotes of Wales' (RB 407–12): RBH; also in BM Hargrave MS. 313 (after 1251), BM Cott. MS. Domitian A viii (*c.* 1400), see RMWL ii. 940–3.

'Enwau ac Anryfeddodau Ynys Prydain' (B v. 19–24): RBH, found also in Pen. 50; 'Enweu ynys brydein yỏ hynn' (Cymmr. vii. 124): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh)—a much shorter version; found also in Pen. 15 (xvth century). See further *Trioedd Ynys Prydein* (TYP) cxxiii–cxxvii, 228–37.

Ffordd y Brawd Odrig (FfBO): Llan. 2 (*c.* 1450–1500).

Didactic Literature

'Dy gyghor ath gusul yw . . .' (Cymmr. vii. 136): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh); found also in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), and in BM Addl. MS. 14912 (early xvth century).

'Llyma a dyuawt yr eneit' (Cymmr. vii. 145): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), found also in RBH.

'Cynghorau Catwn'—from the Latin *Catonis Disticha* (B ii. 16–25): Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400); (B ii. 26–36): Pen. 3 ii (*c.* 1300); versions also found in Llan. 28 (*c.* 1470–95), Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500), NLW MS. 5267B (xvth century).

'Y Gorcheston' (B v. 138–40): Hav. 16 (*c.* 1400).

Proverbs: 'Dihaerebyon yw hyn' (Cymmr. vii. 138–45): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh); 'Hen Ddiarhebion' (B iii. 22–31): Pen. 29 (*c.* 1200–25) = *The Black Book of Chirk*—see also LlDW 32; 'Diarhebion ym Mheniarth 17' (B iv. 1–17): Pen. 17 (*c.* 1250)—incomplete. Two collections are found in RBH (coll. 964 and 1057). The list found in MA 838–67 derives ultimately from the collection of Dr. John Davies of Mallwyd (see B iii. 22).

Medical tracts

Meddygon Myddfai—Physicians of Myddvai, edited by ab Ithel (Llandovery, 1861). Pp. 1–34 contain a copy of the text in RBH, followed by a translation (pp. 37–85) by John Pughe. *Le plus ancien texte des Meddygon Myddveu*, Paul Diverres (Paris, 1913): RBH; found also in BM Addl. MS. 14912 (early xvth century).

'Havod 16, a mediaeval Welsh medical treatise' (EC vii. 46–75, 270–339, viii. 66–97, 346–93): Hav. 16 (*c.* 1400).

'Rhinweddau Croen Neidr' (B iv. 33–36): Pen. 184 ii (*c.* 1550–1600), and Hav. 16 (*c.* 1400); found also in Pen. 205 (xvth century).

Genealogies

'The *Annales Cambriae* and Old-Welsh Genealogies from Harleian MS. 3859' (Cymmr. ix. 141–83): BM Harleian MS. 3859 (*c.* 1100).

'Pedigrees from Jesus College MS. 20' (Cymmr. viii. 83–92): Jes. Coll. xx (*c.* 1350).

'Bonedd y Saint' (VSBG 320–3): Hav. 2 (*c.* 1350–1400). See also LBS iv. 369–71: Pen. 16 (early xiiith century); LBS iv. 371–3: Pen. 45 (late xiiith century); Cymmr. vii. 133–4: Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh); RC l. 24–29: Hav. 16 (*c.* 1400); AC (1931) 163–75: Llan. 28 (*c.* 1470–95); RC l. 363–7: Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500); RC l. 368–78: Pen. 127 (*c.* 1500); RC l. 378–84: Pen. 182 (*c.* 1514).

'Bonedd yr Arwyr'—genealogical material relating to the heroes of early Welsh history and legend (B xviii. 229–52): manuscripts of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, e.g. Pen. 50 (*c.* 1425–56), Pen. 131 (*c.* 1450–1500), Llan. 28 (*c.* 1475).

'Bonhed Gwyr y Gogled yv hyn' (TYP 238–9): Pen. 45 (*c.* 1270).

Triads

Trioedd Ynys Prydein. Manuscript sources: Pen. 45 (*c.* 1270), Pen. 1 (= *The Black Book of Carmarthen*—a fragment 'Trioedd y Meirch'), Pen. 16 iv (*c.* 1250–75), v (xvith century), Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), RBH, Pen. 50 (*c.* 1425–56), Pen. 47 (xvth century), Pen. 51 (*c.* 1460), Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500—'Trioedd y Meirch' only). *Published texts*: BBC 27–28, FAB ii. 456–65, Cymmr. iii. 52–63, vii. 123–4, 126–32, 136–8, B xii. 1–15, RM 297–308 (also MA 395–9, another series on pp. 388–94), *Trioedd Ynys Prydein* (TYP)—with translation.

Varia

'The auguries of Esdras concerning the character of the year' (B vii. 5–14—with translation): Pen. 12 (fragment of WBRh), and Llan. 117 (1545); see also Cymmr. vii. 108, 134–6. Versions found also in BM Addl. MS. 14912 (early xvth century) and in Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400).

'Proffwydoliaeth yr Eryr' (B ix. 112–15): RBH; also BB 30–33—with translation: BM Cott. Cleopatra B v (xvth century and earlier). (For Lat. see *Prophetia Merlini Silvestris* in BB 225–6.) Found also in Pen. 16 (xvth century)—a fragment, Pen. 47 ii (? xvth century), Pen. 27 ii (*c.* 1475–1500). See further BB xiv.

'A Welsh Version of the Birth of Arthur' (Cymmr. xxiv. 247–64—with translation): NLW MS. 1 (xvth century); found also in Pen. 215 (1604–12). Cf. Llan. MSS. 4, 2 (see RMWL ii. 424, 420).

'Hen Draethawd ar Hwsmonaeth'—from *Le Dite de Hosebondrie* by Walter de Henley—written *c.* 1250 (B ii. 8–16): RBH. See also B ii. 132–4.

WORKS OF REFERENCE

GRAMMARS

An Introduction to Early Welsh, John Strachan. Manchester, 1909.
A Welsh Grammar—Historical and Comparative, J. Morris-Jones. Oxford, 1913.
Grammar of Early Welsh. Part 1—*Phonology*, Josef Baudiš. Oxford, 1924.
Welsh Syntax, J. Morris-Jones. Cardiff, 1931.

Gramadeg Cymraeg Canol, D. Simon Evans. Caerdydd, 1951 (second edition 1960).
Y Treigladau a'u Cystrawen, T. J. Morgan. Caerdydd, 1952.
A Concise Comparative Celtic Grammar, Henry Lewis and Holger Pedersen. Göttingen, 1937.
Vergleichende Grammatik der keltischen Sprachen, 2 vols., Holger Pedersen. Göttingen, 1909, 1913.
A Grammar of Old Irish, Rudolf Thurneysen. Translated from the German by D. A. Binchy and Osborn Bergin. Dublin, 1946.
Language and History in Early Britain, Kenneth Jackson. Edinburgh, 1953.

DICTIONARIES, GLOSSARIES, &c.

A Glossary of Mediaeval Welsh Law, based upon The Black Book of Chirk, Timothy Lewis. Manchester, 1913.
Geirfa Barddoniaeth Gynnar Gymraeg—'A Glossary of Early Welsh Poetry' (A–Heilic), J. Lloyd-Jones. Caerdydd, 1931–63.
Mynegai i Weithiau Ifor Williams—'An Index to the Works of Ifor Williams', Tom Parry. Caerdydd, 1939.
Geiriadur Prifysgol Cymru, A Dictionary of the Welsh Language. Caerdydd, 1950–. In progress.

PRINCIPAL JOURNALS

Revue Celtique. Paris, 1870–1934. 51 volumes.
Études Celtiques. Paris, 1936–.
Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie. Halle a. S., 1897–.
Bulletin of the Board of Celtic Studies. Cardiff, 1921–.
Celtica. Dublin, 1946–.
The Journal of Celtic Studies. Published by Temple University at the Waverly Press, Baltimore, Md., 1949–.
Lochlann, A Review of Celtic Studies. Oslo, 1958–.
Y Cymmrodor. London, 1877–1935. 44 volumes.
The Transactions of the Honourable Society of Cymmrodorion. London, 1892–.
Cylchgrawn Llyfrgell Genedlaethol Cymru—The National Library of Wales Journal. Aberystwyth, 1939–.
Llên Cymru. Caerdydd, 1950–.

PHONOLOGY

THE VOWELS

§ 1. The following system obtains in MW: *a* [a(:)], *e* [e(:)] or [ɛ(:)], *i* [i(:)], *o* [o(:)] or [ɔ(:)], *u* [ü(:)], *w* [u(:)], *y* [ï(:)], *y* [ə].

With the exception of *u* (see § 2), these characters represent essentially the same sounds as in ModW (see Eric P. Hamp, B xvii. 30–36).

The following are the more important orthographic variations:

[ü] is represented by *u* and *v*: *un* 'one' PKM 1. 21, *vn* 20. 11.

[u] and [u̯] are represented by *w* and ó, earlier by *u*, *v*, and *w*: *newyn* 'hunger' BD 56. 2, *kynnóryf* 'commotion' LlA 60. 5, *diuet* 'end' BBC 29. 2, *adav* 'promise' BD 8. 32; *o* (rare): *guero* 'bitter' CA 37. 938.

No orthographic distinction is generally made between [ï] and [ə]: *mynyd* [mənïd] 'mountain'. *y* also commonly represents [i̯]: *taryan* 'shield' PKM 5. 22, *yach* 'healthy, well' LlA 117. 21, but *i* is also found, especially medially: *iarll* 'earl' WM 136. 8, *tarian* 'shield' YMTh 57. 12. [i] is generally denoted by *i*, but *y* also is used: *keffyr* 'is obtained' BD 2. 4, *dynas* 'fortress, city' 3. 17, *llyw* 'colour' YBH 50. 3217. Conversely *i* may represent the sounds of *y*: *medilyav* 'think' BD 26. 16, *hynni* 'those' 126. 14, but this is rare.

At an early period *e* is commonly found for *y* (both [ï] and [ə], but more especially the latter, see YBH lv–lvi): *er* 'the', *ket* 'although' BD 12. 3, *dechymygu* 'devise, imagine' 26. 7; sometimes *y* occurs for *e*: *ymdrych* (for *ymdrech*) 'effort' BD 20. 6. This may reflect early confusion between the sounds of *y* and *e*; see WG 16. From the middle of the thirteenth century on *y* becomes more common.

§ 2. It appears that in MW the sound of *u* was different from that of ModW, where it is not distinguishable from [ï] N. Wales and [i] S. Wales. It was a central [ü]. This sound persisted

longer in accented syllables (including monosyllabic words) than in unaccented finals, where it became unrounded and approximated to [ï] as early as the late MW period. In this position *u* and *y* are confused from the fourteenth century on: *kymryt* 'take' BD 22. 26, *kymrut* 4. 6; *dugum* 'I brought' PKM 32. 25, *dugym* CLlLl 7. 24; *brodur* 'brothers' SG 65. 2, normally *brodyr*; *gorchymun* 'command' SG 80. 38, normally *gorchymyn*. In monosyllables where *u* was followed by *ch* the rounding was retained; this is evidenced by the glide *w* in ModW: *uch* 'above, higher' (ModW *uwch*), *buch* 'cow' BT 21. 2 (ModW *buwch*), *ruch* 'sieve' CLlH 41. 66^{c} (ModW *rhuwch*). This development already appears in late MW: *ywch* (= *uwch*) FfBO 32. 2, *odywch* (*od* + *ywch*) CLlH 24. 9^{a}, *bywch* R 1278. 6. See further Eric P. Hamp, B xvi. 284–5.

§ 3. *a* and *y* commonly alternate before a nasal, mostly in unaccented syllables: *Agharat* (Angharad) WM 145. 12 = *Ygharat* RM 215. 12; *aghenawc* 'needy' R 1173. 18, *yghenauc* BBC 55. 2; *amdrychu* 'hew, shatter' LlHen 89. 24, *ymdrychu* R 1050. 27; *amgeled* 'care' R 1033. 38, *ymgeled* 1194. 10–11; *amgyrwyf* 'I seek' R 1145. 13, *ymgyrwyf* LlHen 155. 24; *amherawdyr* 'emperor' R 1144. 16, *ymerawdyr* LlHen 34. 23; *amrysson* 'dispute' BT 3. 6, *ymrysson* B ii. 279. 12; *an* 'our' BT 3. 26, *yn* BD 91. 22; *canawon* 'cubs' PKM 20. 18, *kynawon* R 1434. 39; *kanhorthwy* 'help' LlA 129. 19, *kynhorthwy* R 1363. 8; *damunaw* 'desire' R 1246. 5, ModW *dymuno*; *manachloc* 'monastery' BD 182. 7, *mynachloc* 133. 13; *manach* 'monk' LlB 38. 10, *mynach* 42. 17.

Before *ch-* (rare): *achydic* 'a little, few' YBH 2. 81, *ychydic* § 112.

§ 4. The vowels *y* (both [ï] and [ə]) and *i* are often assimilated to *i* or *u* in an adjoining syllable, thus:

y . . . i > *i . . . i*: *dihirwch* 'wretchedness' PKM 81. 14.

i . . . y > *i . . . i*: *amddiffin* 'defend' LlHen 217. 13, *cilid* 'other' PKM 6. 18, *kywilid* 'shame' 34. 2, *dibin* 'hanging' YCM 146. 3, *dilis* 'genuine' WM 472. 30, *gwlithin* 'dewdrop' 455. 6, *llinin* 'string' PKM 60. 17, *origin* 'a moment' LlA 122. 29.

i . . . u > *u . . . u*: *duhunaf* 'I wake' CLlH 40. 59[c], *udunt* 'to them' BD 14. 30.

y . . . u > *u . . . u*: *kuhudir* 'is accused' LlA 43. 6, *custud* 'affliction, grief' AP 4. 94, *duhudaw* 'pacify' BDe 2. 11, *duunav* 'unite' BD 42. 12, *ussu* 'consume' BR 3. 13 (but *yssu* 2. 17), *vr un* 'the one' CA 14. 352, *uu hun* 'myself' PKM 25. 14, *du hun* 'thyself' 20. 29.

ei . . . u > *eu . . . u*: *gwneuthur* 'do, make' (< *gwneithur*), *reudus* 'needy' (*reit* + *us*), *teulu* 'household troop, household' (< *teilu*, OW *telu* Juv; see L & P 23, 30).

u . . . i > *u . . . u*: *llurugeu* 'breast-plates' CA 15. 375.

u . . . y > *u . . . u*: *vuud* 'humble, obedient' RM 6. 2 (= *uuyd* PKM 6. 11), *vuulltawt* 'humility' YCM 64. 13.

eu . . . i > *eu . . . u*: *Meuruc* BD 60. 11 (but *Meuryc* 61. 3; cf. also § 2 above).

§ 5. In final unaccented syllables before *g* or *ng* the change *y* [ï] > *i* is attested: *tebic* 'like(ly)' WM 122. 14, *meddic* 'physician' 141. 25, *kyuing* 'narrow, confined' RM 110. 1 (= *kyuyg* WM 465. 25); *-yc* is also found: *yn nyblyc* 'enfolded' PKM 7. 18, *ennyc* 'urges' YCM 116. 20 (but *ennic* 19. 29); see WG 110–11.

THE DIPHTHONGS

§ 6. MW has the following diphthongs:

(*a*) *w* diphthongs: *aw* [au̯], *ew* [eu̯], *iw* [iu̯], *yw* [ïu̯] [əu̯].

(*b*) *i* diphthongs: *ae* [ai̯], *oe* [oï] (commonly written *ay*, *oy* in early MW; see WG 31), *wy* [uï] [u̯ï/ə], *ei* [ei̯], *eu* [eï̯].

N. 1. In ModW *aw* has been reduced to *o* in final unaccented syllables, and occurs in monosyllables only (see L & P 6). This development is not generally indicated in MW orthography: *barawt*, *gywiraw*, *treulaw*, *marchauc*, *ryngtaw*, *kyweiryaw*, *idaw*, *amdanaw* PKM 13, but *o* (< *aw*) is occasionally found in this position: *achos* 'cause' PKM 5. 27, *gweirglod* 'meadow' ChO 17. 16, *agreiffto* 'rebuke, chide' ChSDR 71. 830, *diwarnot* 'day' FfBO 39. 21. See LHEB 287, 298–9.

Unaccented *ae* in a final syllable was often reduced to *e*: *adwen* 'I know' (< *adwaen*), *chware* 'play' (< *chwarae*), *Ithel* (< *Ithael*, OW *Iudhail*), *maharen* 'ram' (< *maharaen* AL i. 278 / *maharuin* LL xlv), *paret* 'partition, wall' PKM 75. 10 (< *paraed* / *parwyt* BT 27. 23, Lat. *par(i)ēt-*).

Unaccented *oe* in a final syllable was often reduced to *o*: *-o* 3. sing. pres. subj. (< *-oe* / *-wy* § 138 *c*), *heno* 'tonight' (< *henoeth* CLlH 15. 30[a], OW *henoid*), ModW *dannodd* 'toothache' (< *dannoed* MM 38. 3).

Unaccented *wy* in a final syllable was often reduced to *w*: *hwnnw* § 91 (< OW *hunnuid* / *hunnoid*), *assw* 'left' (< *asswy* / *asseu*), *mwrthwl* 'hammer' PKM 36. 10 (< *mortuyl* LlDW 101) but see EL 42, ModW *neithiwr* 'last night' (< *neithywyr* SG 43. 36), *-ws* 3. sing. pret. (< *-wys* § 133 *a* 4).

There are a few examples of *eu* > *e* in final unaccented syllables: *gynne* 'a short while ago' YBH 15. 977, *hithe* 'she' 5. 305, *ynte* 'he' 7. 393.

N. 2. MW *yw* derives both from OW *iu* (*yw* 'is', OW *paniu* Comp) and *ou* (*kyweir* 'ordered, complete', OW *couer*; *llywychedic* 'shining' RM 84. 2, OW diguo*louichetic*; see WG 32).

After *d* and *ð yw* has become *iw*: *ydiw* 'is', *hediw* 'today' CLlH 14. 20[a].

N. 3. In monosyllabic words and final syllables the diphthongs *ei* and *eu* occur as *ai* and *au* in ModW: MW *seith* 'seven' = ModW *saith*, MW *heul* 'sun' = ModW *haul*, MW *carei* 'loved' = ModW *carai*, MW *cadeu* 'battles, armies' = ModW *cadau*. A few instances of *ai*, however, occur in late MW: *kain* 'fair, fine' R 1194. 8, *diwair* 'chaste' 1200. 17, *arynaic* 'fear, dread' 1227. 10, *main* 'slender, thin' 1318. 33, *tybyassai* 'had thought' FfBO 38. 13. See further LHEB 685–7.

N. 4. There are examples of the alternation *oe* / *wy*: *oeth* 'eight' / *wyth*, *moe* 'more' / *mwy*, *oe* 'to his' (§ 56 n. 2) / *wy*, *oef* 'I am' BBC 50. 2 / *wyf*, *poe* 'who?' B xiv. 271. 27 / *pwy*.

yw / *wy*: *yw* 'is' / **wy* L & P 322, *nyw* / *nwy* § 58 n.

eu / *wy*: *asseu* 'left' LlB 5. 22 / *asswy*, pieu § 88, see WG 114.

§ 7. Certain combinations of vowels resulting mostly from the loss of a consonant (*g* or *s*) are often found uncontracted in the poetry of the MW period. (The conservatism of bardic learning accounts for most of these examples; in the spoken language they had already developed as diphthongs.)

ae: *Cymräec* 'Welsh' (ModW *Cymraeg*), rhyming with *ychwanec* HGCr 48. 139; *mäes* 'plain, field' (ModW *maes*), rhyming with *lles*, *mes* CLlH 21. 1[a], but see LHEB 460; *träet* 'feet' (ModW *traed*), rhyming with *vrithret*, *bryssyet* R 1042. 34; *gwäeg* 'buckle' GDG 37. 91.

oe: *Gröec* 'Greek' (ModW *Groeg*), rhyming with *Gwydelec* HGCr 48. 142, GDG 137. 14 (see LHEB 335); *tröes* 'turned' GDG 228. 54 (but monosyllabic in 276. 25, 280. 4).

ei: *yscolhëic* 'scholar, cleric' (ModW *ysgolhaig*) BBC 81. 3.

eu: *crëu* 'create' HGCr 105. 7; *hëu* 'sow' (ModW *hau*) GDG 238. 24.

ey: *brëyr* 'nobleman, lord' BT 14. 11 (also *brehyr* R 579. 25, *bryhyr* B iv. 114. 3); *gwëyll* 'knitting needles' GDG 32. 41; *hëyrn* (pl. of *haearn* 'iron') R 1226. 35. As a rule in MW, *ey* is a diphthong only as an affected form of *ae*: *keyryd* (pl. of *caer* 'fort'); *treythych* (2. sing. pres. subj. of *traethu* 'treat, relate') R 1153. 14.

oi: *kyffröi* 'rouse', *krynnöi* 'gather', rhyming with *yoli*, *torri* HGCr 23. 6–8; *tröi* 'turn' 81. 13.

N. Many late combinations of vowels and diphthongs are found uncontracted in MW: *buum* 'I was' (ModW *bûm*) BBC 100. 3, *kytduundeb* 'agreement' (ModW *cytundeb*) BD 17. 7, *cytuundeb* BDe 14. 22, *aei* 'went' imperf. (ModW *âi*) BR 2. 15, *caei* 'got' imperf. (ModW *câi*) PKM 34. 10, *caeu* 'shut' (ModW *cau*) PKM 16. 29, GDG 262. 13, *doey* 'came' imperf. (ModW *dôi*) PKM 47. 23, *arvydocaei* 'signified' imperf. (ModW *arwyddocâi*) BD 168. 11, *deffroeis* 'I awoke' (ModW *deffrois*) PKM 23. 4, *moei* 'foaled' imperf. 22. 5, *troais* 'I turned' (ModW *trois*) GDG 93. 11.

But examples of contraction are found: *bum* 'I was' CLlH 9. 2[a], *anundeb* 'disunity' BD 87. 1 (but *anuundeb* 31. 9), *cau* 'shut' R 1209. 26, *roist* 'thou gavest' (< *ro-eist*) 1211. 31, *plau* 'plagues' (< *pla-eu*) 1222. 7, *gwnai* 'did' imperf. (< *gwna-ei*) BBC 64. 13, *parhawd* 'continued' (< *parha-awd*) PKM 34. 24; see B xvii. 36.

W̑ and *I̯*

§ 8. (*a*) *w̑* is represented by *u*, *v*, *w*, 6 (see § 1). It drops before *w*, but in MW orthography it is sometimes written: *cadwwn* 'I would keep' RM 51. 25 = *cadwn* PKM 57. 22.

w̑ is often lost before *o*: *go-*, *gor-* (< *guo-*, *guor-*, Ir. *fo-*, *for-*); *goleuni* 'light' < OW *guolleuni* Juv; *athraon* 'teachers, doctors' R 1397. 15, BD 62. 11, besides *athrawon*; *balaon* 'martens, wild beasts' AP 2. 60, besides *balawon* BBC 47. 10; *canaon* 'whelps' CA 33. 816, besides *kanawon*; *lleot* 'lions' Hg MSS ii. 234. 33,

besides *llewot* LlA 10. 28; *maroryn* 'cinder' LlA 25. 16, besides *marworyn*; *etto* 'yet, again', besides *etwo* § 247 *d*; *golchi* 'wash' < **gwolchi*, cf. *a wylch* (3. sing. pres. indic.) LlA 18. 28; *Ideon* 'Jews' B ix. 47. 17, besides *Idewon*.

wo alternates with *wa* in many words: *gwatwar* 'mock' / *gwatwor*; *marwar* 'cinders' / *marwor*; *kawat* 'shower' BT 22. 2 / ModW *cawod*, *kafod* B v. 119. 19 (*cawad* is still common in some ModW dialects); *etwa* 'yet, again' / *etwo*; *dywat* 'said' LlA 4. 31 / *dywot* PKM 5. 1; *kynawan* 'whelps' YCM 31. 29 / *kynawon* § 3.

(*b*) *i*. It generally drops before *i* in final syllables: *bedydir* '(are) baptized' (*bedydi* + *ir*) LlA 42. 18, *delis* 'held' (*dali* + *is*) WM 151. 35; but it is often written in MW, represented by *y* or *i* (see § 1): *bedydyit* 'was baptized' LlA 48. 10, *deliis* 'held' CA 12. 301, *eteliis* 'stopped' BD 194. 18, *kynhelliis* 'supported' 199. 13. It is lost also before *y* and *u*, but is often found written in MW: *ystyryych* 'thou mayest consider' (ModW *ystyrych*) R 1153. 34; *llafuuryus* 'laborious' (ModW *llafurus*) LlA 28. 22; *medylyut* 'thou wouldst think' (ModW *meddylit* < *meddylud*, see § 132 *a*) PKM 86. 11; *kewilydyus* 'shameful' (ModW *cywilyddus*) BDe 8. 20.

It is also lost before *y* and *u* in monosyllabic words: *yrch* < **iyrch* pl. of *iwrch* 'roebuck'; *ud* 'lord' < *iud-*, *Maredud*, OW *Morgetiud*, *Gruffud*, OW *Griphiud*. *iu-* becomes *i-* in polysyllabic words: *Idew* 'Jew' < **Iudew*, *Ithel* < **Iud-hael*, OW *Iudhail*.

N. *i* is omitted in other positions in MW prose, a feature also of modern South Wales dialects: *kedymdeithon* 'companions' PKM 49. 4, *treulaw* 'consume' 51. 3, *gwironed* 'truth' LlA 43. 31, *keinhawc* 'penny' LlB 93. 1, *byrvyt* 'was cast' BD 34. 12, *breisson* 'large' (pl.) FfBO 41. 21. It is not, however, regularly omitted in such positions, as the following examples show: *kedymdeithyon* BD 6. 30, *treulyav* 40. 24, *gwiryoned* LlB 1. 21, *keinyawc* R 1277. 40, *byryvt* BD 79. 29, *breissyon* FfBO 41. 15. Occasionally we find it in positions where it appears to have no phonological justification: *milyoed* 'thousands' BD 67. 13, *molyassant* 'they praised' LlA 114. 21, *dwylyaw* 'hands' FfBO 38. 9, *rwymyaw* 'bind' 34. 6, *wylyaw* 'weep' YBH 4. 193, *ffynhyawn* 'well' WM 231. 15, *aelyodeu* 'limbs' SG 2. 19, *aethyant* 'they went' 16. 21.

THE CONSONANTS

§ 9. These may be classified as follows:

	Plosive		Nasal	Fricative	Lateral	Vibrant
Bilabial	*p*	*b*	*m(h)* [m(h)]			
Labiodental				*ff* [f] *f* [v]		
Interdental				*th* [θ] *dd* [ð]		
Postdental	*t*	*d*	*n(h)* [n(h)]	*s*	*ll* [ɬ] *l*	*rh* [ṙ] *r*
Velar	*c*	*g*	*ng(h)* [ŋ(h)]	*ch* [x]		
Glottal				*h*		

There is much variety in the representation of most of the above sounds in MW. The following features may be noted.

In the earliest Welsh manuscript, *The Black Book of Carmarthen* (see p. xxi), *-b* is represented by *p*: *nep* 8. 1, but *b* often occurs: *mab* 28. 9. *c* occurs for *-g*: *guledic* 'lord, ruler' 26. 7. *d* occurs for *d*: *nid* 'not' 31. 7, *penyd* 'penance' 79. 15, and *t* for *-đ-*, *-đ*: *bluytin* 'year' (ModW *blwyddyn*) 81. 10, *trugaret* 'mercy' (ModW *trugaredd*) 31. 11, *argluit* 'lord' (ModW *arglwydd*) 35. 1; occasionally *th* occurs for *đ*: *oeth* 'was' 22. 13, *forth* 'way' 34. 10. In later manuscripts we find that the practice has changed, although traces of older conventions still survive, and no manuscript provides us with a completely uniform system. The orthographic characteristics of the fourteenth century are well represented by the *White Book of Rhydderch* (Peniarth 4 and 5), which belongs to the beginning of that century, and the *Red Book of Hergest* (Jesus College MS. cxi), written towards its end. The most notable features of the orthography of this period are *t* for *-d*, *d* for *-đ*, *c* for *-g*: *diffryt*, *tynnit*, *dywawt*, *ymlad*, *y uynyd*, *redec* RM 141. Generally *-b* is represented by *b*: *heb*, *mab* RM 183. 25, 193. 17; but *p* sometimes occurs: *hep* PKM 2. 21. No distinction is usually made between *d* and *đ*, except when they occur finally; later *đ* came to be represented by *dd*, which is the regular notation in ModW (*dd* for *đ* is by no means uncommon in YBH, see p. cviii).

Both *c* and *k* are used to denote *c*: *kyt* 'though' PKM 49. 13, *clod* 'praise' BBC 10. 10, *kamwed* 'transgression' BD 3. 2, *caru* 'to love' 53. 18.

In the early period [v] is denoted by *u*, *v*, *f*, *w*: *kyulauan*

'crime' BBC 1. 5–6, *kyvoeth* 'dominion, wealth' 27. 5, *dihafal* 'peerless' 20. 2. In the twelfth and early thirteenth century it is often represented by *w*: *kywoethauc* 'having dominion' BBC 25. 2, *seiw* 'stands' 89. 2, *kywarchaw* 'I greet' 104. 3. Occasionally it is denoted by *ff*: *tiff* 'grows' BBC 50. 9, *difflannu* 'disappear' PKM 57. 12. Later it may be denoted by *u*, *v*, *f*, or *fu*: *dwuyr* 'water' PKM 23. 24, *dwvyr*, *dwfyr* R 1027. 15 (cf. *dyfwr* YCM 158. 30), *dwfuyr* LlA 65. 1. At the end of a word it is generally written *f*: *rodaf* 'I shall give' PKM 63. 22.

At the beginning of a word [f] is denoted by *f*: *fo* 'flee' BD 6. 22 (occasionally *f* may represent the spirant mutation of *p*: *y fenn* 'her head' (*penn*) PKM 24. 10). Later *ff* becomes common: *fflam* 'flame' BR 10. 28, *ffin* 'boundary' LlB 6. 16, also *y ffryt hi* 'her form' (*pryt*) PKM 12. 18. Medially and finally *ff* predominates: *proffuid* 'prophet' BBC 85. 14, *caffael* 'get' BD 3. 14, *hoff* 'commendable' PKM 58. 8, but *f*, and occasionally *ph*, are also found: *cafael* BD 5. 2, *craf* 'grip' PKM 89. 4, *porphor* 'purple' CA 6. 145, *corph* 'body' BBC 20. 4.

[θ] is generally denoted by *th*, but *t* occurs in the early period: *kanhortvy* 'assistance' BD 8. 5, *doetant* 'they came' 15. 2, *keitiwet* 'captivity' (ModW *ceithiwed*) 45. 26; also *d*, *dh*, see PKM 222.

[x] is generally denoted by *ch*: *edrych* 'look' PKM 1. 19; but *c* is occasionally found in the early period, see TYP 54; also *hc*, *h* (rare), see BD xxxiv.

[ŋ] is denoted by *g* and *ng*: *ellygwyt* 'was let free' BD 12. 25, but *ellvng* 'to let free' 12. 7; *llog* 'ship' PKM 80. 20, but *llong* 30. 6. The characters *ngk*, *ngc*, *nc* occur for *-ŋk*: *kyfrangk* 'meeting, adventure' R 1321. 20, *kyfranc* PKM 5. 8, *dianc* 'escape' RM 40. 5, *ieuanc* 'young' 41. 16; *-ng* also occurs, but it may be indicative of a phonetic change *-ŋk* > *-ŋ*: *kyvrang* CA 45. 1141, *diang* PKM 44. 22, *ieuang* 46. 10.

N. Examples occur of *-in* > *-ing*: *meithring* 'rear' GDG 160. 7, *ffiwring* (= Engl. *florin*, EEW 135) 191. 37, *geing* § 168; see WG 168.

[λ] is most often indicated by *ll* (ligatured ll in the *Red Book* to distinguish it from double *l*), but examples of *l* also occur: *lewny* 'fill' BD 5. 16, *lynn* 'lake' 103. 14, *seuyl* 178. 8.

The ModW distinction between *rh* and *r* is not found in MW.

s is generally represented by *f*, *s*, and usually doubled medially between vowels: *iessu* BBC 25. 10, *saesson* 48. 10. At the beginning of a word also *ss* occasionally occurs: *sswydwyr* 'officers' PKM 16. 19, *ssenghi* 'tread' 16. 24, but *swydwyr* 31. 18.

A double consonant is indicated in the orthography: *negesseu* 'errands' PKM 12. 14, *attav* 'to him' BD 65. 24, *kynnvryf* 'tumult' 65. 25, *callon* 'womb' 36. 23, *kymmen* 'able, neat' R 1241. 41. But the scribes are not consistent in this matter: *kymen* R 1290. 7; cf. also forms like *kynnullav* 'assemble' BD 65. 23, *kymmeraf* 'I take' PKM 17. 26, *kymmeller* 'let (them) be compelled' 6. 11, where duplication is evidently by analogy with the forms *kynnull*, *kymmer*, *kymmell*.

§ 10. F [v]. In MW this consonant may well have been more of a bilabial than in ModW; this would explain its alternation with *w*, which occurs in certain forms: *kawat* 'shower' / *kafod* § 8 *a*, *yscawn* 'light' GP 1. 32 (> dial. *ysgon*) / ModW *ysgafn*, *kynawon* 'whelps' / *kynavon* R 1209. 33, *kyfoeth* 'property, dominion' / *kywaeth* B v. 11. 12, *gorwed* 'lies' / *gorfedd* GDG 281. 32, *diw Ieu* 'Thursday' / *Difyeu* HGCr 77. 11 (see § 32 *d*). Cf. also the use of *w* for [v] at an early period, § 9.

It occasionally drops before and after *w*: *diauwl* 'devil' HGrC 130. 19 > *diawl* LlA 47. 15, *Annwuyn* PKM 2. 26 > *Annwn* 16. 3, *dwfyr* 'water' > *dwr* YCM 92. 22.

A few forms occur where it has been lost before *u*: *gwëus* (< *gwefus*) 'lip' GDG 4. 36, *daru* (< *darfu*) 'happened' SG 422. 21.

In final position it is frequently lost after a vowel: *praw* 'proof, test' R 1215. 2, *llaw* 'hand', *cu* 'beloved', *du* 'black' (Ir. *dubh*), *guartha* 'top' LL 196. 12, *difri* 'earnest' AP 3. 69. This development became general in the verbal noun ending *-i* (< *-if*): *mol-i* 'praise', OW *molim* Juv, § 178 *d*. It is freely dropped in the fourteenth century, and in the spoken language of today it has almost entirely disappeared in this position.

It is sometimes lost between consonants: *etryt* 'restore' ChO 11. 11, *lledrith* 'spell' PKM 63. 28, but *eturyt* ChSDR 53. 295, *lleturith* RM 97. 17.

§ 11. Dd [ḋ]. It is lost between vowels in some forms: *mywn* 'in', cf. Ir. *medón*, see § 225; *roi* 'give' besides *rodi*, see § 175.

In final position it is frequently lost; examples occur from OW: *triti* 'third' (ModW *trydydd*) Comp, MW *issi* '(who) is' BBC 38. 6, *eiste* 'sit' PKM 10. 20, *y vyny* 'up' (*y* 'to' + *mynyd* 'mountain') BDe 7. 20, *Dewi* 'David' (< Lat. *Dauīd*). It was lost completely at an early period in the 3. pl. of prepositions (§ 63 *a* n. 1 *b*), and in the 2. sing. pres. indic. of verbs (§ 128 *b*).

In some words *ḋ* alternates with *f*: *kudygyl* 'cubicle, cell' (for *cufygl* < Lat. *cŭbic(u)lum*), *Eidyonyd* R 1287. 26 (for *Eiuyonyd* HGCr 33. 20). Metathesis of these consonants is also found: *clefydeu* 'swords' RM 182. 14, YCM 62. 15 (for *cledyfeu* R 1442. 18), *credyfwyr* 'clerics' BD 191. 22, 192. 1 (for *crefydwyr* BDe 13. 7).

§ 12. G. In final position original *g* is represented by non-syllabic *y* after *l*, *r*: *daly* 'hold' R 1145. 24, *hely* 'hunt' (Ir. *selg*) LlB 51. 3, *boly* 'bag' (Ir. *bolg*) PKM 42. 13, *eiry* 'snow' BBC 89. 12, *llary* 'generous' CLlH 12. 8^{b}, *llory* 'stick' CA 44. 1106. (In *bwrw* 'throw' R 1240. 13 and *llwrw* 'track, manner' CA 6. 149 (also *llwry* HGCr 76. 10, pl. *llyry* MA 237^{a}11) *-w* developed under the influence of the preceding *w*.)

There were two separate developments in the above forms. (*a*) *-y* was vocalized as *a*: *dala* BD 7. 4, *hela* LlB 1. 10, *eira* GTA ii. 479. 39, *llara* (monosyllabic) BBC 7. 7, also *llarahaf* CA 49. 1239. (*b*) *-y* was dropped: *dal* R 1295. 19, *llar* 1407. 27. When a syllable is added to one of these forms, the original sound is represented by *i̯*: *dalyei* BD 90. 12, *bvryei* 15. 10.

§ 13. W. In MW poetry *-w* is usually non-syllabic after *d*, *ḋ*, *l*, *n*, *r* (for exceptions, see WG 28): *cadw* 'keep', *meḋw* 'drunk' (Ir. *medb*), *delw* 'image' (Ir. *delb*), *enw* 'name' (Ir. *ainm*), *chwerw* 'bitter' (Ir. *serb*), *garw* 'rough' (Ir. *garb*), *herw* 'outlawry' (? Ir. *serb* 'theft'), *tarw* 'bull' (Ir. *tarb*). In these forms *w* did not count as a syllable in the early period: *Da ardel***w** *kýnnel***w** *Kyndel***w** *keindawn* 'A good representation of the exemplar of Cynddelw of fine gifts' R 1229. 39–40 (9 syll.); later, towards the end of the MW

period it was recognized as a full vowel; see WG 53, L & P 95, GDG lxxxiv–v, GM liv–v.

-w often drops when a syllable is added: *med-dawt* 'drunkenness' LlA 147. 16, *gwed-dawt* 'widowhood' R 1261. 19, *mar-nat* 'elegy' (Ir. *marbnad*) YCM 172. 27; but it is sometimes retained: *metudaud* BBC 84. 13–14.

In polysyllabic words *-w* disappeared by the ModW period: *ardelw* 'warranty' (ModW *arddel*) PKM 26. 1, *syberw* 'proud' (ModW *syber* 'tidy, clean') CA 37. 926, *keuynderw* 'cousin' (ModW *cefnder*) PKM 49. 13. By metathesis, the form *gwarchadw* 'guard' (*gwar* + *cadw*) became *gwarchawd* > *gwarchod* towards the end of the MW period; likewise *ymoralw* 'seek, attend to' (*ym* + (*g*)*or* + (*g*)*alw*) became *ymorawl* > *ymorol*.

§ 14. Chw. *chw*, *hw*, and *wh* commonly alternate with each other in MW. *chw-*: *chwi* 'you', *chwerw* 'bitter', *chwenychu* 'to desire', *chwant* 'desire', *chwaer* 'sister', *chwech* 'six', *chware* 'play, sport'; *-chw-*: *damchweinyawd* 'happened' BDe 5. 6, *ymchwelut* 'turn' PKM 11. 6 (also *ymchoelut* B v. 219. 2). *hw-*: OW *hui* 'you' Juv, MW *hwary* 'play' Hg MSS ii. 17. 5, *hwech* 'six' PKM 20. 7; *-hw-*: *ymhwelut* 'return' PKM 22. 25 (also *ymhoelut* LlA 109. 14). *wh-*: *wherw* 'bitter' R 1214. 11, *whennychu* 'to desire' LlA 149. 12, *whaer* 'sister' RM 28. 25, *whech* 'six' 18. 20, *whare* 'sport' BR 13. 23; *-wh-*: *damwheinyei* 'happened' imperf. SG 332. 6.

Occasionally *chw* alternates with (*g*)*w*: *gware* (*chware*) BR 11. 29, *damwein* (*damchwein*) PKM 21. 10.

N. *hw* and *wh* represent the sound which still prevails in South Wales dialects [(h)u̯].

§ 15. Prosthetic 'y' [ə]. Before *s* + consonant at the beginning of a word, a prosthetic vowel developed at a fairly early period. It probably existed as far back as the ninth century, and was sufficiently distinct to be reckoned as a syllable in poetry by at least the beginning of the twelfth (see PKM xvii, LHEB 527–8). It is written regularly, and is represented by *y*: *yspeil* 'clothing, booty' (< Lat. *spolium*) PKM 17. 5, *ystauell* 'room' 18. 21, *ystryw* 'trick' 42. 11, *ystlys* 'side' YCM 114. 23, *ysgrybyl* 'animals' LlB 27. 21, *yscriuennu* 'write' 126. 23, *ystabyl* 'stable' 47. 21, *yspryt*

'spirit' < **spryt* < **spyrýt* (cf. Corn. *spyrys*, Bret. *spered*) < **spĭritus* < Lat. *spĭritus*, see LHEB 304.

A prosthetic vowel is sometimes found before *n-*, but this has not survived in the later language: *yneuadeu* 'halls' PKM 4. 6, *yniuer* 'number, retinue' 30. 26, *yniueroed* 4. 13, but *neuad* 4. 12, and *niuer* 4. 13. It may appear as *a*: *anniuer* PKM 52. 5, *anadred* 'snakes' YCM 30, 28, but *nadred* CA 51. 1281 (on the alternation of *a* and *y*, see § 3); before *ch-* in *ychwanegu* 'to increase' PKM 34. 15, *achuanec* 'more' BD 78. 29, *achwaneckau* 'to increase' ChO 6. 5, but *chwaneckau* 5. 26.

§ 16. Svarabhakti. An epenthetic vowel developed before the MW period in the following groups of consonants: (1) consonant + *r*, *l*, *n*, (2) *rm*, *rf*, *lm*, *lf*, (3) *đf*, (4) *rch*, *lch* (rare). This resulted from the tendency of *l*, *m*, *n*, *r* to become syllabic. The sound was somewhat indistinct, especially in the early period, and was not reckoned as a syllable in poetry. It is usually represented by *y*, earlier by *e* or *i*.

(*a*) Finally: *coloven* 'column' AL i. 10, *cathil* 'song' BBC 16. 4, *perygil* 'danger' 31. 6, *autyl* 'ode' 15. 1, *dadyl* 'account, incident' PKM 23. 8, *pobyl* 'people' BDe 18. 13, *twymyn* 'hot' BD 26. 1, YCM 86. 26, *hagyr* 'ugly' ChO 1. 1, *baryf* 'beard' PKM 47. 11, *twryf* 'tumult' RM 20. 23, 'crowd' YCM 32. 8, *dedyf* 'law' R 1194. 37, *gredyf* 'nature, instinct' CA 1. 1, *meirych* 'steeds' PKM 32. 2 (but *meirch* 34. 16), *calych* 'chalk' R 1408. 14 (but *calch* PKM 52. 24).

When a syllable is added, the *y* generally disappears: *dedueu* 'laws' (*dedyf*) BT 62. 22. It is occasionally retained, but does not constitute a full syllable: *kenedyloed* 'peoples' (*kenedyl*) LlA 11. 5 (but *kenedloed* 169. 23), *chwetyleu* 'tales, news' (*chwedyl*) LlHen 5. 10 (but *chwedleu* PKM 39. 19), *dyfynder* 'depth' (*dwfyn*) LlHen 97. 20, *dyfynhau* 'deepen' YBH 40. 2532.

In monosyllabic words the sound became assimilated to the preceding vowel. This occurred at least as early as the beginning of the fourteenth century, as the following examples show: *araf* 'weapon' B v. 207. 4, YBH 9. 539, *baraf* 'beard' WM 468. 8 (= *baryf* 111. 20), *gauar* 'goat' RM 76. 29 (= *gauyr* PKM 87. 17),

sauan 'mouth' B ix. 330. 13, *korof* 'saddlebow' BR 15. 17, *torof* 'host' RB 49. 2 (= *toryf* BD 10. 19), *budur* 'dirty' LlA. 18. 28, *furu(f)* 'form, manner' PKM 6. 23, 85. 20, *ruthur* 'rush, distance' BR 13. 27, *kwbwl* 'all' B v. 215. 6, *cwrwf* 'ale, beer' AP 6. 179, *twrwf* 'crowd, tumult' BT 58. 25, AP 6. 179, *llwdwn* 'beast' WM 472. 25, *dwfwr* 'water' RB 87. 5.

N. It developed as a full vowel in the spoken language, but in the modern literary language this development is not indicated; the above words are written *arf, barf, gafr, safn,* &c. (In North Wales dialects it is likely that the epenthetic vowel never arose in groups containing *f* [v]; cf. WG 18.)

(*b*) In initial position it is rare, and occurs in a few words only: *dly-af* > *dyly-af*, *dly-et* > *dyly-et* (Ir. *dlig-im, -ed*), see § 165; *o gynaud* 'of flesh' BBC 84. 15 (but *knaud* 84. 11); *tyno* 'plain, meadow' CA 26. 652 (OW *tnou, tonou*, see LL 420); *kyriaw* 'cry' BY 19. 25.

§ 17. Provection. (*a*) (1) The combinations *b-b, d-d, g-g* yield *pp, tt, cc* respectively: *lletty* 'lodging' (< *lled* + *dy* < *ty* 'house'); see further WG 182.

(2) When two non-homorganic mediae come together, the first is unvoiced, while the second may be voiced or unvoiced. In MW both are usually written as tenues: *dicter* R 1209. 26, *at-kessynt* 1309. 21, *datcanu* BD 46. 3, *attpaur* HGCr 1. 12, *dywet-pwyt* PKM 80. 10, *ducpwyt* WM 183. 21, *wynepclawr* BDe 4. 19; but examples occur where the second is written as a media: *o wacder* R 1280. 2, *atboryon* 1208. 12, *kytbar* 1300. 24, *llygatgall* 1308. 21.

(3) A media was often, but not always, unvoiced before *l, r, m, n, d̆, f,* and even *w̥, i̥*: *llwtlaw* 'Ludlow' R 1222. 33, *atrawd* 1251. 29 (but *adrawd* CA 2. 27), *tatmaetheu* PKM 27. 4, *atnewyd-wys* RM 93. 6 (but *ednebydaf* PKM 77. 13), *tynghetuen* BDe 5. 23, *atwen* CLlH 1. 2[a], *lletyeith* R 1222. 33, *neitta* (with *i̥* dropped, § 8 n.) ChO 20. 5; see WG 183–4.

(4) A media was unvoiced before a voiceless consonant: *atsein* BT 20. 20, *datsein* BD 113. 6.

(*b*) The following changes occurred to consonants in combination with *h*: *b* + *h* > *pp*, *d* + *h* > *tt*, *g* + *h* > *cc*, *f* + *h* > *ff*,

đ + *h* > *th*: *atteb* 'reply' (< *ad* + *heb* § 170). The same changes occur when *w*, *r*, *l*, or *n* intervenes: *dyffryn*(*t*) < *dwfr* 'water' + *hynt* 'course'. These changes can be observed in the equative and superlative forms of adjectives (§ 41 n. 2), and in the subjunctive forms of certain verbs (§ 138).

INITIAL MUTATION OF CONSONANTS

§ 18. Lenition. The following represent the consonantal changes known as lenition: *p* > *b*, *t* > *d*, *c* > *g*, *b* > *f*, *d* > *đ*, *g* > –, *m* > *f*, *ll* > *l*, *rh* > *r*. These mutations, which were complete before the MW period, resulted from phonetic changes which these consonants underwent intervocally and between vowels and sonants at an early period (see LHEB 561, where it is affirmed that the lenition of *p*, *t*, *c*, *b*, *d*, *g*, *m* took place in the second half of the fifth century). These changes occurred not only internally, but also initially, when the consonant was preceded in a close speech group by a form ending in a vowel; hence the initial mutations in Welsh, where they are of syntactic significance.

In MW orthography lenition is not regularly indicated.

The following is a brief description of the syntax of lenition for this period.

§ 19. NOUNS

A fem. sing. noun after the article: *y* ***wreic*** 'the woman' (but *y* ***llaw*** 'the hand', cf. OW *ir lau*; see § 22 n.).

A proper noun in a genitival relationship after a fem. sing. noun: *enys* ***Brydein*** 'the island of Britain' CA 7. 153, *Gulat* ***Uorgant*** 'the Land of Morgan (Glamorgan)' BD 157. 12, *auon* ***Deiui*** 'the river Teifi' BDe 1. 11–12, *Stauell* ***Gyndylan*** 'the hall of Cynddylan' CLlH 35, *Branwen uerch* ***Lyr*** 'Branwen daughter of Llŷr' PKM 29 (contrast *Bendigeiduran uab* ***Llyr*** ib.), *o law* ***Wenhwyfar*** 'from the hand of Gwenhwyfar' WM 122. 2, *kyfreith* ***Vahumet*** 'the law of Mahommed' FfBO 37. 15–16. It is also found in an adjectival genitive denoting quality or substance; thus *llech* ***varmor*** 'a slab of marble' RM 167. 23.

A proper noun in a genitival relationship after a dual: *deu uab Uedravt* 'the two sons of Medrawd' BD 186. 2. It is also found in an adjectival genitive, denoting quality or substance, thus: *y'r deu dafyn waet* 'to the two drops of blood' WM 143. 28–29.

A noun in apposition to a personal name, usually serving as a title: *Rita Gavr* 'Rita the Giant' BD 170. 22, *Maxen Wledic* 'Maxen the Ruler' 72. 11, *Keredic Vrenhin* 'Ceredig the King' BDe 1. 7, *Arawn urenhin Annwuyn* 'Arawn king of Annwn' PKM 2. 26, but *Pwyll Pendeuic Dyuet* 'Pwyll Prince of Dyfed' 1. 1, see § 20 n. 1 (cf. *yr Athro Vledgywryt* LlB 1. 19, where the title precedes, and the initial of the personal name is lenited, see TC 113); *mab* 'son', *merch* 'daughter', after a personal name: *Pryderi uab Pwyll Pen Annwn* PKM 27. 13, *Kicua, uerch Wynn Gohoyw, uab Gloyw Walltlydan, uab Cassnar Wledic* 27. 24–25.

A personal name in apposition to a personal pronoun: *dechreu a wnaeth ef Uanawydan llunyaw corueu* 'he Manawydan began to fashion pommels' PKM 52. 21–22, *Ynteu Wydyon goreu kyuarwyd yn y byt oed* 'He Gwydion was the best teller of tales in the world' 69. 13.

A vocative, with a vocative particle: *A uorwyn!* 'O maiden!' PKM 12. 7. It is found in the middle or at the end of a sentence, even when no particle precedes: *Pa beth yw hynn, Vargret?* 'What is this, Margaret?' B ix. 329. 11. The radical occurs when the noun comes at the beginning of the sentence, with no particle preceding: *Margret, gwybyd ti* 'Margaret, know thou' B ix. 328. 13.

A noun used adverbially (§ 249): *trigyaw y gyt a mi vlwydyn* 'to abide with me for a year' B v. 210. 31. The radical is retained when the noun comes first in the sentence: *blwydyn bu llewyn llawer kerdawr* 'for a year many a songster was merry' CA 4. 93.

A noun following another noun in a proper compound, close or loose: *moruarch* 'sea-horse, whale' BR 18. 1, *gwassannaeth vorvynn* 'servant-maid' B ix. 331. 22.

§ 20. A noun following an adjective in a proper compound, close or loose: *glasved* 'fresh mead' CA 3. 69, *prif lys* 'chief court'

PKM 1. 3. As a rule, the radical occurs after the comparative, but a few examples of lenition are found after *mwy*, *llei*: *mwy les* 'greater advantage' RB 49. 1 (= *mvy lles* BD 10, 18), *mwy boen* 'greater pain' RB 67. 18 (= *mvy poen* BD 29. 2), *llei boen* 'less torture' BR 3. 23, *llei gollet* 'less of a loss' YCM 121. 25; see TC 49. The noun is sometimes lenited after the superlative: *e wynvydedicaf Wyry Veir* 'the most blessed Virgin Mary' B x. 32. 32–33, *yu gyssegredicaf vam ef* 'to his most sacred mother' x. 24. 27, *gan uwyhaf dristit* 'with exceeding great sorrow' B ix. 145. 17; see TC 52.

A noun after the following numerals: *un* 'one' (fem. sing. noun: *un verch* 'one daughter'; lenition occurs also in a masc. noun when *un* has the meaning of 'same, similar': *yr vn gerdet* 'the same pace' PKM 10. 4, *yn un dwf* 'in like growth' 59. 5, but *yr vn march* 'the same horse' 10. 21, see TC 39); *deu*, *dwy* 'two' (but the radical occurs in some combinations, such as *deutu* 'two sides', *deucant* 'two hundred', *deupeth* 'two things' PKM 9. 6, see WG 195); *wyth* 'eight': *wyth drawst* 'eight beams' RM 111. 21; *seith* 'seven' (by analogy with *wyth*): *seith gantref* 'seven cantrefs' RB 25. 13. Analogy probably accounts for instances of lenition after *pump* 'five' and *chwech* 'six': *pump wraged* 'five women' PKM 48. 2, *hwech wraged* 20. 7. Lenition is also found in the following forms, which are all compounds: *unben* 'chief' (*un* + *pen*), *trywyr* 'three men' (*gwyr*), *pumwyr* 'five men', *seithwyr* 'seven men', *nawwyr* 'nine men', *cannwr* 'hundred men'. *mil* 'a thousand': *mil vanyeri* 'a thousand banners' LlHen 14. 8.

A noun following the pronominal forms *pa* 'what?', *pet* 'how many?', *holl* 'all', *eil* 'second, other', *neill* '(the) one', *ryw* 'some, such', *amryw* 'various', *kyfryw* 'such', *sawl* 'as many', *amyl* 'many a', *ambell* 'an occasional', *ychydic* 'a little, few', *kwbyl* 'complete': *pet wynt* 'how many winds' BT 20. 22, *y ryw wr* 'the kind of man' PKM 38. 10, *y savl geuri* 'so many giants' BD 22. 24, *cwbyl waradwyd* 'a complete insult' PKM 32. 24.

A noun following the 2. sing. and 3. sing. masc. of the possessive pronoun (prefixed and infixed § 56): *y'th uedyant* 'in thy power' PKM 14. 25, *y uryt* 'his mind' 1. 3, *o'y gyuoeth* 'of his dominion' 1. 4.

N. 1. There are examples of *-th đ-* > *th*: *athiwed* (< *a'th điwed*) 'and thy end' LlA 157. 26, also *a thygei di* (< *a'th đygei di*) 'that would bring thee' SG 60. 12. *-th d-* > *th* in *ytheyrnas* (< *y'th deyrnas*) 'to thy kingdom' B xiv. 271. 41; see WG 183.

A tenuis often remains unchanged after *'th*: *a'th cledeu* 'and thy sword' YBH 15. 961, *y'th castell* 'to thy castle' 36. 2308, *dy gedymdeith di a'th cwn* 'thy companion and thy hounds' PKM 56. 25, *a'th teulu* 'with thy war-band' WM 160. 8, *o'th twyll a'th vrat* 'through thy deceit and treachery' 167. 34; see YBH cxv.

Unvoicing of a media after a voiceless spirant is quite common in MW; note the following examples: *dy gorff ti* 'thy body' YBH 3. 147, *yr holl kadwyneu* 'all the chains' 17. 1141, *y holl pechodeu* 'all his sins' 22, 1435, *o'r neillparth* 'on one side' BR 6. 12, *mi a'th caraf* 'I love thee' YBH 4. 232, *Canys collyghy* 'Since thou wilt not let it go' PKM 63. 21 (but *Kanys gollyngy* 63. 18); see WG 185, RC xxxi. 156–9, GM 50.

A noun following the prepositions *a* 'of', *am* 'about', *ar* 'on', *at* 'to', *dan* 'under', *gan* 'with', *heb* 'without', *hyt* 'as far as', *y* 'to', *is* 'below', *o* 'of, from', *tros* 'over', *trwy* 'through', *uch* 'above', *wrth* 'at, by'.

N. 2. *dros Dyfi* 'across Dyfi' GDG 194. 6, where *đ* (< *d*) has become *d* by provection after *s*. On the change *đ* > *d* after *s*, *t*, *d*, and in old formations after *ll*, *l*, *n*, see WG 186.

N. 3. Initial consonants of prepositions, as of proclitics in general, commonly undergo lenition, thus: *gan* (< *can*), *dan* (< *tan*), *dros* (< *tros*), *drwy* (< *trwy*). In some cases the lenited form has become general: *ar* (< *guar* / *guor* § 8 *a*, but see § 205 n.), *y* (< *đy* < *di* § 223 n. 1), *wrth* (< *gwrth*).

A noun following the conjunction *neu* 'or': *gwr neu wreic* 'man or woman'.

§ 21. A noun following a verbal form (see TC 182–233). In ModW the subject usually has the radical when it immediately follows its verb, whereas the object is always lenited. Lenition, therefore, serves to distinguish between subject and object. In the MW period this 'law' had not been evolved, and thus there is considerable variation.

(*a*) Subject. Lenition occurs after the following forms of the verb 'to be': 3. sing. pres. indic. *oes*, *yssit*, 3. sing. consuet. pres. *bit*, *byd* (rare), 3. sing. imperf. *oed*, 3. sing. consuet. past *bydei*,

3. sing. pret. *bu*, 3. sing. pres. subj. *bo* (rare), 3. sing. imperf. subj. *bei*: *nyt oes bont arnei hitheu* 'there is no bridge over it' PKM 40. 25–26, *gwaeth uu drafferth y deu hynny* 'worse was the plight of those two' WM 506. 15–16. With other verbs it commonly occurs after the 3. sing. imperf. and plup.: *Ny uynhei Gaswallawn y lad ynteu* 'Caswallawn did not wish to slay him' PKM 46. 7, *Ny angassei Uendigeituran eiryoet ymywn ty* 'Bendigeidfran had never been contained within a house' 31. 12. In other cases it is not common. It is found, however, after the 3. sing. pret.: *A fan welas Uranwen y mab* 'And when Branwen saw her son' PKM 43. 27, *a phan gigleu Gei eu bot yn dyuot* 'and when Cei heard that they were coming' RM 214. 22. Occasionally we find it after the 3. sing. imper.: *Keissyet Uaelgwn uaer arall* 'Let Maelgwn seek another steward' CLlH 20. 5[c], *gwnaet bawp velly* 'let all do likewise' B ii. 34. 21. When a pl. verb precedes a pl. subject in early poetry, the subject is lenited: *Yn Aber Cuawc yt ganant gogeu* 'In Aber Cuawg cuckoos sing' CLlH 23. 5[a], *pan safhwynt galaned* 'when corpses will stand' AP 4. 122, *ymgetwynt Gymry* 'the Welsh will see to it' 5. 141, *Atchwelwynt Wydyl* 'the Irish will return' 6. 177. The subject is lenited when it is separated from its verb: *y mae yno wr du* 'there is there a black man' RM 240. 19, *y doeth ym drwy vy hun vudred godineb* 'there came to me through my sleep the filth of adultery' B viii. 139. 34; but the radical also occurs: *dybyd Gymry gwarth* 'shame will come to the Welsh' R 582. 10.

(*b*) Object. In MW lenition of the object is usual, especially when it is separated from the verb: *y kynhelis Bendigeiduran Uranwen* 'Bendigeidfran supported Branwen' PKM 44. 7, *yd adnabydy uoes y llys* 'thou wilt know the usage of the court' 4. 4–5. In many cases, however, the radical is kept, especially after the 3. sing. pres. indic., the 3. sing. pret., and the 3. sing. pres. subj.: *ef a geif march iach* 'he shall have a sound horse' PKM 33. 17, *y gossodes petwar swydawc ar hugeint yn y lys* 'he set twenty-four officers in his court' LlB 2. 15, *A'r amherodres a ofynnawd kyghor* 'And the empress asked for counsel' WM 164. 2–3, *pan wnel gwled* 'when he makes a feast' FfBO 54. 34. Lenition does not normally occur after impersonal passive forms, but note: *pan dreithir draethawd* 'when a song is sung' HGCr 68. 3, *ual yd las*

ureichuras y urawd 'as his brother Breichfras was killed' LlHen 177. 2; see TC 230–1.

(*c*) An object of destination after verbs of motion is generally lenited: *Gwyr a aeth Gatraeth* 'The men went to Catraeth' CA 3. 68. Lenition is found even after (1) impersonal forms, (2) verbal nouns, where the object normally has the radical. (1) *yd ellyngvyt wlat nef deu can wr* 'there were delivered to the land of heaven two hundred men' BD 192. 2, (2) *en menet Gaerusalem* 'going to Jerusalem' B ix. 340. 20; see § 249 n.

(*d*) Nominal predicate (see TC 267–347). Lenition occurs after most forms of the verb 'to be': *a wyt uorwyn di?* 'art thou a maiden?' PKM 77. 10, *mi a vydaf gath* 'I am a cat' ChO 23. 21. But the radical is also found: *bum glas gleissat, bum ki* 'I was a grey salmon, I was a dog' BT 22. 19, *a uo penn bit pont. Mi a uydaf pont* 'he who is chief, let him be a bridge. I will be a bridge' PKM 40–41.

The predicative particles *yn*, *y* are generally followed by lenition (of nouns and adjectives): *yr hwnn yssyd etto yn vrynn uchel* 'which is still a high hill' BDe 17. 21, *adaw seithwyr y dywyssogyon yma* 'leave seven men as overlords here' PKM 38. 25; see §§ 145, 222, 244.

§ 22. ADJECTIVES. Lenition occurs:

After a fem. sing. noun: *y wreic deccaf* 'the fairest lady' PKM 3. 9.

After a dual noun: *deu uilgi uronwynyon urychyon* 'two greyhounds whitebreasted, brindled' WM 455. 14, *deu Wydel uonllwm* 'two bare-breeched Irishmen' PKM 44. 18, *deu varch uawr* 'two big horses' SG 88. 35; also after a plural form with dual meaning: *golygon orwyllt* 'fierce looks' PKM 42. 16.

After a personal name: *Howel Uychan* 'Howel the Small' BD 199. 9–10, *Catwaladyr Uendigeit* 'Cadwaladr the Blessed' 204. 13; but there are numerous exceptions: *Rodri Mawr* 'Rhodri the Great', *Ifor Bach* 'Ifor the Small', *Mynydawc Mwynvawr* CA 4. 89, *Beli Mawr* RM 93. 1 (= *Beli Uawr* WM 191. 27); see TC 115–16, 118, CA lxxix–lxxx.

The comparative adjective after a noun in negative and interrogative sentences; see § 46.

After *mor* 'so, as', *kyn* 'as', *ry* 'too': *mor* ***uawr*** 'as big', *ry* ***uawr*** 'too big'.

After an adjective or noun in a proper compound, close or loose: *can***welw** 'pale white' BR 9. 18, *cad* ***barawt*** 'ready for battle' PKM 43. 7, *llygat***vras** 'with large eye(s)' HGrC 138. 35.

An adjective used adverbially: *Nit oes ansawd y mi ych kynnal chwi* ***bellach*** 'I have no means to maintain you any longer' PKM 6. 5.

Predicatively, after the verb 'to be': *ot oed* ***uawr*** *ef* 'if he was big' PKM 35. 16, *y bu* ***barawt*** 'it was ready' 87. 7–8; but the radical is often kept: *Oed* ***k***ochach *y deu rud no'r fion* 'redder were her cheeks than the foxgloves' WM 476. 12–13, *ny byd* ***b***yw *ef o hwnnw* 'he will not survive that' PKM 3. 19.

After the predicative and adverbial particles *yn*, *y*: *yn* ***g***yulym 'quickly, speedily' BD 6. 31, *uy mot y* ***u***eichawc 'that I am pregnant' PKM 23. 12, *gwedy bot y* ***b***arawt *yr ystauell* 'after the chamber was ready' 36. 8–9; see §§ 145, 222, 244, 250.

N. Initial *l* and *r* become voiceless (> *ll-*, *rh-*) after *-n* and *-r*: *yn* ***ll***awn 'full', *mor* ***ll***awn 'so full', *ar* ***ll***awr 'on (the) floor' CA 2. 27, *pan* ***ll***ithywyt 'when it was fed' 2. 31. (Instances of *l-* occur: *mor* ***l***wydannus 'so successfully' PKM 8. 23, *ar* ***l***awr *llys* 'on the floor of a court' WM 456. 12; see also YCM 198, GDG 507. On the use of *l* for *ll*, see § 9.) The same development can be observed in the second element of compound forms, such as *gwin***ll***an* 'vineyard' (contrast *corff***l***an* 'graveyard' WM 453. 10), *hir***ll***aes* 'long trailing', *tor***ll***wyth* 'wombful', *penr***h***yn* 'promontory', also *Hen***ll***an* 'Old Chuɪ h', *Hen***ll***ys* 'Old Court', &c. This phonetic development was complete before the loss of *ʒ* (< *g*) and *đ*, as is shown by the following forms, where it is not found: *Cyn***l**as < **Cyn***ʒ**las* < *Cuno***ʒ**lasos*; *tor***l**an* 'brink' < **torr***ʒ**lann* 'broken bank'; *Har***l**ech* < *Har***đ**lech* PKM 29. 3; *cor***l**an* 'fold' < *cor***đ**lann*. Cf. also *yn* ***l***an, *mor* ***l***an from *g***l**an* 'clean'; see LHEB 480.

§ 23. VERBS. Lenition occurs after the following forms:

An adjective in a proper compound, close or loose, § 251 *e*.

The relative pronoun *a* § 65, the affirmative particle *a* § 192, and the interrogative particle *a* § 196.

The negative particles *ny*, *na*, the affirmative particles *neu*, *ry*, and the prefixes *go-*, *di-*, *dy-*, &c.; cf. § 24 *e* and see § 65 n. 1.

The particle *yt* § 190 n.

The interrogative pronoun *pa*, *py* § 83, *cwt* § 86.

The conjunctions *pan* 'when', *tra* 'while', *yny* 'until', §§ 87, 273, 276, 278.

The verb 'to be' after a nominal predicate: *Dilesteir* ***uyd*** *dy hynt* 'Without let shall be thy journey' PKM 3. 26.

§ 24. The Spirant Mutation (see LHEB 634–8). Initial *p*, *t*, *c* become *ph*, *th*, *ch* after the following forms:

(*a*) The 3. sing. fem. of the prefixed and infixed possessive pronoun: *y* ***phenn*** 'her head', *y'w* ***phenn*** 'to her head' (*penn*).

(*b*) The numerals *tri* 'three', *chwech* 'six'.

(*c*) The preposition *tra* 'over': *ton tra* ***thon*** 'wave over wave'; the adverb *tra* 'very, excessive': *tra* ***chas*** 'very hateful'.

(*d*) The conjunction and preposition *a* 'and, with', §§ 252, 201, the conjunction *no* 'than' (after a comparative § 46), the conjunction *na* 'neither, nor' § 254.

(*e*) The negative particles *ny*, *na*, the affirmative particles *neu*, *ry*, and the prefixes *go-*, *di-*, *dy-*, &c.; cf. § 23 and see § 65 n. 1.

(*f*) The conjunction *o* 'if' § 272.

(*g*) *cw* 'where?' § 86.

§ 25. The Nasal Mutation. Initial *p*, *t*, *c*, *b*, *d*, *g* in certain (sandhi) positions become *mh*, *nh*, *ngh*, *m*, *n*, *ng*. This mutation derives originally from cases where these consonants occurred initially after proclitics ending in Brit. *-n*; see WG 167–73, LHEB 639–43, B xvii. 137–58, YBH cxv–cxvi.

Nasalization is not uniformly represented in MW orthography. It occurs after the following forms:

(*a*) The preposition *yn* 'in': *ymhob*, *ym* ***pob*** (*pob* 'every') FfBO 39. 3, 53. 20, *yg* ***Kernyw*** 'in Cornwall' (*Kernyw*) WM 495. 25, *yng* ***Kymraec*** 'in Welsh' (*Kymraec*) BDe 4. 22–23, *yg* ***charchar*** 'in prison' (*carchar*) YBH 25. 1594, *yg gwyd* 'in the presence of' (*gwyd*) PKM 14. 8.

N. The nasal mutation is occasionally found in adjectives after *yn* (predicative and adverbial §§ 145, 250): *ygwyllt* 'wild' (*gwyllt*) WM 118. 8, *yn nyblyc* 'enfolded' (*dyblyc*) PKM 7. 18, *ymhell* 'far' (*pell*), *ynghynt* 'sooner' (*cynt*), cf. also *yn nellt* 'in splinters' (*dellt*) CA 51. 1298; see TC 245.

(*b*) The prefixed pronoun *fy* 'my': *vy penn* 'my head' (*penn*) FfBO 38. 30 (also *vy phen* Hg MSS ii. 160. 21, *vymphen i* YBH 58. 3744, *ym penn* PKM 36. 3 = *vym pen* RM 32. 19), *uyn tat* 'my father' (*tat*) RM 118. 5 (also *vynthat* YBH 67. 4356, *vyn dat i* 4. 196, *vynhat i* 4. 201, *ynhat* 5. 265 = ModW *'nhad*), *vyg charyat* 'my love' (*caryat*) YBH 29. 1815–16, *vyng karedic* 'my beloved' (*caredic*) B v. 217. 29, *vyng kic* 'my flesh' (*kic*) FfBO 40. 27, *uyg korf* 'my body' (*corff*) PKM 73. 9 (also *yghorf i* YBH 3. 146), *vy mrawt* 'my brother' (*brawt*) SG 269. 10, *uyn daw* 'my son-in-law' (*daw*) WM 477. 16, *uy gwlat* 'my country' (*gwlat*) PKM 36. 5 (= *vyg gwlat* RM 32. 21, also *yg wlat* YBH 32. 1998), *wy gwreic* 'my wife' (*gwreic*) PKM 64. 3.

(*c*) The numerals *seith* 'seven', *naw* 'nine', *dec* (*deng*) 'ten', *deudec* (*deudeng*) 'twelve', *pymthec* (*pymtheng*) 'fifteen', *can*(*t*) 'hundred', with certain nouns, mainly *blyned* 'years', *diwarnawt* 'day', *dieu* 'days', *dyn* 'man', *bu* 'cows': *seith mlyned* 'seven years', *seith nieu* 'seven days' HGCr 1. 15, *seith mroder* 'seven brothers' (*broder*) SG 33. 7, *naw nieu* 'nine days' LlB 83. 10, *dec niwarnawt* 'ten days' FfBO 55. 24, *degniev* 'ten days' LlA 22. 4, *dec mrenhin* 'ten kings' (*brenhin*) YBH 64. 4115, *degmrath* 'ten wounds' (*brath*) 3. 164, *deudeng mydin* 'twelve hosts' (*bydin*) BD 177. 17, *pympthec mrenhin* 'fifteen kings' YBH 64. 4125, *can mu* 'hundred kine' WM 455. 30.

It spread by analogy to other numerals, *pym*(*p*) 'five', *wyth* 'eight', *ugein*(*t*) 'twenty', *deugein*(*t*) 'forty', &c., also *tri* 'three' and *chwech* 'six' (rare): *pum mroder* 'five brothers' GGGl 39. 57, *chwech nyhev* 'six days' LlA 158. 7, *deugein niev* 'forty days' 20. 21.

§ 26. Sandhi h (see L & P 121, TC 153–5). *h* occurs initially before vowels after the following forms:

(*a*) The 3. sing. fem. of the prefixed and infixed possessive pronoun: *yn y hoes* 'in her lifetime' BDe 3. 9, *liw y hwynneb* 'the

colour of her face' LlA 81. 14. Here *h-* represents IE. *-s*; in the other cases it is analogical.

(*b*) The 1. sing. of the infixed possessive pronoun: *o'm* ***hanwod*** 'against my will' PKM 12. 24, *a'm* ***harueu*** 'and my arms' WM 150. 35, *y'm* ***harffet*** 'in my lap' BDe 9. 6–7; also the infixed pronoun object: *a'm* ***hymlityassant*** 'who pursued me'. But examples without *h-* occur in MW: *o'm anuod* 'against my will' PKM 33. 22, *o'm achaws* 'because of me' 45. 18, *a'm etteil* 'that keeps me' 2. 11.

(*c*) The 3. sing. and pl. of the infixed pronoun object: *mi ae* ***harhoaf*** 'I shall wait for him', *a'y* ***hanuonyssei*** 'who had sent him' YBH 7. 418, *ac y* ***hyssawd wynt*** 'and devoured them' ChO 6. 20; but *ninheu a'y arhown* 'we shall wait for him' PKM 51. 3–4 (= *a'e harhown* RM 45. 30).

(*d*) The 1. and 3. pl. of the prefixed and infixed possessive pronoun: *an* ***harueu*** 'our arms' PKM 53. 3, *eu* ***harueu*** 'their arms' 54. 21, *a'e* ***harglwyd*** 'as their lord' 19. 19–20, *o'y* ***henill*** 'of their gain' 53. 2–3; but *yn arderchogrwyd ni* 'our excellence' LlA 168. 13, *o'n achaws ni* 'for our sake' BDe 16. 12, *y'n amherawdyr ni* 'to our emperor' FfBO 53. 15–16.

N. 1. Sometimes *h-* is found before verbs beginning with a vowel after the pre-verbal particle *y*, where *yd* or *yr* normally occurs: *Y Duv y* ***harchaw*** 'Of God do I beseech' HGCr 21, *y* ***harchaf dyuot un o honawch*** 'I beseech one of you to come' WM 500. 10–11, *ac yn hwnnw yd eistedwn ac y* ***hyfwn y gwin*** 'and in it we shall sit and drink the wine' ChO 19. 1; see § 190.

N. 2. In OW and early MW *h* is found before an initial vowel or a medial vowel in hiatus, e.g. *ha, hac* 'and' Comp; see WG 186–8, also RC xxxvi 127.

MORPHOLOGY AND SYNTAX

THE ARTICLE

§ 27. Welsh has no indefinite article (but see § 97 *b* 3). The definite article has the following forms in MW, *yr* before a vowel and *h*, *y* before a consonant, *w*, and sometimes *i*: *yr auon* 'the river', *y cawr* 'the giant', *y wreic* 'the woman' (*gwreic*), *y iarll* 'the earl' YBH 1. 17, also *yr iarll*. After the prepositions *a* 'with', *y* 'to', *o* 'of, from', the conjunctions *a* 'and', *no* 'than', *na* 'nor', the interjections *a*, *o*, &c., and occasionally after other forms ending in a vowel, the form *'r* occurs before both consonants and vowels: *o'r mab* 'of the son', *y'r eglwys* 'to the church'.

N. 1. *yr* sometimes occurs before a consonant where the preceding word ends in a vowel: *Pieu yr bet* 'Whose is the grave?' BBC 66. 10, *llyma yr wed* 'this is the manner' RM 2. 29 (= *Llyma wyd* PKM 2. 28), *y troy yr Credo hvnn* 'to translate this Creed' B v. 195.

ir and *'r* are the only forms found in OW.

When two or more definite nouns are connected by a co-ordinative conjunction, the article is repeated with each noun: *yr heul a'r awyr a'r wybyr* 'the sun and air and sky'. Exceptions are rare: *y troet nev lav* 'the foot or hand' B v. 195.

N. 2. The article seldom occurs in early poetry, but examples abound in the OW glosses and prose fragments; see CA lxviii–lxix.

N. 3. There are traces of *-n* forms (cf. Ir., Corn., Bret.): *yn awr* 'now' ('this hour'), *y neill* (for *yn eill*) § 95. See L & P 218–19, CA lxviii–lxix, and cf. § 244 n.

§ 28. The article generally serves to delimit the meaning of a noun by making it definite. In addition the following uses should be noted:

(*a*) The article may be used to indicate a person or thing which is determinate for the author, but otherwise indefinite: *Ac yna y bu y kynghor ganthunt hwy* 'And then they held a council' PKM 36. 17, *llyma y dryw yn seuyll ar wwrd y llog* 'lo, a wren alighting on

board the ship' 80. 19, *dros vynwgyl y troet yd aei y dyn* 'over the ankle would a man go' BR 2. 15.

(*b*) Sometimes the article is apparently used for a possessive personal pronoun: *Ac yna y kymerth y vorvynn santes y kythreul gyr guallt y penn* 'And then the maiden saint caught the demon by the hair of his head' B ix. 331. 7, *Ac yna ny byd idaw dim a dotto yn y geneu* 'And then he will not have anything that he may put in his mouth' ii. 16. 15, *Or trewir dyn ar y pen* 'If a person be struck on his head' LlB 56. 29. Cf. Irish; see JCS i. 242–3.

N. It could be argued that *y* in the above examples represents the 3. sing. masc. of the prefixed pronoun, in which case, however, one would expect lenition of the following consonant. But lenition is not always indicated in MW orthography; see § 18.

(*c*) It may be used with a vocative noun: *Och! o'r kyghorwyr drwc* 'Woe! o evil counsellors' B ix. 328. 19, *O'r kythreul enwir* 'O wicked demon!' ix. 332. 1, *O'r argluydes waredoccaf* 'O most gentle lady!' x. 27. 21, '*Ygwr hir*,' *heb y Peredur yna* '"Tall man," said Peredur then' WM 123. 35, *Pan doy di, yr yscolheic?* 'Whence comest thou, clerk?' PKM 61. 23, '*E porthawr*,' *heb ef*, '*dos ymywn*' '"Porter," said he, "go in"' 81. 25.

(*d*) As a rule, the article is not used before a definite noun on which another definite noun depends: *coron y deyrnas* 'the crown of the kingdom'. But in MW there are a number of examples where it is found before both: *y kic yr ederyn* 'the flesh of the bird' WM 140. 21, *meibon y brenhin y diodeifeint* 'sons of the King of Suffering' 154. 30, also WM 152. 10, 227. 7–8, LlA 23. 22, FfBO 51. 1, 54. 9 (see xxviii), VST 35. 25, B iv. 332. 10–11, x. 59, 20–21, xiv. 10. 7, 270. 27, and see BY 67–68, YBH cxlviii.

On the other hand, the article is regularly used before a definite noun followed by an indefinite noun in a genitival relationship: *y dwr bedyd* 'the water of baptism', *y bwyssel keirch* 'the bushel of oats'.

(*e*) The article is not generally used with an abstract noun, but it is occasionally found in MW: *e drugared* 'mercy' B ix. 338. 12, *y wirioned* 'truth' x. 58. 5, *e merthyryolaeth* 'martyrdom' ix. 336. 19, *yr angheu* 'death' ii. 30. 21.

(*f*) It is used with an adjective to give it the force of a noun:

y gwirion 'the innocent' B ix. 47. 20, *yr uchaf* 'the highest' v. 215. 32, *yr anghenogyon* 'the needy' (pl.) viii. 140. 21, *y tlodyon* 'the poor' (pl.).

N. In some texts there are examples where the article is used with an adjective after a noun preceded by a possessive pronoun. (*a*) 1. sing., in intimate forms of address with nouns denoting members of family: *Vy mab i y cu* 'My dear son' B ii. 17, *vy mrawt y tec* 'my good brother' SG 130. 12, *vy chwaer y dec* 'my good sister' 120. 37–38, *Vy nei y tec* 'My good nephew' 365. 6, also *Merch y dec* 'My good maid' VST 33. 2. (*b*) 3. sing.: *y vab yr hynaf* 'his eldest son' BY 13. 5, *y chorff hy y tyner* 'her tender body' B ix. 328. 9 (cf. *y chorff hi santeid* 'her saintly body' ix. 332. 13), *y chnawt y gwyn* 'her white flesh' YBH 29. 1842.

See further BY 80, 83, 118, B xii. 19, TC 420, YBH cxlix–cl, and cf. Ir., GOI 298.

§ 29. Normally the article is not used with a proper noun, as this is already definite. It is, however, occasionally found in certain cases.

(*a*) Personal names: (1) *y Lleuelys* CLlLl 1. 16, *yr Iessu* 'Jesus' (also *Iessu*). (2) With an adjective: *e Wynvydedic Veir* 'the Blessed Mary' B ix. 145. 1, *y Wynuydedic Vargret* 'the Blessed Margaret' x. 59. 27 (but *Gwynuydedic Vargret* ix. 328. 19). (3) With a noun which serves as a title: *E Tat Rosimas* 'Father Rosimas' B ix. 341. 15, *E Santes Vargret* 'Saint Margaret' x. 53. 13, *y'r Arglvydes Veir* 'to the Lady Mary' BD 62. 22. (4) With a demonstrative pronoun: *a'r Hv hwnnw* 'with that Hu' B v. 206. 28. (5) With a relative clause: *yr Hu a gyffroes y vrenhines* 'the Hu that roused the queen' B v. 207. 2.

(*b*) Names of countries; forms with initial vowel: *yr Affric* 'Africa' BD 104. 16, *yr Alban* 'Scotland' 21. 21, *yr Almaen* 'Germany' YCM 1. 15, *yr Asya* 'Asia' B ix. 326. 7, *yr Eifft* 'Egypt' BD 58. 27, *yr Eydal* 'Italy' 3. 11, *yr India* BDe 23. 10, *yr Yspaen* 'Spain' BD 69. 7, but *Iwerdon* 'Ireland' PKM 29. 16. It is rarely found before names with initial consonant: *a'r Calabyr a'r Pwyl* 'Calabria and Apulia' YCM 122. 27.

(*c*) Names of feasts and seasons: *y Garawys* 'Lent', *y Pasc* 'Easter', *y Sulgwyn* 'Whitsun'.

(*d*) Occasionally with names of languages: *o'r Lladin yg Kymraec* 'from Latin into Welsh' B v. 203. 18, but *o Ladin yg Kymraec* YCM 41. 8.

THE NOUN

§ 30. Number. The noun in Welsh has two numbers, singular and plural. Traces of the dual survive in a few forms, § 33. The pl. may be distinguished from the sing. in one of the following ways:

(*a*) Change of internal vowel, as follows:

a > *ei* / *y*: *bard* 'bard', *beird*; *march* 'horse', *meirch*; *sant* 'saint', *seint* (*seint* is sing. when it occurs as a title before a personal name: *Seint Basil* B ix. 335. 38, but it generally occurs after the name in the form *sant*: *Athanasius Sant* B v. 195, *Aedan Sant* BDe 10. 14); *pall* 'tent', *pyll* § 32 *a*.

e > *y*: *Gwydel* 'Irishman', *Gwydyl*; *unben* 'chieftain', *unbyn*.

o > *y*: *corn* 'horn', *cyrn*; *escob* 'bishop', *escyb*; *pont* 'bridge', *pynt* FfBO 48. 5.

w > *y*: *twrch* 'boar', *tyrch* CLlH 45. 90^{c}, § 32 *a*.

ae > *ei*: *baed* 'boar', *beid* BT 30. 10; *maen* 'stone', *mein*.

oe > *wy*: *croen* 'skin', *crwyn*; *oen* 'lamb', *wyn*.

a . . . *a* > *e* . . . *ei* / *y*: *auall* 'apple-tree', *euyll*; *dauat* 'sheep', *deueit*; *manach* 'monk', *meneich* (also *mynach*, *myneich*); *paladyr* 'spear', *peleidyr*.

a . . . *ae* > *e* . . . *ei*: *amaeth* 'ploughman' LlB 3. 24, *emeith* YCM 169. 3.

a . . . *e* > *e* . . . *y*: *astell* 'plank', *estyll*; *castell* 'castle', *kestyll*; *ystauell* 'room', *ysteuyll* YCM 12. 15.

a . . . *w* > *e* . . . *y*: *amws* 'steed', *emys*; *ardwrn* 'wrist', *erdyrn*; *diafwl* 'devil', *diefyl* LlA 47. 7.

Also *haearn* 'iron', *heyrn* § 7; *iwrch* 'roebuck', *yrch* § 86; *gwr* 'man', *gwyr*; *troet* 'foot', *traet* (see B ix. 34–35); *ty* 'house', *tei* (see L & P 30; in compounds generally *-tyeu*: *hundyeu* 'sleeping-rooms' PKM 4. 6, *llettyeu* 'lodgings' LlB 10. 3, but *gwindei* 'banqueting houses' R 1202. 15 < *gwin* + *tei*); *biw* 'cow' BBC 90. 2, *bu* with numerals, § 51 *b* (but *biw* is also frequently pl., see G 57).

N. 1. This formation derives mainly from old *-o-* stems in British: **bard-o-s* > *bard*. The nominative pl. of such nouns ended in *-i* (<*oi*);

this ending disappeared, causing affection of the preceding vowel: **bardi* > *bęird*. Thus in Welsh there evolved the forms *bard, beird*, and the alternation *a* / *ei* was generalized to denote plurality.

N. 2. *ci* 'dog', *cwn. ci* comes from **kṷ̄* < **kū* < **kṷō* (Ir. *cú*), and *cwn* from **kṷ̆nes*. The *n* in *cwn* represents the old stem co nant.

(*b*) Addition of an ending:

-(į)eu: *amrann-eu* 'eyelids' (sing. *amrant*) PKM 32. 4, *aru-eu* 'arms' 5. 23, *bad-eu* 'boats' 30. 8, *bwyd-eu* 'foods' FfBO 32. 1, *cad-eu* 'battles, armies', *kennad-eu* 'messengers' BDe 14. 15, *glin-yeu* 'knees', *grud-yeu* 'cheeks', *hebog-eu* 'hawks' PKM 8. 20, *llenn-eu* 'mantles' BR 21. 14, *penn-eu* 'heads', *porthloed-eu* 'ports' BD 83. 4.

-(į)on: *kedymdeith-yon* 'companions' (ModW *cymdeithion*), *ebol-yon* 'colts', *gal-on* (*gal* 'enmity, enemy', see G 519), *Idew-on* 'Jews'.

-(į)eit: *creadur-yeit* 'creatures, animals', *makwyu-eit* 'squires' PKM 4. 8, *pechadur-yeit* 'sinners' BDe 16. 12.

-i: *arglwyd-i* 'lords', *hwylbrenn-i* 'masts', *llestr-i* 'vessels', *proffwyd-i* 'prophets'.

-yd: *bro-yd* 'regions, lands', *heol-yd* 'roads' RM 175. 2.

ed: *kenuein-oed* 'flocks, herds' BD 108. 13, *ieith-oed* 'languages', *mur-oed* 'walls', *niuer-oed* 'retinues', *teyrnass-oed* 'kingdoms'.

-ed: *brenhin-ed* 'kings' BD 157. 6, *tir-ed* 'lands' 19. 19 (ModW *brenhinoedd, tiroedd*; *-oed* has almost completely supplanted *-ed* in the Mod. period).

-et: *merch-et* 'girls'.

-ot: *edn-ot* 'birds', *llew-ot* 'lions', *meudwy-ot* 'hermits' BDe 20. 23.

-awt: *edystr-awt* 'steeds' BT 70. 7, *gorwyt-awd* 'steeds' LlHen 108. 5.

-awr: *aess-awr* 'shields', *bydin-awr* 'armies', *edystr-awr* CA 6. 146 (also *edystrawt*, see above), *gelor-awr* 'biers', *gwaew-awr* 'spears' (see n. 3), *llavn-awr* 'blades', *penn-awr* 'heads', *ysgwyd-awr* 'shields'. This ending occurs mostly in early poetry; later it was superseded by *-eu, -oed*.

-os (diminutive): *vy mranos* 'my little ravens' (*bran*) BR 12. 28.

-ant: *car-ant* 'kinsmen' n. 2; *-eint, -ein* ib.; *-yr* n. 3; *-er c* 1.

In a few forms the pl. ending is added to a derivative: *Cristonog-yon* (*Cristawn* 'Christian'), *glawog-yd* (*glaw* 'rain') RB 324. 23.

N. 1. These endings derive originally from old collectives (e.g. *pyscawt* 'fish', see *c* 1 < Lat. *piscātus*) or old plurals (see L & P 160–1). They represent the final syllable of the stem, as may be illustrated, for instance, in the case of *-eu* and *-oed*, the two most common endings. *-eu* is from old *u*- stems (*cadeu* < **katoų-es*, *cat* < **katu-s*), *-oed* from *i*- stems (*gwladoed* < **ɥlateį-es*), also original neuter *s*- stems; see LHEB 350.

N. 2. *car* 'kinsman' comes from **karants*, *carant* CA 27. 670 from **karantes*. By analogy with forms like *deueit* 'sheep' (pl. of *dauat*), a pl. *kereint* BBC 33. 10 was created early in the MW period. A pl. ending *-eint* was deduced from such a form, and was added to form certain plurals: *nei* 'nephew', *neyeynt* AL i. 8, and *nyeint* BD 31. 2; *keivyn* 'third cousin' R 1272. 19, *keywneynt* GMWL 69. By analogy *edneint* 'birds' LlHen 129. 4 was created, formerly *ednein* BT 44. 4, pl. of *ednan* 'bird' LlHen 20. 7, 21. 3.

-ein occurs in OW *enuein* 'names' MC, *cemmein* 'steps' Ox 1, *ruimmein* 'bands' Juv, also *goueyn* 'smiths' AL i. 72, *llyein* 'oaths' YBH 13. 812, *cam lyein* 'false oaths' LlA 158. 2. This *-ein* probably represents original **-an(n)*, with vowel change produced by analogy. The OW form of *enw* 'name' was *anu* MC, and the original pl. form was doubtless **anuan* (Ir. *anman*, see L & P 180). From this form *enuein* was created by analogy (cf. *carant*, *kereint*). Later *-ein* was superseded by the more common ending *-eu*; hence *enw-eu*, also *camm-eu*, *camm ly-eu* R 1201. 29–30. Finally we have a new sing. *enw* 'name', a back formation based on the pl. *enweu*.

N. 3. *gwaew-awr* 'spears' CA 13. 336. This form developed as *gwaewar* WM 182. 16, *gwawar* B ix. 228. 4. By analogy with other pl. formations, the forms *gweywyr*, *gwewyr* ChO 4. 16 were created. We also find *gwaew-yr* YCM 73. 26, where the ending *-yr* is added to the sing. *gwaew*.

N. 4. The pl. of *dwyw* 'god' (< **deiɥos*, Ir. *día*) was *dwyweu*. *dwyw* became *dwy* B ix. 330. 6 (cf. Dyfr*dwy* 'Dee') and the variant *dyw* WM 386. 20 (for *wy* / *yw*, see § 6 n. 4); from these were created the plurals *dwyeu* BD 42. 2, and *dywyeu* Hg MSS ii. 228. 22. Later *dyw* became *duw*, the pl. of which is *duweu* FfBO 34. 13, *duwyeu* B ix. 328. 25.

(*c*) Addition of an ending with vowel change. The following are the vowel changes:

(1) Mutation (see WG 116–20):

y [i] > *y* [ə] (see § 1). *-(į)eu*: *cledyf* 'sword' (also *cledeu* R 1369. 23), *cledyfeu*; *pebyll* 'tent' CA 2. 28, *pebylleu* BR 6. 9 (a new sing.

pabell was formed in ModW, and *pebyll* is now a pl., cf. *castell, kestyll* above). *-(i̯)on*: *medyc* 'physician', *medygon*; *gelyn* 'enemy', *gelynyon*. *-en*: *ych* 'ox', *ychen*; *Pryd-en* 'Picts' CA 19. 475. *-i*: *merthyr* 'martyr', *merthyri*. *-ed*: *ewythyr* 'uncle', *ewythred*; *modryb* 'aunt', *modrybed* (also *modrabed*); *mynyd* 'mountain', *mynyded* (ModW *mynyddoedd*, dial. *mynydde*). *-et*: *pryf* 'insect', *pryuet*. *-awt*: *pysc* 'fish' CA 44. 1114, *pyscawt*. *-awr*: *cledyf* 'sword', *cledyvawr* CA 40. 1012.

w > *y*. *-eu*: *bwrd* 'board', *byrdeu*. *-ed*: *dwfyr* 'water', *dyfred*. *-ot*: *bwch* 'buck', *bychot* BD 113. 10.

aw > *o*. *-(i̯)on*: *daw(f)* 'son-in-law', *douyon* BD 27. 30. *-er* / *-yr*: *brawt* 'brother', *broder*, *brodyr*, see § 32 *d*.

(2) Penultimate affection (see WG 121–2). The endings which cause affection are *-ieu* (rarely), *-ion*, *-ieit*, *-i*, *-yd*.

a > *ei*: *mab* 'son', *meibyon*; *gwas* 'youth', *gweissyon*.

a > *e*: *dar* 'oak', *deri* PKM 83. 23.

ae > *ei*: *maer* 'steward', *meiri* B ii. 28; *saer* 'craftsman', *seiri* WM 189. 23.

ae > *ey*: *caer* 'fort', *keyryd* § 32 *b*; *maes* 'field', *meyssyt* HGCr 47. 112.

aw > *ew*: *cawr* 'giant', *kewri*.

(3) Reversion, with the affected vowel in the sing. The affection in the sing. is the ultimate *i*- affection (see WG 121, 210–12).

ei > *a*. *-eu*: *keinc* 'branch', *cangeu* BD 116. 2 (but *keingyeu* 108. 26); *deigyr* 'tear' CA 27. 673 (sometimes pl., see G 310), *dagreu* (see L & P 108). *-on*: *dreic* 'dragon', *dragon* R 1400. 11 (sing. in BT 32. 25, see G 388); *lleidyr* 'thief', *lladron* (see LHEB 593–4). *-ed*: *adein* 'wing', *adaned*; *gwreic* 'woman, wife', *gwraged* (see L & P 66); *riein* 'maiden', *rianed*.

ei > *ae*. *-on*: *Seis* 'Englishman', *Saeson* (see LHEB 582).

e . . . ei > *a . . . a*. *-ed*: *celein* 'corpse', *calaned*; *elein* 'fawn', *alaned*.

e . . . eu > *a . . . aw* / *af* / *a*. *-on*: *beleu* 'marten, wild beast' LlB 52. 29, *balawon*, *balaon* § 8 *a*; *keneu* 'whelp', *kanawon*, *kynawon*, *kynawan*, *kynavon*, *canaon* §§ 3, 8 *a*, 10. *-ed*: *edeu* 'thread', *adaued* BR 4. 6 (later *edafedd*). *-ot*: *beleu* 'marten', *balaot* CA 44. 1102.

(4) *athro* 'teacher, doctor, cleric', *athrawon, athraon* § 8 *a*; *bugeil* 'shepherd' < **boukoli̯os, bugelyd* < **boukoli̯i̯ī* (ModW *bugeiliaid*); *keluydyt* 'art, craft', *kelvydodeu, keluytodyon* § 32 *b*; *chwaer* 'sister', *chwior-ed, -yd* § 32 *b*; *morwyn* 'maid', *morynyon.*

§ 31. The singulative endings *-yn* (masc.) and *-en* (fem.) are added to plurals and collectives to form singulars. Vowel changes caused by mutation or affection may occur, as in the cases above.

(*a*) *-yn*: *adar* 'birds', *ader-yn* (also *ederyn*), fem. *adar-en*; *blew* 'hair', *blew-yn*; *calaf* 'stalks', *keleu-yn* PKM 59. 13; *cawn* 'stalks, reeds', *con-yn.*

N. *gal* sing. 'enmity, enemy' CA 48. 1222, R 1039. 16 (pl. *gal-on* YBH 10. 614–15), *gel-yn* 'enemy', whence pl. *gelyn-yon*; see G 519.

(*b*) *-en*: *cyll* 'hazel-trees', *coll-en*; *deil* 'leaves', *deil-en* BT 28. 2, *deily-en* SG 46. 17 (also *dalen*, pl. *dalenneu* BBC 101. 5); *derw* 'oak', *derw-en* (also *dar*, pl. *deri* § 30 *c* 2); *llygot* 'mice', *llygod-en* (sing. *llyc* CLlH 17. 41[c]); *llysseu* 'herbs', *llyssew-yn* SG 131. 13, see L & P 109 (later *llysieuyn*); *syr* 'stars' BD 195. 24 (later *ser*), *ser-en*; *tywys* 'ears (of corn)', *tywyss-en* PKM 59. 13.

§ 32. Many nouns in MW have more than one pl. form.

(*a*) One formed by vowel change (§ 30 *a*) and the other by the addition of an ending (§ 30 *b*, *c*).

angel 'angel': *engyl, engylyon* (ModW *angylion*).

assen 'ass, donkey': *essynn* PKM 65. 20, *assennoed* BR 20. 22.

boly 'bag, belly': *byly* Pen 6 = *bolyeu* PKM 42. 17.

bwlch 'breach, gap': *bylch* R 1303. 37, *bylcheu* 1290. 10.

bwrd 'board': *byrd, byrdeu.*

cerd 'craft, song': *kyrd, kerdeu.*

cors 'bog, fen': *kyrs* FfBO 42. 25, *corsyd* R 1033. 31.

dant 'tooth': *deint* LlHen 318. 9 (occasionally sing., see G 296), *danhed* WM 166. 7.

dwfyr 'water': *deifyr* R 1362. 41, *dyfred* 1162. 29 (ModW *dyfroedd*).

gwas 'youth': *gweis, gweissyon.*

llwdyn 'beast': *llydyn* WM 500. 7, *llydnot* PKM 59. 2.

mab 'son': *meib, meibyon, mabyon* WM 456. 26.

mor 'sea': *myr, moroed.*

nant 'stream, valley': *neint* CLlH 2. 9[a], *nanheu* HGCr 12. 48 (ModW *nentydd*).

nerth 'power, force': *nyrth* 'forces' CLlH 49. 5[b], *nerthoed* BD 46. 27.

pall 'tent': *pyll, palleu.*

salym 'psalm': *seilym* BDe 4. 23, *salmeu.*

tat 'father': *teit* LlA 121. 26, *tadeu.*

twrch 'boar': *tyrch* CLlH 45. 90[c], *tyrchot.*

(*b*) Forms with different endings.

auon 'river': *auon-yd* R 1362. 36, *avon-oed* BD 2. 14.

bala(w)-on, -ot § 30 *c* 3.

brenhin 'king': *brenhin-ed* R 1166. 8 (*breenhined* LL 120. 5), *brenhin-oet* (*-oet* ≡ *-oeđ*) BBC 53. 14. (The following forms of the sing. occur: *breyenhin* R 1056. 28, *breenhin* BBC 75. 8, *brenhin* LlB 1. 17 < **brigant-īn-o-s*; L & P 30, LHEB 447–8.)

bwystuil 'beast': *bvystuil-ed* BD 19. 14 (*-et* 49. 28), *bwystuil-eit* RM 183. 24 (= *-et* WM 250. 29).

caer 'fort': *keyr-yd* BD 20. 23, *caer-eu* 73. 19, *kaer-oed* 44. 12.

calon 'bosom, womb, heart': *callonn-eu* LlB 25. 5, *kallonn-oed* LlA 83. 5.

keluydyt 'art, craft': *kelvydod-eu* YCM 167. 18, *keluytod-yon* LlHen 265. 20.

cethr 'nail, spike': *kethr-awr* CA 6. 126, *-eu* R 1146. 16, *-i* 1161. 34, *cethr-on* BT 12. 3.

chwaer 'sister': *chwaeor-ed* BY 60. 4, *chwior-ed* WM 158. 31, *-yd.*

dinas 'city': *diness-yd* FfBO 46. 21, *dinass-oed* 49. 27.

dol 'meadow': *dol-eu* BT 33. 6, *-yd* R 1034. 32.

dreic 'dragon': *drag-on* (also sing., see G 388–9), *dreig-eu* R 1216. 5, *dreig-ioedd* MA 241[a]46.

eglwys 'church': *eglwyss-eu* CLlH 38. 45[a], *-i, -yd.*

forest 'forest': *forest-eu* BD 2. 9, *-yd* 77. 7.

gwlat 'country': *gulad-oed* BD 104. 10, *gwled-yd* RM 91. 25, *-i* YBH 67. 4317.

llew 'lion': *lleu-on* BBC 96. 13, *lle(w)-ot* § 8 *a.*

maer 'steward': *meir-i* § 30 *c* 1, *-yon* AP 1. 18.
oes 'age': *oess-eu* AP 3. 86, *-oed* LlA 103. 22.
saer 'craftsman': *seir-i* § 30 *c* 1, *-on* BT 1. 30.
tir 'land': *tir-ed* BD 63. 14, *-yon* HGCr 37. 2.
tref 'town': *trew-it* (*-it* ≡ *yđ*) BBC 91. 4, *-i* 54. 4.
twr 'tower': *tyr-eu* WM 133. 6, *-oed* 191. 36.

(*c*) A double pl. may be formed by adding a pl. ending to a form already pl.: (1) *blodeu-oed* RB 40. 12, *blode-oed* BD 116. 17 (sing. *blawt* 'bloom' BT 25. 24); *dagreu-oed* 'tears' LlA 71. 21; *llysseu-oed* 'herbs' BD 115. 6; *dieu-oed*, *dynyon-eu*, see *d* below. (2) *-ein(t)* (diminutive): *gweissyon-ein* CLlH 5. 26[c] (*gweissyon* 'youths'), *meibyon-ein* R 584. 32–33 (*meibyon* 'sons'), *gwraged-eint* R 584. 31–32 (*gwraged* 'women').

(*d*) *blwydyn* 'year': *blwydyn-ed* BD 6. 10, *blwynyd-ed* 70. 1; also *blyned*, used with numerals (but sing. in CA 3. 59: *byrr vlyned* adverbially 'for a short year'; cf. also *yr vythuet mlyned* 'the eighth year' BD 203. 28).

brawt 'brother': *brod-er* CLlH 7. 42[b], *brod-yr* BD 111. 9, *brodor-yon* BR 1. 9–10 (in ModW *brodorion* means 'natives', whence the sing. *brodor*); see L & P 177.

corff 'body' (< Lat. *corpus*): *kyrff* R 1309. 14, *corff-eu* 1218. 16, *corff-oed* LlA 140. 13 (also *corfor-ion* BBC 55. 4, *corffor-oed* RM 191. 22, pl. of *corffor* 'body'; see Thomas Jones, B xi. 138).

dyd 'day' (also *diw*, *dyw*, *duw*, adverbially with names of days and feasts): *diw Ynyt* 'Shrove Tuesday' HGCr 77. 1, *duw Sul* 'Sunday' PKM 86. 21, *dyw Ieu* 'Thursday' LlA 130. 5 (*Difyeu* HGCr 77. 11, § 10, ModW *Difiau*): *dieu* (*diheu* YCM 174. 24) with numerals: *tri dieu* 'three days' (ModW *tridiau*); *dieu-oed* R 1298. 5 (*dyewed* BD 3. 15); *dyd-yeu* R 1161. 14.

dyn 'man': *dyn-yon*, *dyned-on* BT 65. 21, *dynyad-on* 47. 6, also *dynyon-eu* R 1303. 18.

§ 33. The Dual. Certain nouns, notably those denoting parts of the body which constitute a pair, have dual forms which contain the numeral 'two': *deulin* 'knees' (*glin*), *deurud* 'cheeks' (*grud*), *dwyuron* 'breasts' (*bron*), *dwyglust* 'ears' (*clust*) BD 15. 29, *dwyffroen* 'nostrils' (*ffroen*) YBH 26. 1675, *dwylaw* 'hands' (*llaw*,

which has no pl. form in W); also *dwylann* 'banks' (*glann*) CLlH 5. 29^{c}.

The forms *ychen* and *broder* could be explained as survivals of the old dual in *deu ychen* 'two oxen' WM 480. 25–26, *deu uroder* 'two brothers' PKM 29. 9 (see WG 194, L & P 177–90), but they may be merely plurals (cf. § 51 *b*).

Traces of old duals with vocalic ending also probably survive in the lenition of the adjective in MW after nouns preceded by the numeral 'two'; see § 22, WG 195.

§ 34. Gender. The neuter has not survived in W: all nouns are either masculine or feminine. Certain nouns (including some originally neuter) vacillate between the two genders. The following are examples of nouns which are fem. in ModW, but which are found as masc. in MW: *breich* 'arm' BD 2. 18 (but fem. in YCM 27. 2), *bryeint* 'privilege' LL 121. 4, *kreuyd* 'religion' LlA 143. 13, *chwedyl* 'story, tale' RM 92. 9, *damwein* 'incident' PKM 21. 10, *dinas* 'city' LlA 44. 19, *ergyt* 'blow' PKM 78. 1, *grud* 'cheek' LlA 93. 17, *gweithret* 'deed' LlB 30. 1, *gwyrth* 'miracle' YCM 173. 11, *sarff* 'serpent' BR 10. 27, *ystyr* 'meaning, reason' PKM 71. 8. The following are masc. in ModW, but occur as fem. in MW: *kygreir* 'truce' BR 20. 24, *gwirioned* 'truth' PKM 21. 7, *lle* 'place' 3. 14 (but masc. BD 124. 28, see PKM 102, YBH cxliv), *llynn* 'lake' PKM 40. 14 (but masc. 89. 26), *llys* 'court' 15. 26, *persson* 'person' LlA 3. 1, *rydit* 'freedom' RB 83. 28. The noun *breidwyt*, *breudwyt* 'dream' is of vacillating gender in both MW and ModW; see G 76.

The gender of some nouns varies according to the sex of the individual referred to, e.g. *dyn* 'man / woman', *wyr* 'grandchild', fem. in the following examples: *nyt oes . . . dyn uwy y galar no hi* 'there is not a person who feels more grief than she' PKM 26. 23, *Ac ŵyr i haul awyr yw* 'And a granddaughter to the sky's sun is (she)' GDG 137. 28. Later the fem. *dynes* and *wyres* were created.

A fem. may be formed from a masc. noun by the addition of *-es*: *amherawdyr* 'emperor', *amherodr-es* WM 162. 12; *arglwyd* 'lord', *arglwyd-es* PKM 8. 1; *dwyw*, &c., 'god' (see § 30 *b* n. 4), *dvyw-es* BD 33. 8, *dwy-es* 26. 2; *iarll* 'earl', *iarll-es* WM 254. 5–6;

marchawc 'knight', *marchog-es* PKM 11. 26; *sant* 'saint', *sant-es* BDe 9. 9.

THE ADJECTIVE

§ 35. Number. Many adjectives have pl. forms. The pl. of the adjective is formed as follows:

(*a*) Internal vowel change, *a* > *ei*: *ieuanc*, 'young' *ieueinc*; *bychan* 'small', *bychein*; *marw* 'dead', *meirw*. *ae* > *ei*: *caeth* 'captive', *keith* BD 17. 28. *a . . . a* > *e . . . y* / *ei*: *cadarn* 'strong', *kedyrn* (also *kedeirn*). *a . . . e* > *e . . . y*: *llawen* 'happy', ? *llewyn* CA 4. 93, see note p. 97.

(*b*) The addition of -(*i*)*on* to the sing.: *budr-on* 'dirty', *coch-yon* 'red', *ku-on* 'dear', *etholedig-yon* 'chosen, elect', *gwelw-on* 'pale', *hir-yon* 'long' AP 5. 147, BD 91. 9, *hen-yon* 'old' 106. 19, *mut-yon* 'dumb'.

(*c*) The addition of -(*i*)*on* with vowel change.

(1) Mutation, *aw* > *o*: *creulawn* 'cruel', *creulon-yon* BD 16. 20; *estrawn* 'foreign', *estron-yon* 65. 16; *mawr* 'great, big', *mor-yon* BT 45. 2 (rare). *w* > *y*: *trwm* 'heavy', *trym-yon*.

(2) Affection, *a* > *ei*: *glan* 'clean, pure', *glein-yon* BD 68. 7; *glas* 'blue, green, grey', *gleiss-yon*.

Some adjectives have more than one pl. form, *cadarn* 'strong': *kedyrn* (*kedeirn*), *cadarn-yon* BD 83. 1; *truan* 'wretched, miserable': *truein*, *trueinn-yon* BD 83. 22.

There are many adjectives with no pl. forms, e.g. *bach* 'small', *da* 'good', *gwir* 'true', *hawd* 'easy', *mat* 'good'; forms in *-adwy*, *-eit*, *-eid*, *-in*, *-lyt*: *moladwy* 'praiseworthy', *eureit* 'golden', *karueid* 'lovable, loving', *lletrin* 'leathern' BT 9. 21, *llychlyt* 'dusty'.

N. *daoed* occurs as the pl. of *da*, but it always has the force of a noun = 'goods' YCM 133. 13; also *deon* 'nobles' WM 459. 2, OW *degion* St. Chad.

§ 36. The forms in -(*i*)*on* frequently serve as nouns; usually they denote classes of people: *y bonhedigyon* 'the gentry' (*bonhedic*), *y cleifyon* 'the sick' (*claf*), *y deillyon* 'the blind' (*dall*), *y tlodyon* 'the poor' (*tlawd*). The ending -(*i*)*eit* is also used with this meaning, as in *y gweinyeit* 'the weak' (*gwan*).

Some superlatives have pl. forms which serve as nouns: *kyfnesseifeit* 'kinsmen' LlB 90. 19 (*kyfnessaf* '*cognato*' BD 185. 27); *eithauoed* 'limits' WM 224. 36 (*eithaf* 'end, limit'); *hyneif* 'elders, chiefs' RB 404. 2, BDe 21. 9, *hynafyeid* BY 31. 26 (*hynaf* 'chief' CLlH 36. 30[b]).

§ 37. Concord. A pl. or sing. form of the adjective may occur with a pl. noun. Plural: *gueisson ieueinc* 'chamberlains' PKM 4. 8, *wyn bychein* 'little lambs' B ii. 16. 2, *y rei meirv* 'the dead ones' BD 205. 2, *dy duyveu mud a bydeir* 'thy gods dumb and deaf' B ix. 332. 17, *henyon amseroed* 'old times' BD 106. 19. Singular: *y rey marv* 'the dead ones' BD 10. 1, *a chadarn leoed enys Prydein* 'and the strongholds of the island of Britain' 100. 6, *ych cam duwyeu chwi, bydar a mutyon* 'your false gods, deaf and dumb' B ix. 328. 25, *kwysseu llydan* 'wide furrows' ii. 12. 22, *gveithredoed drwc* 'evil deeds' x. 23. 6, *eu hen pechodeu* 'their old sins' BD 83. 28.

Predicatively: *bychein ynt wynteu* 'they are small' RM 60. 20, *neu wynteu a veynt veirw* 'or they would be dead' SG 138. 13, *marw vydant* 'they will be dead' Hg MSS ii. 34. 28.

N. In MW (but not in late ModW) a pl. form of the adjective may be used with a noun preceded by a numeral: *Pedeir meillonen gwynnyon* 'Four white trefoils' WM 476. 15.

§ 38. Gender. Some adjectives (mostly monosyllables) containing *y* or *w* have feminine forms. In the fem. *y* and *w* are affected to *e* and *o* respectively.

y > *e*: *byrr* 'short', *berr*; *cryc* 'hoarse', *crec* R 1274. 4; *gwynn* 'white', *gwenn*.

w > *o*: *brwnt* 'dirty', *bront*; *bwlch* 'gapped, cut' R 1391. 31, *bolch* BT 39. 18; *crwm* 'bent', *crom*; *crwn* 'round', *cron*; *trwm* 'heavy', *trom*; *twll* 'perforated' WM 133. 31, *toll* CLlH 6. 38[b]. In the penult of a disyllabic word: *kwtta* 'short, abrupt', *kotta* R 1362. 17.

When an adjective has a fem. form, the latter is usually used with a fem. noun: *morwyn benngrech* 'a curly-haired maiden' RM 232. 12 (but *morwyn bengrych* WM 165. 35–36), *un ohonunt oed amdrom* 'one of them was pregnant' PKM 60. 26–27, but *Llym awel* 'Keen is the wind' CLlH 27. 1[a].

N. The fem. forms derive originally from fem. adjectives in *-ā* in Brit. The masc. (and neut.) forms of such adjectives had *-o-* stems: **ɣind-o-s*, **ɣindā* > *gwynn*, *gwenn*; **trumb-o-s*, **trumbā* > *trwmm*, *tromm*. This change is known as the ultimate *ā*- affection (see LHEB 578, where it is dated in the first half or middle of the fifth century).

brith 'mixed, speckled', and the fem. *breith* CA 44. 1101 also derive from old *-o-* and *-ā* stems: *brith* < **briχt-o-s*, *breith* < **breχtā* < **briχtā*; see L & P 42, 65, 111, LHEB 404–11.

§ 39. Position. (*a*) The attributive adjective normally follows its noun: *dyn doeth* 'a wise man', *gwreic dec* 'a fair woman'. On lenition of the initial of the adjective in this position, see § 22.

(*b*) It may precede the noun, thus forming a proper compound, close or loose, with it, in which case the initial consonant of the noun is lenited (see § 20): *crinwyd* 'withered trees' R 1418. 3, *llawen chwedyl* 'glad tidings' PKM 26. 18–19.

N. This is the normal position for some adjectives, such as *prif* 'chief', *hen* 'old', &c.; see WG 261–2.

(*c*) The order adjective + *a* 'of' + noun is also found: *tru a dynghetven* 'a wretched fate' CA 6. 136, *maur a teith* 'a long journey' YMTh 57. 11, *bychan a dial* 'small vengeance' PKM 20. 13, *Da a dwy ynys* 'Two good islands' 45. 17, *drwc a gedymdeith* 'a bad comrade' 56. 27, *bychan a beth* 'a small thing' 78. 27, *truan a beth* 'a pitiful thing' YBH 5. 262, *dewr a was* 'a brave lad' 8. 488, *dyhed a beth* 'a shameful thing' WM 458. 19, *Mawr a gewilyd* 'Great shame' YCM 21. 24.

N. The expression adjective + *a* + *peth* 'thing' (§ 104) may serve as an adverb, thus: *Ys glut a beth yd ymdidanyssam ni* 'Continually have we conversed' PKM 7. 16–17, *mawr a beth y'th garaf* 'greatly do I love thee' YBH 47. 3034–5, see note p. clxiii.

§ 40. A noun may follow an adjective, modifying its meaning. The noun is preceded by a prefixed personal pronoun, which refers back to the noun or pronoun qualified by the adjective: *diruawr eu meint* 'huge in size' B x. 58. 11, *bychan y gorff* 'small in body' ii. 23. 13, *da eu diodef* 'good in suffering', i.e. 'long-suffering' BDe 23. 4, *gwr wrdach y gyghor noc ef* 'a man more mighty in counsel than he' BR 20. 12–13.

The noun may be governed by the preposition *o* (§ 231), in

which case no personal pronoun is used: *ffydlawn o gallon a gweithret* 'faithful in heart and deed' B ii. 21. 1, *iach o vedwl* 'sound in mind, sane' vii. 375. 12, *diweir oed hi o vedwl a gweithret* 'chaste was she in mind and deed' BDe 3. 6.

COMPARISON

§ 41. The adjective in Welsh has three degrees of comparison, viz. the equative, comparative, and superlative. These are formed from the positive as follows:

(*a*) EQUATIVE. (1) *-(h)et* is added to the positive: *brass-et* (*bras* 'thick') RM 155. 3, *coch-et* (*coch* 'red') PKM 1. 24, *truan-et* (*truan* 'wretched') BR 6. 28.

(2) *mor* is placed before the positive: *mor uawr* (*mawr* 'great, big'), *mor llawn* (*llawn* 'full').

N. *mor* may represent an unaccented and weakened form of *mawr* 'big', see WG 253; but cf. the Irish equative *móir*, see GOI 237.

(3) Some equatives are formed by prefixing *ky(f)-*, *kym-* to nouns, thus: *kyfliw* (*lliw*) 'of the same colour' R 1027. 13, *kyuurd* (*urd*) 'of the same rank', *kymoned* (*boned*) 'of the same nobility' PKM 61. 3, *kyfoet* (*oet*) 'of the same age' LlB 62. 7, *kyfryw* (*ryw*) 'of the same kind, such', *kyhyt* (*hyt*) 'of the same length, as long', *kyflet* (*llet*) 'of the same width, as wide', *kymeint* (*meint*) 'of the same size, as great', *kyniuer* (*niuer*) 'of the same number, as many'. Occasionally *go-* is found with these forms: *gogyuoet* (*kyuoet*) B v. 198. 5, *gogymeint* (*kymeint*) 197. 9, *gogyfurd* (*kyfurd*) 208. 3.

(*b*) COMPARATIVE. *-ach* is added to the positive: *cass-ach* (*cas* 'hateful') RM 268. 29, *clotuor-ach* (*clotuawr* 'famous') BD 177. 5, *gverthuor-ach* (*gwerthuawr* 'valuable') 12. 1 (but *gwerth-uawrog-ach* in RB 50. 16, ModW *gwerthfawrocach*), *teilyg-ach* (*teilwng* 'worthy') LlB 71. 27.

(*c*) SUPERLATIVE. *-(h)af* is added to the positive: *cass-af* R 1360. 26, *gwerthuor-af* 1195. 25, *teilyg-af* LlB 72. 3.

N. 1. It will be noticed from some of the above examples that mutable vowels in the positive are mutated in the compared forms, thus *aw* > *o*: *gwerthuawr* > *gwerthuor-*; *w* > *y*: *teilwng* > *teilyng-*; also *y* [i] > *y* [ə]: *llym* 'sharp, keen' > [λəm-].

N. 2. *-h-* originally belonged to the endings of the equative and superlative, and it is sometimes written in MW: *cadarn-het* (*cadarn* 'strong') BD 197. 6, *tew-het* (*tew* 'fat') LlB 69. 5, *cadarn-haf* BD 18. 17, *dewr-haf* (*dewr* 'brave') 4. 19. It causes unvoicing of *-b*, *-d*, *-g*: *caletet* (ModW *caled* 'hard') BD 46. 17, *caletaf* 185. 13, *carediccet* (ModW *caredig* 'beloved, kind') 193. 11, *gwaredoccaf* (ModW *gwareddog* 'gentle, humble') 123. 17; the same development occurs when these consonants are followed by a sonant: *gwytnaf* (*gwydn* 'tough'), *hytret* (*hydyr* 'strong, brave' WM 259. 24) SG 72. 38, *hyttraf* WM 398. 23.

The comparative ending *-ach* did not contain *-h-*, and consequently *-b*, *-d*, *-g* remained unaffected: *gnod-ach* (ModW *gnawd* 'customary') CLlH 40. 55[b], *hyvryd-ach* (ModW *hyfryd* 'pleasant') BD 12. 16, *kyuoethog-ach* (ModW *cyfoethog* 'rich') WM 430. 32, *tebyg-ach* (ModW *tebyg* 'like, likely') PKM 34. 1, *teg-ach* (ModW *teg* 'fair') 59. 5. By the ModW period unvoicing has spread to the comparative by analogy with equative and superlative forms.

N. 3. A few fem. compared forms occur: *dofynet* (*dofyn*, fem. of *dwfyn* 'deep') R 1276. 24, *gwen(n)ach* (*gwenn*, fem. of *gwynn* 'white') RB 60. 31 = *gvynnach* BD 22. 11, *tromhaf* (*trom*, fem. of *trwm* 'heavy') PKM 68. 10. However, the endings are generally added to masc. forms, even when the noun which the adjective qualifies is fem.: *dissymlaf gwreic* 'the most unaffected woman' PKM 4. 21 (= *disemylaf gwreic* RM 4. 17).

N. 4. Endings of comparison are added to some nouns: *amserach* (*amser* 'time') PKM 7. 3, *bawhet* (*baw* 'dirt') BR 7. 1, *bawaf* R 1278. 35, *blaenaf* (*blaen* 'front, point') 1367. 35, *dewissach* (*dewis* 'choice') LlHen 11. 15, *dewissaf* R 1195. 22–23, *diwethaf* (*diwed* 'end', *-d h-* > *-th-*) PKM 60. 26 (*diwaethaf* BY 46. 5), *gurhaw* (*gwr* 'man') HGCr 8. 5, *henaduraf* (*henadur* 'elder') YCM 114. 11, *llessach* (*lles* 'benefit, profit') PKM 12. 9, *pennach* (*penn* 'head, top') LlA 89. 16, *penhaf* PKM 38. 25, *porthach* (*porth* 'help') BD 5. 9, *reidyach* (*reit* 'need') R 1249. 9, *reittaf* 1148. 27.

The forms *cyfoethach*, *kwaethach*, *chwaethach* occur as comparatives of *kyuoeth*, *kywaeth* 'property, power' (cf. §§ 8 *a*, 10). They are used adverbially with such meanings as 'all the more so, not to mention, let alone', &c.: *Pwy bynnac . . . a volesto Cesar, ef a haed y dienydyu, yg kyuoethach a volesto yn erbyn Duv* 'Whosoever offend Caesar deserves to be executed, all the more so he who offend against God' B xiv. 260. 6–7, *yny oed ryued, bei trewit ar dur, na bei yssic, yg kwaethach ai kic neu ascwrn* 'so that it would be a marvel were it struck upon iron that it were not broken, not to mention flesh or bone' BR 8. 2–4, *mal yd oed aruthur y vilwr . . . edrych yn wyneb y llewpart anghwaethach yn wyneb y milwr* 'so that it was dreadful for a warrior to look on the face of the leopard, let alone on the face of the warrior' 16. 1–3, *Meuyl im . . . na digrifwch, nac ymdidan, nac ymchwelut ohonot dy wyneb attaf i, yn chwaethach a uei uwy no hynny o'r bu y rom ni* 'Shame on me, if there has been between us either delight or converse, or if thou hast turned thy

face towards me, not to mention anything that would be more than that' PKM 7. 17–21, *heb wybot keuei y'th wreic yg chvaethach y ereill* 'without even thy wife knowing, not to mention others' B x. 29. 5.

Of similar meaning is *anoethach*, comparative of *anoeth* 'strange, difficult': *yn hyt y oes ny flygwys konyn dan y draet. anoethach torri* 'throughout his life a reed did not bend under his feet, let alone break' WM 463. 31, *kygwn vn ascwrn yndaw na mynwes vn ewin anoethach lle a wei uwy no hwnnw* 'not one bone-joint of his nor the middle of a single nail, not to mention a part that might be greater than that' 182. 22–25 (= *yg kyuoethach* WM 91b 26 [Pen 16], *yghwaethach* RM 85. 10).

N. 5. Some superlatives are formed from prepositions: *eithaf* 'uttermost' < **ek-tamo-* (*ech* § 214); *gwarthaf* 'summit' < **ŭor-tamo* (OW *guor, guar*, M and ModW *ar* 'on').

§ 42. Irregular Comparisons. The following adjectives preserved older formations which resisted analogic levelling. Many of their compared forms are therefore irregular in MW (and in ModW):

Positive	Equative	Comparative	Superlative
agos 'near'	*nesset*	*nes*	*nessaf*
bychan 'small'	*bychanet*		
llaw 'small' PKM 77. 20		*llei* *llawach* B ii. 35. 14	*lleiaf*
kynnar 'early'		*kynt*	*kyntaf*
da 'good'	*dahet* BD 44. 1	*gwell*	*goreu*
	daet R 1368. 4		*goreuhaf* BT 65. 8
	kynna R 1403. 20		*goreuaf* LlA 49. 23
	kystadyl LlHen 306. 20		
	kystal		
drwc 'bad'	*drycket* WM 227. 28	*gwaeth*	*gwaethaf*
	kyndrwc R 1357. 44		
hawd 'easy'	*hawsset*	*haws*	*hawssaf*
	hawdet RB 116. 1		
hen 'old'		*hyn*	*hynaf*
hir 'long'	*kyhyt*	*hwy*	*hwyaf*

Positive	Equative	Comparative	Superlative
ieuanc 'young'	*ieuanghet* BR 20. 10	*ieu* *jeuanghach* SG 66. 6	*ieu(h)af*
issel 'low'	*isset*	*is*	*issaf*
llydan 'wide'	*kyflet*	*llet*	*lletaf*
mawr 'great, big' (Ir. *trén* 'strong', GOI 235)	*kymeint*	*moe* / *mwy* *trech*	*mwy(h)af* *trechaf*
uchel 'high'	*kyvuch* *vchet*	*uch*	*uchaf*

SYNTAX OF THE COMPARED FORMS

§ 43. EQUATIVE. In a simple comparison the equative is followed by *a(c)* 'as'; forms in *-(h)et* are preceded by *ky(n)*: *kyn uelynet a blodeu y banadyl* 'as yellow as the flowers of the broom' BR 5. 25, *ky uelynet oed a'r eur* 'it was as yellow as gold' PKM 23. 17, *morwyn gystal a honno* 'a maiden as good as she' 33. 2, *gueithret mor dybryt a hunnv* 'an act as vile as that' B ix. 145. 27, *na bydy gyuoet ti a rei o wyr y wlat honn* 'that thou art not of the same age as some of the men of this country' PKM 19. 22–23. *ac* after the equative may be followed by a relative clause; see § 77 *d*.

§ 44. When the equative is followed by a clause expressing result, this may be introduced as follows, *ac y(d)*: *a oes neb mor deilwng ac y gallo pregethu y'r niuer hwnn yma* 'whether there is any one so worthy that he can preach to this multitude here' BDe 13. 20; *ac na(t)*: *kemeint a oed endav o agarwed . . . ac nat arbedei er eiryaul nep* 'there was in him so much severity that he would not spare at anyone's entreaty' B ix. 146. 12–13; *yny* (§ 278): *Ac yna y bu gyn galetet y vrvydyr yny oed y tywarcheu yn redec o'r guaet* 'And then the battle was so hard that the sods were flowing with the blood' BD 46. 17; *ac yny*: *a*

chymeint uu y dyrnavt ac yny glynvys y cledyf yn y taryan 'and so great was the blow that the sword stuck in the shield' 46. 30; *hyt pan* (§ 269 *b*): *A chymeint uu yr aerua . . . hyt pan oed y rei byv yn ynuydu* 'And so great was the slaughter that those who were alive were losing their reason' 185. 1; *hyt na*: *kynn vfydet yd aey hi hyt na wrthwynnebey hi cadw deueit y mamaeth* 'so humble would she become that she would not object to guarding the sheep of her foster-mother' B ix. 326. 4; *megys y(d)*: *kymeint uu y kynnuryf . . . megys y tebygvt . . . eu bot wedy eu kyflenwi o glevder* 'so great was the commotion that it was thought they had been filled with courage' BD 82. 31; *ac megys y(d)*: *y bu gymeint kedymdeithyas . . . y rygthunt ac megys yd oed pop peth yn gyffredin y rygthunt* 'there was so much friendship between them that they held everything in common' 192. 26.

§ 45. Equative adjectives may be used as nouns, usually with a dependent noun or pronoun. These forms differ from ordinary nouns in that they seem to contain an affective element, often indicating surprise or admiration: *ual y llathrei wynnet y cwn, y llathrei cochet y clusteu* 'as the exceeding whiteness of the dogs glittered, so glittered the exceeding redness of their ears' PKM 1. 23–24, *bot yn athrist gan yr unben uychanet a gawssei o iawn am y gam* 'that the chieftain was heavy-hearted because of the smallness of the reparation he had received for the wrong done him' 34. 12, *na welsei eiryoed wreic digonach y theket a'y thelediwet no hi* 'that he had never seen a lady more adequate in beauty and comeliness than she' 50. 17–18, *Gorawenu a wnaeth ynteu wrth decket yr eur, a dahet gueith y cawc* 'Delighted was he with the great beauty of the gold, and the excellence of the workmanship of the bowl' 56. 14.

The following prepositions are used with the equative: *yr* 'in spite of', with concessive meaning: *mal yd oed aruthur y vilwr, yr kadarnet vei y gallon, edrych yn wyneb y llewpart* 'so that it was dreadful for a warrior, however stout his heart might be, to look on the face of the leopard' BR 16. 1–2, *ef a dybygei yr araued y kerdei y uarch yr ymordiwedei a hi* 'he thought that despite the fact his horse walked so leisurely he would overtake her' PKM 11. 1;

rac 'on account of, because of', with causal meaning: *nyt oed haws disgwyl arnei hi rac y thecket* 'no easier would it be to look on her because of her exceeding beauty' RM 84. 22; also *can* (§ 208): *a chan y gwanhet hi, ny allwys leuein* 'and because of her exceeding weakness, she could not cry' YBH 49. 3139–40. In ModW *can* has superseded *rac* in this construction.

N. 1. *mor* commonly occurs with the positive form of the adjective as an exclamative, thus: *Mor truan genhyf mor truan | a deryv* 'How sad to me, how sad (is) what has happened!' YMTh 57. 1–2. With the copula we have the order *mor* + copula + adjective in early poetry: *mor wyt da* 'how good art thou!' HGCr 22. 17, *mor yw gwann heno* 'so weak is she tonight!' CLlH 40. 58[a]; but later the order *mor* + adjective + copula prevails: *mor dost yw* 'so painful is it!' WM 477. 35, *mor dyrys yw* 'so tangled is it!' RM 120. 27–28.

N. 2. *mor* is found also with a noun: OW *mor liaus* gl. *quam multos*, MW *mor eisseu* 'how necessary' R 1428. 33, *mor elyn* 'so hostile' GDG 162. 2.

§ 46. COMPARATIVE. An adjective in the comparative is followed by *no(c)* 'than': *y neb a vei uch noc ef* 'the one who would be above him', *mwy a wneuthum i no thydi* 'more did I do than thou'; *nogyt*: *perach ac arafach nogyt y rei ereill* 'sweeter and gentler than the others' LlA 101. 7, *iawnach yw idaw dy gynnhal nogyt y mi* 'more fitting is it for him to maintain thee than for me' PKM 26. 28, *Ny byd gwaeth itt* (ms. *in*) *yno noc et y Arthur yn y llys* 'It will not be worse for thee there than for Arthur in the court' WM 456. 28–29.

In MW the comparative forms are more usually predicative than attributive; the adjective serves as nominal predicate in a subject relative clause (§ 65): *kywilid a uei uwy* 'greater shame' (lit. 'shame that would be greater'), *iawn a uei uwy* 'greater reparation' PKM 34. 2, *attep a uo gwell* 'a better answer' 41. 22–23. Later the unaccented copula (*a uei*, &c.) was lost, but the lenition caused by it was preserved in interrogative and negative sentences: *a dyvu o Vrython wr | well no Chynon* 'did there come from the British a better man than Cynon?' CA 8. 200, *ny weleis ansyberwyt uwy ar wr* 'I have not seen greater discourtesy in any man' PKM 2. 14, *Ny wydwn i varch gynt* 'I did not know of a fleeter horse' 10. 8, *na welsynt eiryoet llongeu gyweirach eu hansawd* 'that they had

never seen ships in fairer trim' 30. 1, *ny welsei dyn wenith degach* 'man had not seen finer wheat' 59. 23–24.

N. 1. *no(c)* is frequently dropped after *bellach* 'farther': *nac ewch bellach hynny* 'go no farther than that' PKM 25. 13, *Ac nys gadws e wyry bellach henne* 'And the Virgin did not allow him (to go) farther than that' B x. 28. 5, *nyt oes oet bellach auory* 'there is no respite beyond tomorrow' WM 135. 28. Here *bellach* comes near to being a preposition. On the other hand *no(c)* is sometimes used with it: *cany allassey y dwyn bellach no hynny* 'for he had not been able to bring him farther than that' BD 9. 10, *o cheffir yn bellach no hynny* 'if he be found farther than that' LlB 23. 9, *anoethach a uei bellach no hynny* 'not to mention what would be farther than that' WM 463. 20.

N. 2. *amgen* 'other, different' (see L & P 225–6). It is comparative in meaning, and is followed by *no(c)*: *pa amgen uedwl yssyd yndaw ef heno noc ar a uu yr blwydyn y heno* 'what different thought is there in him to-night from what has been since a year from to-night' PKM 7. 9–10, *Or byd amgen no hynny* 'If it shall be other than that' B vii. 373. 16. Other prepositions sometimes occur with it, *y* 'to': *yn amgen y hynny* 'differently from that' BD 141. 7; *a(c)*: *amgen weledigaeth a honno* 'a different vision from that' B ix. 336. 15. Later, a comparative *amgenach* was formed: SG 200. 28.

nyt amgen 'not otherwise, namely': *dy gytdisgybyl, nyt amgen, Scuthyn* 'thy fellow-pupil, namely, Sguthyn' BDe 11. 3.

N. 3. *kyn* 'before' is a preposition, but in certain cases its construction is that of a comparative adjective, cf. Lat. *antequam*. In MW it is regularly followed by *no(c)* before a personal and a demonstrative pronoun: *kyn noc ef* 'before him', *kyn no hynny* 'before that'. Before a noun or verbal noun *no(c)* is not used: *kyn glasved* 'before fresh mead' CA 42. 1053, *kyn dyuot / e dyd* 'before his day came' 13. 329, except where the noun or verbal noun is preceded by a possessive pronoun: *kyn no'e angheu* 'before his death' CA 11. 265, *kynn no'e eni* 'before he was born' B v. 202. 22. Later, however, *no(c)* was omitted even before a possessive pronoun, which then assumed the prefixed instead of the infixed form: *kynn y amser* 'before its time' B v. 210. 35, *kyn y llyngku* 'before she was devoured' x. 55. 32.

§ 47. SUPERLATIVE. The superlative or the noun which it qualifies usually has the article: *y goreu* 'the best', *y trywyr diwethaf* 'the last three men' BR 18. 26.

The article is not used when the superlative form serves merely to heighten the meaning of the adjective, rather than indicate a degree of comparison: *nebun eglurhaf* 'someone most radiant' B x. 27. 26, *gan uwyaf anryded* 'with very high honour' ix. 148. 33.

When a degree of comparison is expressed, the preposition *o* 'of' is used with the superlative: *Oed Gwen goreu onadu* 'Gwen was the best of them' CLlH 4. 24[c], *yr oes diwethaf o oessoed y byt hvnn* 'the last of the ages of this world' B v. 200. 17; *ar* (rare): *mwyhaf ar keyryt y byt* 'the greatest of the forts of the world' WM 472. 11 (= *teckaf o geyryd y byt* 'the fairest of the forts of the world' RM 114. 24–25).

THE NUMERALS

§ 48. CARDINALS. 1. *un*, 2. masc. *deu*, fem. *dwy*, 3. masc. *tri*, fem. *teir*, 4. masc. *pedwar*, fem. *pedeir*, 5. *pym(p)*, *pum(p)*, 6. *chwe(ch)*, 7. *seith*, 8. *wyth* (also *oeth* § 6 n. 4), 9. *naw*, 10. *dec*, 20. *ugein(t)*, 100. *can(t)*, 1,000. *mil*.

N. 1. The forms *pym* / *pum*, *cann* are used before a noun: *pym mil* 'five thousand' B ix. 333. 1, *pum mil* x. 57. 20, *kann piler* 'a hundred pillars' v. 211. 21; but *pymp* / *pump*, *cant* are also found in this position in MW: *pymp rann* 'five parts' PKM 48. 8, *pvmp kenedyl* 'five nations' BD 2. 27, *cant heit* 'a hundred hosts' CLlH 16. 33[b], *cant pagan* 'a hundred pagans' YBH 17. 1109.

N. 2. Both *chwech* and *chwe* occur before a noun in MW: *whech troetued* 'six feet', *whech milltir* 'six miles' B ii. 11. 17, 18, *chwe blyned* 'six years' BY 47. 20, *chwe diwyrnawt* 'six days' R 1368. 41. On *whech*, *hwech* see § 14.

N. 3. As well as *dec* (also *deudec*, &c.), the form *deng* occurs before *m-* and *n-*: *deng mlyned* 'ten years', *deng nieu* 'ten days'.

N. 4. The form *pedry-* (for *pedwar* / *pedeir* 'four') occurs in compounds: *pedryollt* 'split in four' CA 4. 95.

§ 49. The numerals 11 to 19 consist of combinations of the units and *dec*, but they are not all of the same formation. For 12 and 15 the forms are *deudec* and *pymthec*; there are also some other early examples of the same formation, e.g. *undec* for 11 (LlHen 165. 17), *pedwardeg*, *pedeir deg* for 14 (CLlH 43. 79[c], PKM 38. 21), OW *naunec* for 19 (*naunecant* 'a cycle of 19 years' Comp). These forms represent the original formation for the numerals 11 to 19 (cf. Lat. *duodecim*), but in Welsh this formation persisted only in the forms *deudec* and *pymthec*. For the others, new formations were created. For 11, 13, 14 we have the combination of unit + *ar*

'on' + *dec*: *un ar dec, tri / teir ar dec, pedwar / pedeir ar dec.* The forms for 16, 17, 19 were based on *pymthec* 'fifteen', thus: *un ar bymthec, deu / dwy ar bymthec, pedwar / pedeir ar bymthec.* Another method of calculating, that of multiplication, was adopted for 18 which is *deunaw* (2 × 9); see Henry Lewis, B v. 93–96.

§ 50. To denote the numerals from 20 to 40, 1, 2, &c., are placed with *ar* before *ugein(t)* (in the form *hugein(t)*): *un ar hugein(t)* 21, *dec ar hugein(t)* 30 (OW *trimuceint*), *pymthec ar hugein(t)* 35. The numerals 40, 60, 80, also 120, 140, 160, 180 are denoted by multiples of *ugein(t)*: *deu ugein(t)*, *deugein(t)* 40; *tri ugein(t)*, *trugein(t)* 60; *pedwar ugein(t)* 80; *chwe ugein(t)* 120; *seith ugein(t)* 140; *wyth ugein(t)* 160; *naw ugein(t)* 180. Between the 'twenties', the lesser number and 40, 60, 80, &c., are connected by *a(c)* 'and', thus: *un a deu ugein(t) / deu ugein(t) ac un* 41, *dec a deugein(t)* 50 (*pymwnt* CA 2. 49), *dec a phedwar ugein(t)* 90.

The hundreds are denoted by multiples: *deucant* 200, *trychant* 300 CA 3. 70; likewise the thousands: *dwy vil* 2,000. To denote the numerals between the hundreds, the hundred and the lesser number are connected by *a(c)*: *cant ac un* 101, *deng wyr a thrugeint a phetwar cannvr* '470 men' BD 149. 17, *chue guyr a thri ugeint a chuechant a chue mil* '6,666 men' 184. 16.

§ 51. The numerals may be used as substantives or as adjectives.

(*a*) As substantives: *y pedwar hynny* 'those four'. A definite pl. noun governed by the preposition *o* 'of' may follow the numeral as a partitive genitive: *deudec o'r kwysseu* 'twelve of the furrows' B ii. 11. 18–19. The pl. noun governed by the preposition may be indefinite, in which case the combination has the meaning of numeral + noun: *tri o wyr* 'three men'. This is the normal construction with *mil* '1,000': *pym mil o wyr* '5,000 men' B ix. 333. 1, *teir mil o vonhedigyon* '3,000 noblemen' v. 209. 34. *Mil* is a fem. noun, and a pl. noun which immediately follows it in a genitival relationship is lenited; see § 20.

(*b*) As adjectives: *deu wr* 'two men'. Composite numbers take the noun after the first element: *teir llong ar dec* 'thirteen ships' PKM 37. 7–8. When two numerals connected by *a(c)* 'and' or *neu* 'or' depend on the same noun, the noun follows the first:

a their gweith a phedeir 'three and four times' B x. 28. 6. The numeral may form a close compound with the noun: *unben* (*un* + *pen*) 'chief', *trywyr* 'three men', *cannweith* 'a hundred times' (see § 20); *pythewnos* 'a fortnight' is an example of such a formation, see WS 63.

A sing. noun generally follows the numeral: *tri diwyrnavt* 'three days' B ix. 339. 28, *pymp rann Iwerdon* 'the five parts of Ireland' PKM 48. 8, *seith marchawc* 'seven knights' 39. 26. In ModW the noun is almost always sing., but in MW many examples of a pl. noun occur (see L & P 190): *tri emys* 'three steeds' B v. 213. 37, *teir chwiored* 'three sisters' WM 158. 31, *pedeir gwraged* 'four women' BY 17. 3, *pump wraged* 'five women' PKM 48. 2, *chue guyr* 'six men' BD 184. 14, *hwech wraged* 'six women' PKM 20. 7, *seith meirch* 'seven horses' 63. 23–24, *naw tei* 'nine houses' LlB 122. 27, *deguyr* 'ten men' PKM 69. 3, *deudec ebystyl* 'twelve apostles' B v. 207. 38, *vgein ychen* 'twenty oxen' v. 214. 8, *deng mroder a thrugeint* 'seventy brothers' BY 21. 2.

Some nouns have pl. forms (mostly survivals of the older pl. forms) which are used almost exclusively with numerals; such nouns are *biw* 'cow' (*bu*), *blwydyn* 'year' (*blyned*), *dyd* 'day' (*dieu*), *gwas* 'youth' (*gweis*), *llwdyn* 'beast' (*llydyn*), *mab* 'son' (*meib*): *can mu* 'a hundred kine' LlB 3. 17, *seith mlyned* 'seven years' R 584. 3, *deugein niev* 'forty days' LlA 20. 21, *tri gweis* 'three servants' WM 501. 38, *deunaw weis o weisson culyon cochyon* 'eighteen lean red-headed youths' 133. 19 (note the two forms *gweis*, *gweisson*), *seith lydyn moch* 'seven young pigs' 500. 7, *Seith meib* 'Seven sons' YMTh 58. 29, *Pedwar meib ar hugeint* 'Twenty-four sons' CLlH 4–5. On *deu uroder*, *deu ychen*, see § 33.

N. Numerals may be used adverbially with adjectives to denote measure or extent, thus: *deu dyblic* 'twofold', *tri dyblic* 'threefold' (see note, PKM 116), *deu well* 'twice as good' R 1271. 28, *yn gant eglurach* 'a hundred times as bright' SG 10. 4.

§ 52. ORDINALS. 1. *kyntaf*, 2. *eil*, 3. masc. *trydy(d)*, fem. *tryde(d)*, 4. masc. *pedwyryd*, *pedweryd*, fem. *pedwyred* RM 21. 25, *pedwared*, 5. *pymhet*, 6. *chwechet*, 7. *seithuet*, 8. *wythuet*, 9. *nawuet*, 10. *decuet*, 11. *unuet ar dec* (*vndecuet* HGCr 90. 21), 12. *deudecuet*, 13. *trydydec* R 1382. 16, 20. *ugeinuet*, 100. *canuet*.

N. *-et* in the ordinals from 5 up is derived from **-eto-*. With the final of the ordinals 7 and 10, it was *-m-eto-* (hence *-uet*), which spread early to other numbers, cf. Ir. *ochtmad, nómad,* Gaul. *oxtvmeto(s)*, &c.; see GOI 248–50, L & P 192–3.

The ordinal precedes the noun on which it depends: *y betwared vlwydyn* 'the fourth year'. *-d* is often lost in *trydyd, tryded,* when they occur in compounds: *y trydygwr* 'the third man' WM 463. 4 (here 'one of the three', see below), *y trydynnyth* 'the third nest' BD 106. 15, *y trydeweith* 'the third time' 53. 26, *tryderan yr enys* 'a third part of the island' 144. 15 (but *trydedran* 154.10); cf. also *y petwaredyd* 'the fourth day' 92. 13. *Kyntaf* 'first' generally follows its noun: *y marchawc kyntaf* 'the first knight'.

The ordinal may denote one of a certain number, as in *y trydygwr* (see above), *nawuet a estoues catgamlan* 'one of the nine who plotted the battle of Camlan' WM 466. 19, *Trydyd lledyf unben wyt* 'Thou art one of the three ungrasping chieftains' PKM 49. 12.

To denote accompaniment the preposition *ar* is commonly employed with the ordinal which is preceded by a possessive pronoun, as in the following examples: *ac ar y eil marchawc dyuot y'r dinas* 'and with one knight (lit. 'on his second knight') he came to the city' Hg MSS ii. 28. 22 (= *ac un marchawc y gyt ac ef* 'and one knight with him' YCM 11. 15), *yna y seuis charlymaen ar y draet ar y drydyd o gristonogyon* 'then Charlemagne stood on his feet with two other Christians' Hg MSS ii. 27. 15 (= *a deu Gristawn y gyt ac ef* YCM 10. 12), *gwedy y vynet ef y'r llong ar y wythued dyn* 'after he had gone to the ship with seven other persons' BY 9. 3, *Mi a af ar uyn deudecuet* 'I will go with eleven others' PKM 68. 27. In these examples the expression *ar* + ordinal has the meaning 'one of two, one of three, one of eight', &c., or 'with one other, two others, seven others', &c. This probably represents the original meaning of this construction, but examples are also found where the expression denotes one + the number represented by the ordinal, as follows: *y uot yn dyuot ar y deugeinuet marchavc* 'that he was coming with forty knights' BD 30. 6 (cf. 30. 2), *ef a doeth . . . ar y drugeinuet marchawc* 'he came with sixty knights' YCM 11. 23 (cf. 11. 9, 12. 3), *Sef a wnaeth y iarll hwnnw ar y ganuet marchawc llechu ymywn glyn coedawc*

'What that earl did was to hide with a hundred knights in a wooded valley' RB 110. 24 (= *a chan marchavc y gyt ac ef* BD 71. 26); see RC xxviii. 206–7, BD 213.

§ 53. MULTIPLICATIVES are formed by combining the numeral with the noun *gweith* 'time', thus: *unweith* 'once', *dwyweith* 'twice', *teirgweith* 'three times', &c.

PRONOUNS

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

Personal pronouns may be divided into two main classes, Independent and Dependent.

§ 54. Independent pronouns are either simple, reduplicated, or conjunctive, thus:

(*a*) Simple: sing. 1. *mi*, 2. *ti*, 3. masc. *ef*, fem. *hi*; pl. 1. *ni*, 2. *chwi*, 3. *wy*, *wynt*.

(*b*) Reduplicated: sing. 1. *mivi*, *myvi*, *myvy*, 2. *tidi*, *tydi*, 3. masc. *efo*, fem. *hihi*; pl. 1. *nini*, 2. *chwichwi*, *chwchwi* SG 164. 20, 3. *wyntwy*, *hwyntwy* RM 132. 24.

(*c*) Conjunctive: sing. 1. *mynheu*, *minheu*, *minneu*, 2. *titheu*, 3. masc. *ynteu*, fem. *hitheu*; pl. 1. *nynheu*, *ninheu*, *ninneu*, 2. *chwitheu*, 3. *wynteu*.

N. 1. *wy* represents the original form of the 3. pl. of the simple pronoun; *wynt* has arisen by analogy with the 3. pl. of verbs, see L & P 216.

N. 2. The reduplicated forms are the simple forms repeated. For *efo*, see WG 273–4.

N. 3. The conjunctive forms are re-formations based on the 3. sing. masc. *ynteu*. They carry additional shades of meaning, such as 'I also, I for my part, but I, while I', &c., which are not easily defined or translated.

There are examples of forms with *-e* in the final syllable: sing. 1. *minne* WM 399. 25, 3. masc. *ynte* YBH 13. 393, fem. *hithe* 8. 481; pl. 1. *nynne* WM 644. 26, 3. *wynte* PKM 70. 5; see § 6 n. 1.

§ 55. The independent pronouns are employed as follows:

(*a*) As object. They are invariably used with the imperative: *dygwch ui odyma* 'take me from here' PKM 6. 3, *kyvarwydhaa vi*

'direct me', *anrydeda hi* 'honour her'. Occasionally they serve as objects of other verbal forms: *kanys heb dy genyat ti y gwnaeth duw di* 'for without thy permission did God make thee' B ii. 23. 21, *ny rodassit hi* 'she had not been given' LlA 122. 8, *Onny threwy ti vivi* 'If thou wilt not strike me' B ix. 334. 4, *mal y caro ereill dithev* 'that others may love thee also' ii. 29. 20, *A atwaenost di vivi* 'Dost thou recognize me?' ix. 338. 11, *pann welsant ef* 'when they saw him' LlA 114. 23–24 (= *pan y gwelsant ef* BDe 17. 3), *Pan geissych di vyui* 'When thou seekest me' RM 224. 28, *Pan volo arall di* 'When another praiseth thee' B ii. 29. 30. When an adverb or adverbial phrase occurs with the verb, it often precedes the personal pronoun object: *a chledwch a'y wyneb ar Freinc ef* 'and bury it with its face towards France' PKM 45. 2, *yna y trewis Gwydyon a'r hudlath ynteu* 'then Gwydion struck him with the magic wand' 90. 15, *ac y byryawd odieithyr y muroed ef* 'and threw him outside the walls' BY 57. 10. (But the infixed pronoun is usually employed to denote the object with all verbal forms except the imperative; see §§ 58–60.)

(*b*) In apposition. (1) In apposition to the subject of a verb or verbal noun, and followed by the conjunction *a*(*c*) 'and' and a noun or pronoun, as in the following examples: *A minheu, ui a'r morynyon, a wiscaf ymdanaf inheu* 'And I with the maidens will put on arms' PKM 82. 25, *a thi a deuy gyt a mi y vwrw dy ludet ti a'th wyr* 'and thou shalt come with me to rid thee of thy weariness, thou and thy men' WM 249. 25–26. This construction commonly occurs with *ef* 'he': *Pwyllei Uorgant ef a'e wyr | Vyn dihol* 'Morgant with (lit. 'he and') his men proposed to expel me' CLlH 17. 41[a], *a'r tirogaeth y buassei yn hela, ef a Pryderi* 'and the country in which he had been hunting, he and Pryderi' PKM 58. 26, *a dyuot y drws porth Caer Aranrot, ef a'r mab yn y llong* 'and came to the entrance of the gate of Caer Aranrhod, he and the boy in the ship' 79. 17–18, *diskynnu a oruc yn y neuad . . . a dyuot racdaw tu a'r loft ef a'r gwr gwynllwyt* 'he dismounted in the hall, and came forward to the upper chamber with (lit. 'he and') the hoary-headed man' WM 393. 17–20, *yny uyd ynteu ef a'y gyfrwy dros bedrein y uarch y'r llawr* 'so that he also with (lit. 'he and') his saddle was over the crupper of his horse to the ground' 398. 10–12, *yna yd*

aeth Chyarlys . . . y gymryt kyghor, ef a'e wyrda 'then Charles went to take counsel with (lit. 'he and') his nobles' B v. 216. 36, *kychwyn a wnaeth ynteu ef ac Assaracus a'r holl gynulleydua* 'he set forth with (lit. 'he and') Assaracus and all the company' BD 5. 17, *Beuno a deuth ef a'e disgyblonn hyt ym meivot* 'Beuno came with (lit. 'he and') his disciples as far as Meifod' LlA 121. 8. Later *ef a* developed into a preposition meaning 'with' (< 'he and'), cf. *efo* 'with'; see WG 422, L & P 123, TC 150, 348–9. Occasionally, the verb is pl., referring to both the pronoun and the noun or pronoun connected with it, thus: *ni a awn, ui a thi, y neges auory* 'we will go, thou and I, on an errand tomorrow' PKM 81. 15, *A'r nos honno yd aethont ef a'y gedymdeithon y'r lletty ar y kynghor* 'And that night they went, he and his companions, to their lodging to take counsel' 70. 3.

(2) The conjunctive pronoun may follow a personal name in apposition: *E pab enteu* 'The Pope also' B ix. 339. 23, *Brenhin Freinc ynteu* 'The King of France for his part' v. 216. 14, *gwyr troea wynteu* 'the men of Troy on their part' RB 20. 34. Ir is often found before a personal name: *Ynteu Pwyll, Pendeuic Dyuet* 'He also, Pwyll, Prince of Dyfed' PKM 8. 4, also *hitheu Riannon* 15. 22, *hitheu wreic Teirnon* 24. 27, *ynteu Uendigeiduran* 41. 14.

N. *ynteu* occurs adverbially with the meaning 'then, therefore': *Y neuad ynteu a gyweirwyt y Pwyll a'e niuer* 'The hall then was made ready for Pwyll and his retinue' PKM 18. 16, *Paham yntev y genir rei drwc yr awr honn* 'Why then are wicked ones born now?' LlA 13. 4, *A'r engylyon enteu a dugant y wynvydedic veir e baradwys duw* 'And the angels then brought the Blessed Mary to God's Paradise' B x. 32. 27; *neu ynteu* 'or otherwise': *y gelwit hi lundein neu ynteu lwndrys* 'it was called Llundein, or otherwise Lwndrys' WM 192. 13–14.

(*c*) The independent pronoun occurs with the particle *a* before the verb, when this does not come at the beginning of the sentence (§ 199): *mi a edrycheis* 'I looked', *ynteu a doeth* 'he also came'. Forms of the simple pronoun without *a* also occur as pre-verbal particles; see § 191.

(*d*) As subject, in a pure nominal sentence (§ 145 n. 4): *guae ui o'm ganedigaeth* 'woe is me that I was born!' PKM 45. 17.

(*e*) As nominal predicate, with the copula: *Mi yw Meir* 'I am Mary'.

(*f*) The form (*s*)*sef* (also *ys*(*s*)*ef*) consists of *ys* 'it is' + *ef*, and is very commonly employed in MW. Its uses may be summarized briefly as follows:

It occurs at the beginning of a sentence, and refers to something which follows, and which may be expressed by a noun or verbal noun. *Sef* itself may be substantival, adjectival, or adverbial.

(1) Substantival: *Sef a oruc y makwyf yna, yskynnu ar y march* 'The young man then mounted the horse' ('What the young man did then was to mount the horse') PKM 10. 25–26, *Sef a wnaeth Arthur kyuodi a mynet y kymryt kyghor* 'Arthur arose and went to take counsel' BR 19. 5, *Sef a gahat yn y kynghor, rodi Branwen y Vatholwch* 'What was determined in council was to give Branwen to Matholwch' PKM 30. 28, *Sef yw hwnnw, Hafgan urenhin o Annwuyn* 'That is king Hafgan from Annwfn' 3. 2. The noun or pronoun referred to may be fem. or pl.: *Sef yw honno gwreic doget urenhin* 'She is the wife of king Doged' WM 453. 17–18, *Sef oed y rei hynny, seith cantref Dyuet* . . . 'Those were the seven cantrefs of Dyfed' PKM 67. 3–4. *Sef yw hynny* is common in both MW and ModW for 'that is', e.g. LlA 160. 19, ChO 8. 18, 21, B ii. 27. 38.

N. *Sef* + *a* + *goruc* / *gwnaeth* with a verbal noun following is a very common construction in MW prose. It is usually equivalent in meaning to the simple preterite, and in most cases is merely a variant of it; note examples PKM 10. 25–26, BR 19. 5 above. On *goruc, gwnaeth* see § 141.

(2) Adjectival, followed by a noun: *Sef kyueir o'y gyuoeth a uynnei y hela, Glynn Cuch* 'The part of his domain which he desired to hunt was Glyn Cuch' PKM 1. 4, *Sef lliw oed arnunt, claerwyn llathreit* 'The colour that was on them was a brilliant shining white' 1. 21, *Sef enw a dodet ar y mab, Guern uab Matholwch* 'The name that was given to the son was Gwern son of Matholwch' 37. 17.

(3) Adverbial: *sef y* occurs before the verb, often with meanings such as 'thus, now, then'. The form is certainly adverbial, although the construction is not easy to define: *Sef y clywei arueu am benn hwnnw* 'He could feel armour on that person's head' PKM 43. 2, *Sef y kyrchyssant y dref uchaf o Arllechwoed* 'They thus made for the highest township of Arllechwoedd' 71. 14, *Sef y gwelynt Arthur yn eisted mywn ynys wastat is y ryt* 'They

could see Arthur seated on a flat island below the ford' BR 6. 10–11, *Sef yd oed mab iarll arall ym erchi inheu ym tat* 'Now there was a son of another earl asking me of my father' WM 135. 10–11. See further Emrys Evans, B xviii. 38–54.

DEPENDENT PRONOUNS may be classified as follows: Possessive Pronouns, Infixed Pronouns Object, Affixed Pronouns.

Possessive pronouns. These may be divided into two classes, according as they are unstressed or stressed.

§ 56. Unstressed possessive pronouns. The pronoun may be prefixed or infixed.

(*a*) Prefixed: sing. 1. *vy*, *vyn* (before *p*, *t*, *c*), *y-* WM 118. 25 (§ 25 *b*), 2. *dy*, 3. *y*; pl. 1. *an*, *yn*, 2. *ach*, *ych*, *awch*, 3. *eu*, *y*, *yw* PKM 53. 23.

(*b*) Infixed: sing. 1. *'m*, 2. *'th*, 3. *'e*, *'y*; pl. 1. *'n*, 2. *'ch*, *'wch*, 3. *'e*, *'y*.

These forms are used with a noun or verbal noun: *vy mab* 'my son', *a'th uab* 'and thy son', *vy nyuot* 'my coming', *y garu* 'to love him'.

Before nouns beginning with a vowel, the *y* of *vy*, *dy* is sometimes elided: *varglwyd vrawt* 'my lord brother' SG 104. 27, *veneit* 'my soul' 104. 34, *ar dol di* 'after thee' 348. 12.

N. 1. The infixed possessive pronouns are merely contracted forms of the prefixed pronouns (on *'m*, *'th*, see WG 276), and do not occur as commonly in MW as in ModW. The sing. forms are found after the conjunctions *a* 'and', *no* 'than', *na* 'nor', and the prepositions *a* 'with', *y* 'to', *y* 'in', *o* 'of, from': *a'e uam* 'and his mother', *na'e damunet* 'nor his wish', *y'th dy* 'to thy house', *o'm ganedigaeth* 'from my birth'; see also n. 3.

N. 2. The combination of *y* 'to' and the 3. sing. of the possessive pronoun assumes various forms: *oe*, comprising the old form **(d)o* (§ 223 n. 1) and the pronoun: *o'e geissaw* 'to seek him' BR 1. 20; *wy* (a variant of *oe* § 6 n. 4): *wy char* 'to her kinsman' HGCr 76. 16; *yw* (a variant of *wy* § 6 n. 4): *yu estauell* 'to his chamber' ZCP xx. 43. 25; *y*: *y gyuoeth ac y wlat* 'to his domain and to his land' PKM 8. 4–5. This form represents a contraction of the preposition *y* and the pronoun *y*. The two forms were also kept apart, and later the consonants *d̄* and *w̄* developed between them: *ydy vam* 'to his mother' ChSDR 85. 223, *yw y veibyon* 'to his sons' Pen 20. 186^{a}5.

N. 3. The pl. forms of the infixed possessive pronoun are rarely found

in MW, especially in the earlier texts; examples become more frequent later: *o'y bod* 'of their will' PKM 36. 6, *a'e safneu* 'and their mouths' YCM 101. 12, *y'n kydymdeithon* 'to our companions' 142. 22, *uwch dwyweu* (*uwch* < *ywch*) 'to your gods' B x. 53–54. The combination of *y* 'to' and the 3. pl. of the pronoun takes the following forms (see n. 2 above): *oe*: *o'e dwyn* 'to take them' PKM 23. 24; *yw*: *yu gossymdeithaw* 'to maintain them' 35. 23; *y*: *y keissaw* 'to seek them' YCM 108. 22; *eu*: *awn eu hedrych* 'let us go to look at them' PKM 87. 21; *yw y*: *yw y digyaw* 'to harass them' Pen 20. 134^{b}14.

The forms which most commonly occur in such cases, however, are those of the prefixed pronoun: *ac ych etiued* 'and your offspring' PKM 75. 25, *nac avch deuodeu* 'nor your customs' BD 94. 8, *noc eu lliw e hun* 'than their own colour' WM 404. 12, *oc an pechodeu* 'from our sins' YCM 20. 25, *y an llys* 'to our court' WM 169. 30. See B xiv. 24–29.

N. 4. Occasionally a possessive pronoun is found with a verbal noun which is followed by a noun as subject or object: *eu ry dyuot niuer kymeint a hvnnv* 'that there had come (lit. 'their having come') a host as large as that' BD 98. 19, *a'e llyngku a oruc y dreic . . . y santes* 'and the dragon devoured (lit. 'her') the saint' B x. 55. 31. Cf. also the following example, where the pronoun occurs with a noun followed by a dependent noun: *am y mynwgyl y uorwyn* 'around (lit. 'her') the maipen's neck' WM 475. 37–38. But *y* here before *mynwgyl* may represent the article, cf. § 28 *d*.

N. 5. The possessive pronoun is used with certain equative adjectives, or adjectives of equative meaning: *A'e gyfryw* 'And such as it' BDe 21. 12, *no'e chymeint o eur* 'than its quantity of gold' YCM 127. 17, *dy gynna* 'thy equal' HGCr 11. 5, *y chyffelyb* 'one like it' B v. 212. 29. It may, of course, be used with the equative when that form serves as a noun; § 45.

N. 6. The 1. and 2. pl. of the prefixed pronoun are used with numerals in apposition to personal pronouns or pronominal forms: *yn taered ni an chwech* 'the insistence of us six' (lit. 'our six') PKM 20. 20–21, *awn yn dwy* 'let us go, both of us' BDe 9. 2. For the 3. pl., *yll* is used, § 107 *c*.

§ 57. Stressed possessive pronouns

Sing. 1. *meu*, 2. *teu*, 3. masc. *eidaw*, fem. *eidi*; pl. 1. *einym*, 2. *einwch*, 3. *eidu* BD 85. 28, *eidunt*.

These forms may take the construction of (*a*) adjectives, or (*b*) substantives.

(*a*) *e rei teu di* 'thine' B ii. 32. 5, *e rei eidaw* 'his' ix. 336. 31, as nominal predicate: *malpei teu uei* 'as if it were thine' WM 487. 23, *y peth nyt yttoed veu* 'that which was not mine' B viii. 139. 14.

(*b*) With the article: *arnaf i ac ar y meu* 'on me and on mine' SG 268. 22, *val y tev dithev* 'like thine' B ix. 329. 17, *By ryw neges yw yr eidaw ef* 'What sort of errand is his?' PKM 30. 18.

N. From a fairly early period, some of these forms are used as nouns, denoting possession: *ae meu y minneu dy uerch di weithon* 'is thy daughter property to me now' WM 506. 36–37, *nyt yttoed heuyt y llew yn deu ytti* 'neither was the lion thine' (lit. 'property to thee') SG 63. 37, *ossit swyd yn y eidaw* 'if he holds an office' (lit. 'if there is an office in his possession') B vii. 374. 16, *canys yr enys . . . a uu eidu uy ryeni inheu* 'since the island has been the property of my ancestors' BD 85. 28.

In ModW *eiddo* 'his' is also a noun, meaning 'property'.

§ 58. Infixed pronouns

Sing. 1. *'m*, 2. *'th*, 3. *'e*, *'y*, *'s*; pl. 1. *'n*, 2. *'ch*, *'wch*, 3. *'e*, *'y*, *'s*.

These are employed as object, and are found with the particles *a*, *y*, *yt*, *ry*, *neu*; the negative *ny*, *na* (*kany*, *ony*, &c.); the interrogative particle *a* (LlA 134. 29, SG 4. 38), the conjunctions *gwedy* 'after', *pan* 'when', *tra* 'while', *yny* 'until', *can* 'since, because', *kyt* 'although', *o* 'if', *pei* 'if', the relative pronoun *a*.

The forms *'e*, *'y*, 3. sing. and pl., are used after the particles *a*, *y*, the conjunctions *pan* 'when', *tra* 'while', *yny* 'until', and the relative pronoun *a*: *minheu a'e kymmeraf* 'I will accept it' PKM 17. 26. The combination of the particle *y* and the pronoun *y* assumes the contracted form *y*: *Llyma wyd y kyffy* 'This is how thou shalt win it' PKM 2. 28. The same contraction is found in *yny* (*yny* + *y*): *synnyaw ehun ar hynny yny gwybu* 'he looked on that himself until he had learnt it' PKM 54. 17.

The form *'s*, 3. sing. and pl., is used after the negative *ny*, *na* (also *kany*, *ony*, &c.); the particles *ry*, *neu*; the conjunctions *can* 'since', *gwedy* 'after', *kyt* 'although', *o* 'if', *pei* 'if': *A'e eidaw nys aruollassant* 'And his own received him not' LlA 161. 19, *Neus rodes y uelly*, *Arglwydes* 'He has so given it, lady' PKM 14. 7–8, *yti y byd*, *os mynny* 'to thee it shall be, if thou wilt have it' 50. 4, *beis mynnei* 'were he to desire it' B v. 202. 21, more commonly *pei ys* / *as*, see § 59. In early poetry it is found with the pre-verbal particle *a*: *As attebwys Dofyd* 'The Lord answered him' BT 24. 5, *as kynnull gwenyn* 'bees gather it' 40. 8–9; *y*: *Ys attebwys Owein* 'Owein answered him' CT 6. 9.

N. In early poetry examples occur of *rwy* (consisting of *ry* and the 3. sing. or pl. of the infixed pronoun) in relative clauses: *y ren rwy digonsei* 'the Lord who had made him' BT 24. 5, *vy Rwyf rwy gwna* 'my Lord who will do it' HGCr 29. 84. The form *nwy* (consisting of the

negative and the 3. sing. or pl. of the infixed pronoun) also occurs in relative clauses: *nis guibit ar nuy g(u)elho* 'he will not know it who has not seen it' BBC 7. 6, *i'r neb nvy keis* 'to the one who seeks it not' HGCr 42. 75; also *nyw* (*wy* / *yw*, see § 6 n. 4): *nyt kerdawr nyw molwy* 'he is no minstrel who praiseth him not' R 1400. 24, *gwae'r dyn nyw gwŷl* 'woe is the man who sees it not' GDG 64. 2. Examples also occur of its use in principal clauses: *ac nyw kelaf* 'and I shall not conceal it' R 1244. 37. See SW 23.

§ 59. Syllabic forms of the infixed pronoun are found with the following conjunctions: *pan* 'when', *tra* 'while', *kyt* 'although', *can* 'since', *pei* 'if': *yr pan yth weleis gyntaf* 'since I saw thee first' WM 156. 36, *hyt tra ym gatter yn uyw* 'so long as I am left alive' 479. 6, *hyt tra yn dygyrcher* 'so long as people seek us' 458. 26–27, *kid im guneit* 'though thou dost make me' HGCr 7. 47, *kan am coffawys* 'since he remembered me' LlHen 45. 4, *pei am getynt* 'if they would allow me' 121. 24, *pei ath adwaenynt* 'had they known thee' SG 38. 4. They are also found in early poetry with the pre-verbal particle *yt* (§ 190 n.): *yt ym gwelynt* 'that they could see me' LlHen 121. 26, *yd yth geissaf* 'that I shall seek thee' 223. 16.

After *pan* 'when', *tra* 'while', the form *y* occurs for the 3. sing., and *y*, *eu* for the 3. pl.: *pan y gyrwyt yno* 'when he was sent there' B ix. 47. 4, *pan eu dineuer* 'when they are poured' vii. 372. 39, *tra y gwelho* 'so long as he sees it' LlB 52. 18.

as, *ys* occur as syllabic forms of *'s*, 3. sing. and pl.: *kyt as porthwyf* 'though I bear it' R 1425. 36, *pei ass archut* 'hadst thou asked it' PKM 12. 9, *pei ys gwypwn* 'had I known it' 32. 23 (also *peis*, *beis* § 58). They are occasionally found with *gwedy* 'after': *gwedy as gwelych* 'after thou hast seen it' YCM 126. 17, *gwedy as collont* 'after they have lost it' LlA 167. 9.

N. In early poetry the pronoun sometimes stands between the preverb and the rest of the verb: *dy-m-kyueirch* 'greets me' LlHen 30. 15, *er-yth-gwynant* 'they will lament thee' 171. 14, *hand-yth-uagwyd* 'thou hast been reared' 208. 19, *kyu-ym-goluch* 'praises me' 20. 9, *er-ys-mygei* 'he caused it' CA 8. 205, *er-yth-yolaf* 'I entreat thee' HGCr 25. 81. These examples undoubtedly represent the original construction in compound verbs; cf. Ir., see GOI 255–70.

§ 60. A proleptic infixed pronoun is sometimes used where the object follows in the form of a noun. (*a*) *'s*: *neus goreu o gadeu*

gewilid 'he made a disgrace of armies' CA 5. 98, *bei as keissei y dvyweu y dvyn y ganthunt* 'if the gods should try to take it from them' BD 45. 28, *Nys gweles dyn eiryoet y sawl dynyon yn vn lle* 'No man ever beheld so many people in any place' BDe 21. 13. (*b*) *'e, 'y: ac a'e hysgriuenneis y gwedi uuhun* 'and I wrote her prayer myself' B x. 59. 24, *Mi a'e dywedaf itt yr ystyr* 'I will tell thee the reason' BR 4. 29; see GDG 446.

§ 61. The infixed pronoun is used with dative meaning, chiefly in early poetry: *y gwr a'm rodes y gwin* 'the man who gave me the wine' BT 40. 15, *a'n gwnel iechid* 'may he provide salvation for us' HGCr 3. 11; also with verbs of motion: *Douyd a'n daw* 'The Lord will come to us' 94. 13, *Mawr anrhydedd a'm deddyw* 'A great honour has come to me' GDG 22. 31; attached to a preverb (§ 59 n.): *dy-m-ryt* 'gives me' LlHen 280. 9.

With the verb 'to be' it denotes possession: *Chwiorydd a'm bu hefyd* 'I had (lit. 'there were to me') sisters also' CLlH 48. 109[a], *Ac y'm oed y e(i)reu, Ac y'm oed i ieitheu* 'And I had words, And I had languages' HGCr. 12. 49, *Ac awch bi wynnyeith* 'And ye shall have punishment' 13. 81, *Ac nys oes gochel* 'And there is for him no escape' 26. 93, *Ket ath vo di golut* 'Though thou hast wealth' 63. 47. This use of the pronoun disappeared rather early; instead personal forms of the prepositions *gan* 'by, with' and *y* 'to' were employed, see §§ 208, 221 *d*.

§ 62. Affixed pronouns. These have (*a*) simple and (*b*) conjunctive forms.

(*a*) Simple: sing. 1. *ui, uy, e, i,* 2. *di, dy, de, te, ti,* 3. masc. *ef,* fem. *hi*; pl. 1. *ni,* 2. *chwi,* 3. *wy, wynt.*

(*b*) Conjunctive: sing. 1. *inneu, inhe* SG 99. 2, 2. *ditheu, titheu,* 3. masc. *ynteu,* fem. *hitheu*; pl. 1. *ninheu,* 2. *chwitheu,* 3. *wynteu.*

These forms are used as auxiliaries, and from an early period appear to have been more commonly employed in the spoken than in the literary language. They occur after words with personal endings, or with prefixed or infixed pronous: *hyny elwyf ui* 'until I go' WM 457. 19, *a wnaf i* 'I shall do' PKM 43. 23, *Y kymereis inheu wyntwy arnaf* 'I took them on me' 35. 23, *genhyf i* 'with me' WM 229. 12, *arnunt wy* 'on them' PKM 30. 13, *eu medwi wynteu*

'(that) they were drunk' 36. 13, *y uab ynteu* 'his son' BD 44. 8, *ny'ch gwarandawaf chwi* 'I shall not listen to you' B x. 53.

N. 1. The form *hyhitheu* occurs: *a'y thoi yn da didos wedi hynny hyhitheu* 'and thatching it well and snugly too after that' PKM 86. 27. The form is a compound of the simple and conjunctive pronouns; instances of this formation are very rare, but cf. sing. 3. *ef ynteu* WM 425. 29, pl. 2. *hwchwithev* RC xxxiii. 232. 11.

N. 2. When an auxiliary pronoun occurs with a personal form of the copula, it is usually placed after the nominal predicate in MW (cf. Ir., see GOI 253): *ot oed uawr ef* 'if he was big' PKM 35. 16, *byd lawen di* 'be thou happy' 68. 14, *y bydei uuyd ef* 'that he would be obedient' YBH 58. 3748, *ny buum distaw inheu* 'I for my part was not quiet' PKM 74. 9, *ny bu lawenach ynteu eiroet* 'he was never happier' YBH 17. 1143, *nyt wyf lawen inheu* 'I for my part am not happy' SG 174. 13, *megys y bych garedic dithev* 'that thou also mayest be loved' B ii. 32. 15; contrast *val y bych ditheu garedic* B ii. 19. 30, also *a vydaf i ryd weithon* 'shall I be free now?' YBH 58. 3761–2.

With other verbs it may come after an adverb or adverbial expression: *ac a'e gossodyssant yno vynt* 'and they placed them there' BD 127. 8.

§ 63. Conjugated Prepositions. These forms resulted from old formations in British and Goidelic, whereby the preposition was closely joined to the personal pronoun which it governed. In Welsh the conjugation of the preposition is very similar to that of the verb, and has been influenced in its later development by verbal forms.

There are three conjugations, distinguished by the vowel of the suffixed pronoun, *-a-*, *-o-*, *-y-*; the conjugation of *y* 'to' is irregular.

(*a*) FIRST CONJUGATION, *ar* 'on':

Sing.	Pl.
1. *arnaf*	*arnam, arnan*
2. *arnat*	*arnawch*
3. masc. *arnaw*	*arnadut* (≡ *ud*) LlHen 18. 19
fem. *arnei, erni*	*arnu* HGCr 102. 41
	arnunt, arnun

Similarly *am* 'about' (stem *amdan-, ymdan-*: sing. 3. fem. *amdanei, ymdeni*, OW *amtanndi*; Pl. 1. *amdanam, amdanan*, 3. *ymdanadut* (≡ *ud*) LlHen 13. 8, *ymdanadunt, ymdanunt, amdanwynt*).

at 'to' (sing. 3. fem. *attei, etti*; pl. 1. *attam, attan, attom*, 2. *attawch*, 3. *attadunt, attunt*).

o 'from, of' (stem *ohan-, ohon-*: sing. 1. *-af, -of*, 2. *-at, -ot, -awt*, 3. masc. *ohanaw, ohonaw*, fem. *ohanei, ohonei, oheni*; pl. 3. *onadu(nt), ohonu(nt)*).

tan, dan 'under' (usually in the form *ydan* / *adan*: sing. 3. masc. *y danav*; pl. 1. *y danan*, 3. *adanunt, adanadunt*).

N. 1. (*a*) The final consonant of the 2. sing. was *d* (represented generally by *t* in MW, § 9). Later it became *t*, the unvoicing being caused by contact with the *d* of the affixed pronoun which usually followed (*arnad di* > *arnat ti*).

(*b*) The original ending of the 3. pl. was **-uf* [üv], subsequently *-ud* [üd]; *-u* often occurs in MW after the loss of *-d* (§ 11). Later, by analogy with 3 pl. forms of the verb, *-u* was superseded by *-unt*, and in ModW the ending appears as *-ynt*, a result of the vacillation between *u* and *y* in final syllables (§ 2).

N. 2. The personal forms of *o* consist of the simple preposition and *han*, a form of similar meaning (cf. Ir. *sain* 'separate', *sainred* 'a special thing, specialty' = W *hanred* 'separation'). Personal forms of *han, hon* without *o* occur: sing. 1. *honaf* LlHen 66. 4, 2. *honawd* HGCr 83. 64, 3. masc. OW *hanaud* Comp.

(*b*) SECOND CONJUGATION, *rac* 'before':

Sing.	Pl.
1. *ragof*	*ragom*
2. *ragot*	*ragoch*
3. masc. *racdaw*	*racdut* (≡ *ud*), *racdu(nt)*
fem. *racdei, racdi, recdi*	

Examples of *roc-* are found: sing. 3. masc. *rocdaw* YBH 60. 3884, fem. *rocdi* 12. 773; pl. 3. *rocdun* 6. 351.

Similarly *heb* 'without' (sing. 3. masc. *hebdaw*).

y rwng 'between' (sing. 1. *y-rof*, 2. *y-rot, y-rynghot*, 3. masc. *y-rydaw, y-ryngthaw, y-ryngtaw*, fem. *y-rydi, y-ryngthi, y-ryngti*; pl. 1. *y-rom, y-rynghom*, 2. *y-roch*, 3. *y-rydunt, e-regthut, y-ryngthunt, y-ryngtunt*; also with *cyf-*: pl. 2. *kyfryngoch*, 3. *kyfryngthut* LlHen 147. 24).

tros, dros 'over' (sing. 3. masc. *trostaw*, fem. *trosti*).

trwy, drwy 'through' (sing. 1. *trwydof*, 2. *trwydot, drwot*; pl. 3. *drwydunt*).

yn 'in' (sing. 3. masc. *yndaw*; pl. 3. *yndunt*, *yndun* BD 157. 26).
yr 'for' (sing. 3. masc. *yrdaw*).
uch 'above' (sing. 3. masc. *uchtaw*, fem. *uchti*; pl. 1. *uchom*).
is 'below' (sing. 3. masc. *istaw*, fem. *isti*).

(*c*) THIRD CONJUGATION, *gan* 'with, by':

	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*genhyf*, *gennyf*	*genhym*, *gennym*, *genhyn*, *gennyn*
2.	*genhyt*, *gennyt*	*genhwch*, *gennwch*
3.	masc. *gantaw*, *ganthaw*	*gantut* LlHen 47. 22
	fem. *genti*, *genthi*	*gantu* CLlH 8. 47[b], *gantunt*
	ganthei BD 26. 25	*ganthud* CA 45. 1137
		ganthu CLlH 41. 64[c], *ganthunt*

Similarly *wrth* 'by, to' (sing. 3. masc. *wrthaw*, fem. *wrthi*, *wrthti* Cott. Tit. D. xxii, see BDe 16. 7; pl. 2. *wrthywch*).

(*d*) *y* 'to':

	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*ym*(*i*), *im*(*i*)	*ynn*(*i*), *in*(*ni*)
2.	*ytt*(*i*), *itt*(*i*)	*ywch*, *iwch*, *ychwi*
3.	masc. *idaw*, *itaut* BBC 14. 5	*udud*, *udu* CLlH 7. 39[c], *ydu* 47.
	fem. *idi*, OW *didi*	104[c], *udunt*

N. Some of these prepositions have impersonal forms, which are used adverbially, *trwy*: *truio*, *trusso* 'over, across' LL 196. 14, 258. 17, also *drwod* PKM 45. 11, BDe 11. 9; *rac*: *racco*, *raccw* 'yonder'; *heb*: *heibyaw* 'past'; *uch*: *uchof* HGrC 130. 22, *uchot* (originally 1. and 2. sing.) 'above'; *is*: *issot* (2. sing.) 'below', also *isso*; *yng* 'near, close': *yghot* (2. sing.) 'nearby' WM 118. 5, also *yngo* GDG 313. 7. Cf. R. A. Breatnach, *Celtica* iii. 332–4.

THE RELATIVE PRONOUN

§ 64. Welsh possesses a relative pronoun only in affirmative clauses where the relative functions as subject or as object of the verb. Such clauses are known as proper relative clauses.

§ 65. The Proper Relative Clause. RELATIVE AS SUBJECT

Affirmative. The usual form of the pronoun is *a*: *yr erchwys a ladyssei y carw* 'the pack that had killed the stag' PKM 2. 15. The

verb is usually in the 3. sing., even when the antecedent is pl.: *o drychan eurdorchauc a gryssyws Gatraeth* 'of three hundred golden-torqued men who made for Catraeth' CA 28. 707; but a pl. verb is occasionally found: *Gweleis wyr goruawr a dygyrchynt awr* 'I saw very big men who raised a war-cry' BT 42. 11, *y trywyr diwethaf a deuthant att Arthur* 'the last three men who came to Arthur' BR 18. 26. Agreement of person is sometimes found in translated works, under the influence of the Latin construction: *ti a disgynneist* 'thou who didst descend' BDe 16. 11. The pronoun may be omitted before *oed* 'was': *e gvyr oed en e grogi* 'the men who were hanging him' B x. 24. 25, *a'r tri chymwt goreu oed ym Powys* 'as the best three commots that were in Powys' BR 1. 23–24.

Negative. No form of the relative pronoun is used. The verb of the clause is preceded by the negative in the form *ny(t)*, *na(t)* (rare): *y dyyrnas ny diffic vyth* 'the kingdom that shall never fail' B v. 208. 30, *yr ych nyt el o'e gartref deir milltir* 'the ox that goes not three miles from its home' ii. 11. 19, *nit oed gyueir arnei hi ny bei yn llawn o'e garyat ef* 'there was no part of her that was not full of love for him' WM 102. 20.

N. 1. There are early examples where the relative pronoun *a* does not occur before compound verbs containing prefixes such as *dy-*, *dym-*, *go-*, *ym-*: *ti dicones* 'thou who hast made' Juv, *gur dicones* 'He who made' ib., *Onid imwaredit o'r druc digonit* 'Unless thou deliverest thyself from the evil which thou doest' BBC 19. 7, *ir pimphet eterin diguormechis lucas* 'the fifth bird which Luke added' Ox 1, *O'r saul dymguytat* ? 'Of those who fell' HGCr 8. 80. To the same category belong cases where the verb is preceded by the negative or by the pre-verbal particles *neu*, *ry*. The pronoun does not occur with the negative, nor, originally, with *ry* (see n. 2). These features are best explained as survivals in Welsh of an old construction found in OIr., where the relative particle was placed after a preverb (see GOI 323).

This infixed relative particle caused lenition (cf. Ir., where lenition is usually the only indication of its existence). In the early period, the negative in a relative clause is followed by lenition of all lenitable consonants, including *p*, *t*, *c*: *pawb o'r pobloed ny bara* 'all the people who will not last' R 1175. 2, *neb drut ny drefnwy gwascawt* 'any fool who may not arrange protection' 1176. 1, *guir ny gilint rac gvaev* 'men who would not flee from a spear' BBC 72. 6. In principal clauses, on the other hand, the negative was usually followed by the spirant mutation (in Ir. gemination,

see GOI 152–3, 363): *Ny phercheiste guener* 'Thou didst not respect Friday' BBC 21. 6, *Ny chenir buyeid ar ffo* 'The Beatitudes are not sung in flight' 8. 11, *Ni cheuntoste pader* 'Thou didst not sing the Paternoster' 21. 8, *ny chilyei o gamhawn* 'he would not retreat from battle' CA 2. 25. It appears that originally the negative was followed by the spirant mutation in a principal clause, and by lenition in a relative clause. There are examples from the early period of the spirant mutation after *neu*, *ry*, also in principal clauses: *neu cheint* 'I have sung' BT 19. 1, *Neu cholleisy arglwyt . . . neu chyuyd ynof cof* 'I have lost a lord, memory rises in me' LlHen 126. 27, 29, *Ry chedwis detyf* 'He kept the law' BBC 14. 7, *ry thrychynt* 'they cut down' BT 76. 18, *ry phrydaf y iawn llin* 'I compose its true lineage' 19. 22; but *ry* is followed by lenition in a relative clause (see further *Ériu* iii. 20–28, RC xxxi. 41–48, 333–42).

Only traces of an older system, however, survive in Welsh. In this connexion we may note alternative forms of the same verbal compounds which have survived, the one containing the spirant mutation (or the radical, where the spirant mutation is not possible), the other lenition: *dybryssyaw* 'hasten', *dyfryssyaw*; *dybu* 'came', *dyvu* (§ 143 n. 4); *dychanu* 'sing', *dyganu*; *dychyrchu* 'go to', *dygyrchu*; *dyfforthi* 'bear', *dyborthi*; *gochel* 'avoid', *gogel*. Cf. RC xxxi. 472–81.

In MW prose the earlier system has been much simplified, and the position may briefly be summarized as follows: *neu* and *ry* are followed by lenition in every case. After the negative we have the spirant mutation of *p*, *t*, *c*, and lenition of the other lenitable consonants, in both principal and relative clauses. Traces of the older construction survive in non-lenition of *b* and *m* after the negative: *Ny byd* 'There will not be' PKM 3. 19, *hyt na bo* 'so that there shall not be' 3. 10–11, *ny mynneis innheu un gwr* 'I have not desired any man' 12. 24–25; but lenition occasionally occurs: *Ny uynhei Gaswallawn y lad ynteu* 'Caswallawn did not wish to slay him' 46. 7.

In poetry the older system probably persisted longer. Examples of the lenition of *c* after the negative are found in the poetry of Dafydd ap Gwilym (fourteenth century), e.g. *Gŵr fy myd ni gar fy myw* 'The husband of my darling likes not that I am alive' GDG 377. 9.

N. 2. The particle *ry* / *yr* occurs before the verb without *a* in proper relative clauses (cf. n. 1 above): *y Saesson ry ffoassei* 'the English who had fled' BD 149. 24, *Gueirid yr athoed hyt yg Kaer Wynt* 'Gueirid who had gone as far as Caer Wynt' 57. 10, *temyl ry wnathoed ehun* 'a temple which he himself had made' 60. 4, *y gvyrtheu yr wnathoed yr ebestyl* 'the miracles which the apostles had wrought' 61. 22. *a* came to be used before it: *pwy a ryfu yma gwedy mifi* 'who has been here since myself' WM 121. 16–17, *y marchawc a ryfuassei yn ymdidan ac ef* 'the knight who had been conversing with him' YBH 40. 2542–4. The combination of *a* and *ry* occurs in the form *ar*: *y mein a'r dothoed o Ywerdon* 'the stones that had come from Ireland' BD 129. 16, *y sarhaet a'r wnathoed idav* 'the insult

he had caused him' 48. 17, *yr hwyat ar ladassei y walch yn yr eira* 'the duck which the she-hawk had killed in the snow' WM 143. 23–24.

The forms *y ry*, *yr ry* are also found: *y paganyeit . . . y ry dugassei ynteu* 'the pagans he had brought' BD 184. 26, *pa ryv direidi antyghetuenaul y'th ryduc di y'r lle hon* 'what luckless evil hath brought thee to this place?' 169. 14, *dylyet eu ryeni yr ry gollyssynt* 'the right of their ancestors which they had lost' 125. 4.

y: *y sarhaet y gavssei ynteu* 'the insult he had received' BD 130. 6, *or kaffei veddic y gyuanhei y ascwrn* 'were he to have a physician who would join his bone' WM 141. 25; see DB 126–7, BD xxxviii.

N. 3. When the object is a personal pronoun, a form of the infixed pronoun is generally used after *a* (§ 58), but when the pronoun is pl., a form of the prefixed pronoun is sometimes used after *ac* (doubtless by analogy with the combination of the conjunction and preposition *ac* 'and, with', and the possessive pronoun, cf. § 56 n. 3): *hyt pan uei euo ac eu rydhaei* 'that he might free them' BD 202. 1, *canys yr argluyd ac eu hiachaa* 'for the Lord shall heal them' B xiv. 269. 11.

Examples also occur of *ac a* as a form of the relative pronoun, but they are rare: *gueith . . . ac a barhaei yn dragywydaul* 'a work that would last for ever' BD 125. 23, *Ae ryuelwyr ywchi ac a gymero da yr rywelu* 'Are ye warriors who will accept pay for fighting?' YBH 36. 2285, *Pwy . . . ac ae dwc* (ms. *duc*) *wynteu* 'Who shall bring them?' Hg MSS ii. 246. 29.

N. 4. In OW the relative pronoun occurs in the form *(h)ai*: *di erchim tir telih hai oid i lau elcu* 'to claim the land of Telych which was in the possession of Elcu' St. Chad, *ir serenn hai bid in arcimeir o* 'the star which is opposite o' Comp, *yr neb ai torro hac ay dimanuo y bryeint hunn* 'any one who may violate or curtail this privilege' LL 121. 4. Instances of the form *ae* occur in early MW. Subject: *pwyr byw ae diadas gwaet* 'who is the living one who shed blood' BT 19. 20. Object: *E betev ae gulich y glav* 'The graves which the rain wets' BBC 63. 2, *Piev y bet . . . ae tut mor* 'Whose is the grave which the sea covers?' 64. 15. In many cases (including most of the examples given here) this form may be explained as consisting of *a* and *'e*, *'y*, the infixed pronoun, § 58.

§ 66. *Yssyd* is a relative form of the 3. sing. of the pres. indic. of the verb 'to be': *y bont yssyd ar yr auon* 'the bridge which is over the river' PKM 40. 20, *vy gelynn yssyd yn ymlad a mi* 'my enemy who is fighting with me' B ix. 329. 3. It consists of *ys* (§ 147) and *yd* [ïd], which derives from an old relative pronoun or particle. The form thus represents an old construction, where the relative was placed after the verb; see L & P 243, cf. also the relative forms of the verb in Ir., GOI 323, 364.

§ 67. RELATIVE AS OBJECT. Affirmative. The form of the pronoun is commonly *a* (for *ae*, see § 65 n. 4): *y march a rodyssei Teirnon idaw* 'the horse which Teyrnon had given him' PKM 25. 8, *y geir a dywedeist neithwyr am y moch* 'the word that thou didst speak last night about the swine' 70. 17.

Negative. The verb is preceded by the negative, often with the infixed pronoun *'s*: *llyna beth nys gwrthodaf i* 'that is a thing which I will not refuse' (lit. 'I will not refuse it') YCM 64. 15–16, *y pechodeu nys gwnaeth* 'the sins which he did not commit' (lit. 'he did not commit them') B viii. 140. 9. Examples occur of the negative without *'s*: *a phetheu ny chlywyspwyt yn llyureu ereill eiroet* 'and things that have not been heard of ever in other books' LlA 164. 4.

§ 68. The Improper Relative Clause. To this category belong the clauses where the relative is in a genitival relationship, governed by a preposition, adverbial, or a nominal predicate. Welsh does not possess a relative pronoun to denote these relationships; neither the demonstrative nor the interrogative pronoun was generally adopted as a relative (on *pan*, *pieu*, see §§ 87, 88). Apparently the relationship was at first indicated by mere juxtaposition, an independent sentence immediately following a noun with which it was associated in meaning. Its construction, however, was entirely independent of it, a phenomenon which must be recognized before the various constructions employed in these clauses can be properly understood.

The verb of the clause is preceded by the particles *yt*, *y(d)*, *ry* / *yr*, *a* (affirmative); *ny(t)*, *na(t)* (negative). In time, these came to be felt as relative conjunctions, denoting subordination.

N. There are early examples, mostly from the OW period, where no particle occurs before the verb: *In trited retec retit loyr* 'In the third course (in which) the moon runs', *is gur tum tarnetor ir loc guac* 'it is as an increment (that) the empty space is reckoned', *is gurth ir serenn . . . retit loyr* 'it is opposite the constellation (that) the moon travels' Comp, see B iii. 256. 2, 7, 11, *ef gwr gwelitor goleith y dewdor* 'he is a man whose might is seen to be shunned' LlHen 13. 1, *Bydei re ruthrwn y waew* 'It was with speed (that) I would rush at a spear' CLlH 3. 12[c].

The various constructions are here described according to the function of the relative.

§ 69. GENITIVE. The relative may depend on a noun or verbal noun, which occurs within the clause, and is preceded by a possessive pronoun which refers back to the antecedent. The examples are here classified according as the relative depends on a noun or verbal noun, and according to the particle preceding the verb:

Noun. Affirmative: *y(d)*: *y brenhin y kiglef . . . y glot a'e volyant* 'the king whose fame and renown I have heard of' (lit. 'I have heard of his fame and renown') B v. 210. 30; *a*: *Cledyf a uo eur neu aryant ar y aual* 'A sword on the pommel of which there is gold or silver' (lit. 'there is gold or silver on its pommel') LlB 98. 15–16. Negative: *yr arglwydiaeth ny chlywyt kyn no hynny y chreulonder* 'the rule of a cruelty hitherto unheard of' (lit. 'its cruelty was not heard of before then') BD 39. 8.

Verbal noun. Affirmative: *y(d)*: *ieith y gellych ti y darllein a'e dyall* 'a language which thou canst read and understand' (lit. 'thou canst read and understand it') B v. 195; *a*: *Peth a ellych y rodi* 'That which thou art able to give' (lit. 'thou art able to give it') ii. 31. 4, *Y ran a weda ymi y rodi* 'The share it is fitting for me to give (it)' BR 5. 30. Negative: *y drws ny dylywn ni y agori* 'the door we must not open (it)' PKM 46. 25.

N. The pronoun preceding the noun or verbal noun in the relative clause normally agrees with the antecedent in number and gender. Sometimes, however, it is 3. sing. masc. even when the antecedent is fem. or pl.: *yr aerua yd oedet yn y wneuthur* 'the slaughter that was being done' BD 180. 15, *a'r abertheu yd oed yn y wneuthur* 'the sacrifices he was making' 66. 31; see BD xl.

§ 70. GOVERNED BY A PREPOSITION. The clause contains a conjugated form of the preposition, which refers back to the antecedent.

Affirmative: *y(d)*: *y coedyd y foassant vdunt* 'the woods to which they fled' (lit. 'they fled to them') BD 6. 4, *y wlat yd hanwyf oheni* 'the land from which I come' PKM 2. 24, *Nyt oed long y kynghanei ef yndi* 'There was no ship in which he might be contained' 40.

10–11, *y llech yd oed yn seuyll arnei* 'the slab on which he was standing' 56. 17–18; *a: ffiol eur a anho llawn diawt y brenhin yndi* 'a gold cup in which the king's full draught shall be contained' LlB 3. 22, *mein a ellit gwneuthur y gweith hvnnv onadunt* 'stones from which that structure could be built' BD 127. 2, *y gwayw a dywawt y vorwyn du ymdanaw* 'the spear the black maiden told of' WM 167. 22–23; *yr: y borth yr disgynnassei yndi* 'the port at which he had landed' BD 20. 2.

Negative: *Ny doey wr mawr, na gwreic da yn Iwerdon, e ymwelet a Branwen, ni rodei hi ae cae, ae modrwy, ae teyrndlws cadwedic ydaw* 'No great man or noble lady in Ireland would come to visit Branwen to whom she gave not either a brooch or a ring or a treasured royal jewel' PKM 37. 10–12.

N. 1. There are examples where the conjugated preposition is omitted: *a cheisswn greft y caffom yn ymborth* 'let us seek a craft whereby we may obtain our sustenance' PKM 52. 19, *a'r tirogaeth y buassei yn hela* 'and the country in which he had been hunting' 58. 26, *yn y llestyr yd ymolcho* 'in the bowl in which she washes' WM 475. 24–25, *Pa rith y mae hi. Yn rith bleidast* 'What shape is she in? In the shape of a she-wolf' 493. 33, *Beth am y rei y bu yma dev benn* 'What of those to whom there were here two heads?' LlA 60. 24, *a'r gobennyd yd eistedho y brenhin y dyd* 'and the cushion on which the king shall sit by day' LlB 10. 9, *ympob ty y del ar negesseu y brenhin* 'in every house to which he comes on the king's business' 28. 25.

N. 2. In translated works another construction often occurs. The preposition is made to govern the demonstratives *yr hwnn, yr honn*, &c., which come between the antecedent and the clause, and which serve as relative pronouns: *yr heul yn yr hwnn y mae tri pheth* 'the sun in which there are three things (qualities)' LlA 3. 14, *gwyl e vam o'r honn e ganet duw* 'the feast of the mother of whom God was born' B x. 22. 15, *eu tadolyon dvyweu, trwy y rei y'r gevssynt vynteu uudugolyaeth* 'their paternal gods, through whom they had obtained victory' BD 49. 21.

Both constructions may occur in the same clause: *Crist, y unmap ef, yn yr hwnn yd wyt ti yn credu idaw* 'Christ, his only son, in whom thou dost believe' B x. 56. 9.

§ 71. ADVERBIAL. The clause has as antecedent a noun denoting time, place, cause, or manner.

Time: *Er amser y bu hitheu yn y dewred* 'The time when she was in her hey-day' PKM 50. 8, *y noss y keueist y mab* 'the night

thou didst find the boy' 23. 25, *y nos gyntaf y delher at wr mawr* 'the first night one comes to a great man' 69. 10, *Y dyd yd aeth ef parth a Chaer Tathyl* 'The day he went to Caer Dathyl' 84. 12–13, *yr awr yd edrych* 'the moment she looks' 85. 7.

Place: *y ford y guelyn y preideu* 'the way they were wont to see the flocks' PKM 51. 25–26, *fford y ry uuost* 'the way thou hast been' WM 138. 26, *yn y lle ny welsynt eiryoet weith kyn no hynny* 'in the place where they had never before seen a structure' 55. 24–25. In the early period *men, myn* 'place' often occurs as antecedent, *men y* denoting 'where, wherever': *men yd elhei* 'wherever he went' CA 1. 21, *men yt welet* 'where it was seen' 47. 1177, *myn yd vo truin. yd uit trev* 'where there is a nose, there will be a sneeze' BBC 83. 5, *Sef y dyuu myn yd oed meichad yn cadw kenuein o uoch* 'And it came in a place where a swineherd was keeping a herd of swine' WM 452. 14, *Dyuot a wnaethont myn yd oed yr heussawr* 'They came to where the shepherd was' 473. 1, *Pedeir meillonen gwynnyon a dyuei yn y hol myn yd elhei* 'Four white trefoils sprang up behind her wherever she went' 476. 16.

Cause or reason: *Bei gwypwn inheu defnyd yn y byt y dylyut titheu bot yn borth idaw ef* 'If I knew of any reason in the world why thou shouldst support it' PKM 61. 11.

Manner: *Llyma wyd y kyffy* 'This is the way thou shalt obtain it' PKM 2. 28, *yn y mod y dylywn ac y gallwn* 'in the way I should and could' B x. 125. 3, *llyssyant a vyd o'r fford y llyssir tyston* 'objection is (made) in the manner in which witnesses are objected to' LlB 91. 29.

§ 72. NOMINAL PREDICATE. Here the relative is a nominal predicate or sub-predicate; the verb is preceded by *yt, y(d)* in an affirmative clause.

Predicate: *yr yniuer y buam doe* 'the company we were yesterday' PKM 10. 16, *y pedwardyn y buassynt y gyt* 'the four persons who (lit. 'they') had been together' 61. 20.

Sub-predicate: *o'r sawl yt gryssyassant* 'of those who (lit. 'they') set forth' CA 10. 239, *y savl uilioed yd yvch yn fo rac un gvr* 'the many thousands of you who are fleeing before one man' (lit. 'the so many thousands you are . . .') BD 16. 18, *Pedeir llong y doethant*

'In four shiploads they came' (lit. 'Four ships they came') 34. 14, *Duw y credant* 'God they believe him (to be)' HGCr 106. 45.

N. Here is an example of *a* before the verb: *o'r sawl a aytham* 'of those of us who went' (lit. 'of those we went') CA 45. 1130. If the relative were subject, the verb should be in the 3. sing.; see § 65.

§ 73. A noun or pronoun governed by *o* 'of', which forms part of the antecedent, is usually found within the clause or at the end of it: *a'r ardurn teccaf a welsei neb o adeiladeu* 'and the finest show of buildings any one had ever seen' PKM 4. 6–7, *y rann a dylyei uot am y hwyneb o wisc y phenn* 'the part of her head-dress which should be over her face' 12. 11, *yr un a uu baed coet o honawch yrllyned* 'the one of you that has been a wild boar for the past year' 76. 8–9, *y'r sawl a diaghyssei o'e wyr yn uyw* 'for as many of his men as had escaped alive' WM 148. 22, *yr vn a dewissei o'e teir chwiored* 'the one he might choose of their three sisters' 158. 31.

Sometimes the antecedent is not formally expressed (see § 77); in such cases we have the meaning 'all the, as many . . . as': *ac a oed o vilwyr prouedic yn yr ynys honn* 'with all the tried warriors there were in this island' WM 504. 11–12. The noun governed by the preposition is usually sing., even where a pl. would normally be expected: *dyuyn a oed o of yn Iwerdon* 'there were summoned as many smiths as were in Ireland' PKM 36. 9, *mi a rodaf it a wely o uarch yn y maes hwnn* 'I will give thee all the horses thou seest in this plain' 63. 22 (= *o veirch* RM 57. 1), *ac yssyd o wreic ueichawc yn y llys honn* 'and all the pregnant women that are in this court' WM 457. 9–10, *Ac yna y kynnullwys Arthur a oed o gynifywr yn Ynys Prydein* 'And then Arthur gathered together all the warriors that were in the Island of Britain' 499. 7–8.

The noun or pronoun governed by *o* seldom comes in front of the relative clause: *ny chollwn o wyr ac arueu a golleis* 'I would not have lost all the men and arms I have lost' PKM 74. 26, *a'r neb ohonunt a ffoho* 'and any one of them who may flee' YCM 107. 10.

On this construction, see further B i. 104–6, xiii. 190–2.

§ 74. Certain pronouns and pronominals preceded by the article are commonly employed as antecedents. The following are the

most common: *yr hwnn*, *yr honn*, *yr hynn*, *y rei* (§ 101), *y neb* (§ 116), *y sawl* (§ 103), *y gwr* 'the man', *y dyn* 'the person', *yr un* (§ 97), *y peth* (§ 104). These forms may be in apposition to the real antecedent, or form part of the principal clause.

(*a*) In apposition, mainly to introduce a non-defining clause; the relative clause is often co-ordinate in meaning with the principal clause: *ny dylyut ti tremygv duw, yr hwnn ysyd lewenyd y dynyon ac egylyon* 'thou oughtest not to despise God, who is joy to men and angels' LlA 14. 3, *ac a doethant ar longeu hyd yg gvlad yr Eydal, yr hon a elwir yr avrhon gvlad Ruuein* 'and they came in ships to the land of Italy, which is now called the land of Rome' BD 3. 8–9, *E wisc honn a'dugum mi yty o baradwys, er honn a wiskych ditheu amdanat* 'This garment have I brought thee from Paradise, which thou shouldst put on' B x. 22. 20, *o amryv genedloed adar y savl ny ellit y rif* 'of various species of birds, which could not be counted' BD 49, 27, *Gronw Pebyr yw hwnn, y gwr yssyd arglwyd ar Benllyn* 'This is Gronw Bebyr, he who is lord of Penllyn' PKM 84. 19.

N. 1. The demonstratives *yr hwnn*, *yr honn*, &c., commonly occur before a relative clause, especially in translated works, and it appears that they were sometimes regarded as proper relative pronouns. Cf. the use of these pronouns in clauses where the relative is governed by a preposition, § 70 n. 2.

N. 2. In MW *yr hwnn* (masc.) is more widely used than at a later period. It occurs with the meanings of (*a*) *yr hynn* (neut.) and (*b*) *yr un* 'the one' (§ 97).

(*a*) *Mae ymma mab it . . . yr hwnn ny bu yt eiroet* 'There is here a son for thee—that which thou hast never had' PKM 23. 5–6, *Na uynhaf . . . un guerth, namyn yr hwnn a dyly, y grogi* 'I want no price, save that which is its due, to hang it' 63. 3, *yr hwnn a erchwch ymi nys gallafi* 'that which you ask of me, I cannot (do) it' LlA 113. 28 (= *yr hynn* BDe 15. 17–18), *yr hwnn a uo da genhyt ti malpei teu uei gwna arnaw* 'what pleases thee, as though it were thine, do with it' WM 487. 22–23, *Pelleas vrenhin a orchymynnwys dodi yn y llog yr hwnn a vei reit vdunt hwy* 'King Pelleas ordered to be put in the ship that which would be necessary for them' RB 2. 8.

(*b*) *yr hwn a uei o'r parth asseu a uydei o'r parth deheu* 'the one that was on the left side would be on the right' WM 455. 17–18, *y trydyd drws oed y gayat, yr hwnn y tu a Chernyw* 'the third door was closed, the one towards Cornwall' PKM 46. 23, *y march a rodher y'r offeirat teulu . . . a'r hwnn a rodher y'r croessaeneit* 'the horse that is given to the priest of the bodyguard, and the one that is given to the jesters' LlB 19. 7.

(*b*) Part of the principal clause: *pa delw y gallei uot yr* (ms. *yn*) *hynn a dywedeisti gynt wrthyf i* 'how that might be which thou didst once tell me of' PKM 87. 10, *Pa dal a geiff y nep a'e traetho ef ynn teilwg* 'What reward will he who shall treat it worthily receive?' LlA 23. 30, *a thrayan yt y sawl a ffohont o'r wlat* 'and a third of the corn of those who flee from the country' LlB 48. 11, *madws oed y mi caffael iawn gan y gwr y keueis ouut gantaw* 'it is high time for me to have redress from him through whom I have suffered ill' PKM 90. 22, *Nawd brenhines yw dwyn y dyn y rotho nawd ydaw dros ffynn y wlat* 'The protection of the queen is to convey the person to whom she grants protection over the boundary of the country' LlB 6. 13, *a dywedy di imi y peth a ouynnaf it yr dyw* 'wilt thou for God's sake tell me that which I ask of thee?' WM 453. 30.

§ 75. Ar is a demonstrative, and like *yr hwnn*, &c., serves as antecedent to a relative clause (see WG 298–9, RC xxxi. 356–64, L & P 220); it may be sing. or pl.: *Jolune ar a beir* 'Let us praise Him who creates' BBC 88. 12, *Nyt atwna Duw ar a wnel* 'God will not undo that which he has done' CLlH 26. 30^{c}, *Yno kyrcheist. ar a gereist. o rei goreu* 'There thou broughtest those whom thou lovedst of the best' R 1202. 4, *ual y kwplao Duw ar ny allom ni y gwplau* 'that God may accomplish that which we cannot accomplish' B v. 218. 26, *Ac a uynnwys bedyd o'r Sarascinyeit, a adwys Charlys yn vyw. Ac ar nys mynnwys a ladawd* 'And (those) of the Saracens who desired baptism Charles left alive. But those who desired it not, he slew' YCM 3. 22–24, *Ar ny deryw o'r wled . . . treülwch chwi* 'That which has not been spent of the feast, do you continue with it' PKM 50. 27.

N. 1. *Ar* is a form of the article *yr* (§ 27).

The combination of *y* 'to' + *ar* assumes the form *y'r*: *y rei a vac kerd a hun y'r a gysco ar eu glanneu* 'which bring song and slumber to those who sleep on their banks' BD 2. 13, *ac aruthred uyd y'r a'e hedrycho* 'and how terrible will it be for those who shall look at it' 116. 4.

Most often *ar* occurs with the preposition *o* 'of', in the form *o'r*: *o'r a welsei ef o helgwn y byt* 'of those he had seen of the hounds

of the world' PKM 1. 20. *o'r* is most commonly found after the superlative adjective (§ 47), *pawb* 'everybody' (§ 106), *pob* 'every' + noun, *llawer* 'many' (§ 109), *neb* 'any one' (§ 116), *dim* 'anything' (§ 117), *cwbyl* 'all' (§ 108), *un* 'one' + noun (§ 97), *holl* 'all' + noun (§ 107 *b*): *yr ymadrawd teckaf . . . o'r a allei* 'the fairest words he could' BR 5. 8, *a phawb o'r a'e guelei* 'every one who saw him' PKM 43. 15, *pob creadur o'r a wnaethpwyt* 'every creature that was made' LlA 4. 24, *ym pob gwlat o'r y ry fuum* 'in every land I have been in' WM 144. 13, *llaver o'r a dyanghey* 'many who escaped' BD 6. 26, *neb o'r a'(e) guelei* 'any one that saw them' PKM 70. 10, *dim o'r a erchynt* 'anything they asked for' B v. 217. 24, *cwbyl o'r a ercheist* 'all that thou didst ask for' WM 618. 13–14, *Ny warandawafi . . . un geir o'r a del o'th benn di* 'I shall not listen to one word that comes from thy mouth' B x. 56. 17.

N. 2. *o'r a* became *a'r a*, which is common in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, e.g. in the Welsh Bible. It seems that this development had taken place in MW; note the following examples: *Am bob gair ar a ddywawd* 'For every word he spoke' GDG 363. 36, *Pob odyn ar ny bo piben idi* 'Every kiln that has not a pipe' LlB 50. 26, *y gan y neb ar a vedyccinnaetho* 'from the one whom he attends' 117. 9–10, *ef a edyf dyn lawer peth ar nys kywiro* 'a man will promise many things which he will not fulfil' B ii. 29. 30, *y deu ar a oedynt yn y warchadw* 'the two that were guarding him' Hg MSS ii. 135. 32.

N. 3. *o'r* is not always found after the above pronominals: *O bop anreith a del y'r porth* 'Of every spoil that comes to the gate' LlB 24. 21.

N. 4. Occasionally these pronominals are followed by the preposition in the form *oc*, which immediately precedes the relative clause without the demonstrative *ar*: *y manach goreu y greuyd oc yssyd yn y ty hwnn* 'the monk of the best order that is in this house' SG 108. 22–23, *pawb oc a'e darlleo* 'all who may read it' LlA 160. 3–4, *pob iar oc a uo yn y ty* 'every hen that shall be in the house' LlB 86. 14, *am bob lle oc y dylyei hayarn uot arnunt* 'at every place where there should be iron upon them' RM 62. 2 (= *pob lle y dylyei* PKM 70. 12), *llawer oc a weles y gwyrtheu hynny* 'many who saw those miracles' VST 38. 2, *dim oc a welych* 'anything thou shalt see' SG 241. 19, *vn geinawc oc yssyd yn y dref* 'one penny that is in the town' YBH 51. 3277.

§ 76. Yn occurs before a clause denoting place or time (cf. Ir. *a n-*, see L & P 220).

Place, 'where, whither': *ymchwelut yn yd oed Pwyll* 'he returned to where Pwyll was' PKM 10. 6, *dyuot a wnaeth yn yd oed y cawc*

'he came to where the bowl was' 56. 15, *wedy daruot torri pob un yn y doi y dywyssen o'r keleuyn* 'after each one had been broken off where the ear came from the stalk' 59. 13, *mi . . . a af gyt a thi yn y mae y marchawc* 'I will go along with thee to where the knight is' WM 131. 34–35, *A'r vorwyn a doeth yn yd oed Peredur* 'And the maiden came to where Peredur was' 148. 20.

ny (< *yn y*): *ny caei graf ar yr amranneu* 'where he got a grip on the eyelids' PKM 32. 4.

Time, 'when, while': *teirfford y deuant etiued ar duw yn y dyuyd pawb y'r vrawt gyhed* 'by three ways will mankind come to God, when all shall come to the general judgement' R 1144. 37, *eny doeth y dyd yn yd oed amlvc gvelet meint yr aerua a wnathoedyt* 'until the day came when it was easy to behold the extent of the slaughter that had been done' BD 10. 22, *yn yd oedynt vrivedic a lladedic y wyr y foes Trahayarn* 'when his men had been wounded and killed Trahaearn fled' 71. 11, *yn yd aeth pawb ym pen yr arueu, y kynhelis Bendigeiduran Uranwen* 'while every one reached for arms, Bendigeidfran supported Branwen' PKM 44. 6–7.

yn pan, OW *in pan aed bid ad ir loc guac* 'when it reaches the empty space' Comp, MW *Neu'n doeth adail mad yn pan y'th gafad* 'There came to us a firm edifice when thou wert got' HGCr 14. 3. On *pan*, see § 273.

§ 77. A relative clause may be used without an expressed antecedent. Such clauses may be:

(*a*) Independent, occurring at the head of the sentence (§ 78).

(*b*) Subject: *Ny bu yn y llys nys guypei* 'There was not in the court (any one who) did not know of it' PKM 74. 10, *gwir yw a dywedaf i yrot ti a'th vrawt* 'true it is what I say between thee and thy brother' LlB 38. 14.

(*c*) Object: *Keis a'th lado* 'Seek who may slay thee' PKM 6. 2, *coffa a dywedeis wrthyt* 'remember what I told thee' 86. 2.

(*d*) Governed by a preposition: *cael attep am a ercheis* 'to get an answer to what I asked' PKM 15. 20, *mi a uydaf wrth a dywedeisti* 'I will abide by what thou didst say' 50. 19, *Titheu a elly gyfnewit yr a uo guell* 'Thou mayest exchange for that which is better' 70. 18.

The relative clause may follow *ac* when this is used after the equative adjective (§ 43): *gwedy gwyr kystal ac a'e gwarchetwis gynt* 'after men as good as those that kept it of yore' BR 7. 2, *A'r wreic a geiff o'r blawt kymeint ac a allo y dwyn rwg y dwylaw* 'And the wife shall have of the meal as much as she can carry between her hands' LlB 65. 30, *y wahavd odyno kymeint ac a uynnych* 'to invite from there as many as thou wilt' BD 93. 24, *Gwedia yn gyhyt ac y mynych* 'Pray for as long as thou wilt' B x. 57. 30.

The same construction may occur with a superlative adjective: *yv ueithrin o hvnnv en amgeledussaf ac e gallei* 'to be reared by him as carefully as he could' B x. 21, *a mynet lys arthur gyntaf ac y gellych* 'and go to Arthur's court as speedily as thou canst' WM 614. 17. The clause, however, may immediately follow the superlative without *ac*: *goreu a allo uyth a wna inni* 'the best he can ever will he do for us' PKM 25. 4, *wynt a welynt castelldref deccaf a welsei neb eiroet* 'they could see a walled town, the fairest anyone had ever seen' WM 433. 6, *y maent yn kyrchu y tir yn gyntaf a allont* 'they are making for the land as speedily as they can' PKM 82. 16, *a'y chynhal yn oreu a allom* 'and defend it as best we can' 82. 18, *a'th gyrchu a wna yn gyntaf y gallo* 'and he will make for thee as speedily as he can' WM 231. 4. On the use of *o'r* with the superlative, see § 75; see also Melville Richards, B ix. 135–44.

N. *kynifer* 'as many', *kyfryw* 'such', and *un* 'same' are generally used without *ac* before a relative clause: *y gyniuer collet a gollyssynt eiryoet, a'r gyniuer car a chedymdeith a gollyssynt, a'r gyniuer drwc a dothoed udunt* 'as many losses as they had ever sustained, and as many kinsmen and friends as they had missed, and as many ills as had come to them' PKM 47. 14–16, *y gnifer gwys a tremycco* 'as many summonses as he shall contemn' LlB 76. 12, *y kyfryw dyn a dywedy di* 'a man such as thou tellest of' WM 458. 20, *y kyfryw varchawc yd oed ef yn y ol* 'such a knight as he was pursuing' 138. 19, *en er vn fwrn e bwryassei enteu e vab* 'in the same furnace that he had cast his son into' B ix. 146. 1; but *y kyfryw vwyt ac a oed ganthaw* 'such food as he had' SG 200. 20, *yr vn atteb ac a rodassei gynt* 'the same answer as he had given before' BDe 14. 21 (= *a rodes* LlA 113. 13).

§ 78. The relative clause often occurs independently at the beginning of a sentence; the principal clause which follows contains a pronoun or a personal form which refers back to the antecedent

of the relative clause: *a'r arglwydiaeth a gaussam ninheu y ulwydyn honno, nys attygy y gennym* 'and the rule we have had that year, thou wilt not withhold it from us' PKM 8. 15; with *yr hwnn*, &c., as antecedent (§ 74): *A'r honn a dylyei kelu e gyvrinach, honno a'e menegis e'r archdiagon* 'And the one who ought to conceal the secret, it was she who told it to the archdeacon' B x. 21, *ar ny ellych di y gwplav, evo a'e kwplaa* 'what thou canst not accomplish, he shall accomplish (it)' v. 218. 28; with the antecedent not formally expressed (§ 77): *A wnaethost . . . yrof i, Duw a'y talo itt* 'What thou hast done for me, may God repay it thee' PKM 6. 21–22, *a del yma o Gymry, carchara wynt* 'such as come hither from Wales, imprison them' 38. 4, *ac a geueis, mi a'e crogaf* 'and the one I have got, I will hang (it)' 61. 7.

If the clause is adverbial (§ 71), the antecedent is referred to by an adverb in the principal clause: *Lle y perthyno reith gwlat, yno y dyly y brenhin kymell reithwyr . . .* 'Where a *rhaith* of the country is requisite, then the king is to compel the compurgators . . .' LlB 106. 22.

THE INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN

§ 79. Independent, *pwy* (Ir. *cía*) < $*q^{u}ei$. Dependent, *pa, py*. The interrogative pronoun is followed by a relative construction, except when it serves as predicate in a nominal sentence: *Pwy yw y gwr?* 'Who is the man?', *mi a wnn pwy wyt ti* 'I know who thou art' PKM 2. 8.

N. In some early examples the pronoun is not followed by a relative construction: *Puy guant cath Paluc* 'Who wounded Paluc's cat?' BBC 96. 14.

§ 80. Pwy: *gwybydwch pwy a dylyo bot yn wyr ymi* 'know ye who ought to be my vassals' PKM 6. 7.

N. 1. Note the following examples: *pwy y marchawc gynneu* 'who was the rider just now?' BR 8. 14, *pwy y vydin burwenn racco* 'what is the pure white troop yonder?' 9. 20–21, *Pwy . . . y trywyr diwethaf a deuthant att Arthur* 'Who are the last three men who came to Arthur?' 18. 25–26, *Pwy y gwr gwineu* 'Who is the auburn-haired man?' 20. 6–7, *Pwy ef hwnnw* 'Who is that?' WM 474. 6, *pwy y crist y credy di idaw* 'who is the Christ in whom thou believest?' Hg MSS ii. 40. 35. These may be

explained as pure nominal sentences, with *pwy* meaning 'who?' or 'what?'. It often occurs in this construction with *enw* 'name' as subject: *Pwy eu henw wy?* 'What is their name?' PKM 68. 18, *Pwy enw dy uab dy?* 'What is thy son's name?' 79. 1, *pwy dy lyssenw* 'what is thy nickname?' BR 4. 26, LlA 166. 14, SG 74. 26, 136. 27, 189. 3, 210. 36, 223. 1, 19, &c., Hg MSS ii. 40. 25, B ix. 227. 9. The form *pwy* in such examples has been explained as consisting of *py* 'what' and *wy*, a variant of *yw* 'is' (see WG 289). It may, however, be taken as the simple form *pwy* meaning 'what?'. Occasionally the copula is used with it in such sentences: *pwy yw dy enw di* 'what is thy name?' LlA 128. 13, *A gofyn pwy oed y enw* 'And asked what was his name' WM 144. 8, also SG 26. 8, 96. 4, 200. 37, 217. 6, 233. 12, 262. 23.

N. 2. Examples occur of the adjectival use of *pwy*: *Pwy ystyr yw gennyt ti kelu dy blant ragof i* 'What reason hast thou to hide thy child from me?' WM 454. 5, *pwy ystyr nas agory ti* 'what reason (is there) that thou wilt not open it?' 456. 13, 486. 26 (= *pa ystyr*; *py ystyr* RM 101. 25; 103. 13, 126. 14).

§ 81. Pa, Py, adjectival: *Pa ansyberwyt . . . a weleist ti arnaf i* 'What discourtesy hast thou seen in me?' PKM 2. 13, *Pa uab yssyd i'th ol di* 'What boy follows thee?' 78. 23.

It commonly forms interrogative expressions with certain nouns and adjectives:

(*a*) Nouns of time, place, manner.

(1) Time 'when?', &c., with *amser, pryt, dyd, awr*: *Pa awr y ganet ef* 'What hour was He born?' LlA 17. 19.

(2) Place 'where?', &c., with *lle, tu* 'side': *Pa le y bu Babel* 'Where was Babel?' LlA 44. 14, *y gymryt kynghor ba tu yd arhoynt Pryderi a guyr y Deheu* 'to take counsel on what side they should await Pryderi and the men of the South' PKM 72. 8.

(3) Manner 'how?', &c., with *ffordd, delw, gwed, ffuryf, ansawd, mod*: *pa furyf y caf i dy gerennyd di* 'how shall I win thy friendship?' PKM 2. 27, *pa delw y gellit dy lad ditheu* 'in what way couldst thou be slain?' 86. 24, *medylyav a oruc pa wed y galley eu rydhau* 'he considered how he could free them' BD 8. 7, *yn gouyn ydav pa ansavd y cavssey dyuot o garchar Brutus* 'asking him how he had been allowed to come from Brutus's prison' 9. 5.

(*b*) The pronominals *un* (§ 97), *rei* (§ 101): *Pa rei uu y rei hynny* 'Which ones were those?' LlA 17. 27.

(*c*) The equative adjective: *py gybellet odyma yw y cruc* 'how far from here is the mound?' WM 154. 25; also *pa ryw | kyfryw* 'what manner of' (§§ 99, 100 *b*), *pa veint | kymeint* 'how much | many' (§ 102), *pa sawl* 'how many' (§ 103).

§ 82. *Pa* is commonly used with *peth* 'thing': *Pa beth a dessyfuch chwi ygennyfi* 'What do you request from me?' B ix. 328. 20, *Pa beth a wnnant wy* 'What do they do?' LlA 66. 17.

Peth, beth occurs as an interrogative without *pa*: *A wdost ti peth wyt* 'Dost thou know what thou art?' BT 27. 25, *y edrych beth yssyd yndi* 'to see what is in it' PKM 55. 13, *beth a wney di yma* 'What doest thou here?' 57. 7.

N. There are examples where *pa beth, beth* seem to mean (*a*) 'why', (*b*) 'how'. (*a*) *Arglwyd . . . beth a chwerdy di?* 'Lord, why (at what) art thou laughing?' BR 6. 27, *Beth a ovynny di imi o'r mab* 'Why dost thou ask me about the youth?' Hg MSS ii. 123. 20–21. (*b*) *Pa beth a bechawd yr engylyon ereill* 'In what way did the other angels transgress?' LlA 7. 11, *Beth a bechawd Judas yr y rodi yntev* 'How did Judas transgress in delivering Him?' 19. 16.

§ 83. There are some examples, mainly from the early period, of *pa, py* used substantivally, meaning 'what?': *Pa roteiste o'th olud* 'What didst thou give of thy wealth?' BBC 20. 7, *py gynheil y byt* 'what supports the world?' BT 80. 10, *Y mawr drugarawc Duw, pa wnaf?* 'Great, merciful God, what shall I do?' CLlH 36. 30^{c}, *Pa daruu . . . y Gradawc uab Bran . . .* 'What happened to Cradawc son of Bran?' PKM 45. 27, *pa derw ytti?* 'what has happened to thee?' 67. 21, *gofynnant y'r Saesson py geissyssant* 'they ask the English what they sought' AP 5. 133, *hyt na vydat . . . pa wnai* 'so that she knew not what she would do' WM 423. 14, *Pa wnaf inheu y Iessu yr hvnn a dyvedir Crist* 'What shall I do to Jesus, who is called Christ?' B xiv. 261. 20.

N. 1. *Pathawr* (for *pa'th ðawr* § 162): *pathawr heb ynteu henbydy kyuoethogach* 'What does it matter to thee?' said he, 'thou wilt be all the richer' WM 430. 11.

N. 2. There are a few early examples of *pa | py* meaning 'why': *Duw reen py bereist lyvwr* 'Lord God, why hast thou made a coward?' R 1032. 31, *pe dawant anant* 'why are the bards silent?' LlHen 1. 11, *Ha uab py*

liuy ti 'O son, why dost thou blush?' WM 454. 24, *Pa nad ystyriwn poen dosturus?* 'Why do we not consider grievous pain?' GDG 4. 32.

The form *pyr* (< *py*+*ry*) occurs: *pyr ddywettwn parabyl* 'why should I say a word?' Ll Hen 308. 3, *pir puyllut-te hun* 'why shouldst thou think of sleep?' BBC 49. 12. It also functions as a conjunction meaning 'that, because' (cf. *pan* § 87): *Gvae vi pir imteith genhide in kyueith* 'Woe is me that I have journeyed with thee as companion' BBC 22. 10, *Guae tidi hewid, pir doduid im bid* 'Woe art thou also, that thou hast come into the world' HGCr 6. 12. It is important to distinguish between *pyr* (< *py ry*) and *pyr* (< *py yr* § 84 *a*); the one comes immediately before the verb, while a pre-verbal particle is required with the other.

§ 84. THE INTERROGATIVE GOVERNED BY A PREPOSITION. Three constructions are found in MW:

(*a*) The preposition may be placed immediately after the interrogative *pa*, *py*. The following prepositions are attested in this construction: *am* 'about, for', in the form *paham* 'why': *paham e dugavch chui er eneit hvnn* 'why did ye take this soul?' B x. 23. 5, also *pam* (a contraction of *pa am*): *Pam y kymerwn ninheu hynny gan y tayogeu lladron* 'Why should we take that from the thieving villeins?' PKM 54. 25; *ar* 'on': *py ar yt gwydei* 'on what would it fall?' BT 80. 11, *pa-h-ar* AL i. 108. 20; *at* 'to': *Py att* AL ii. 316. 17; *herwyd* 'according to': *pa herwyd* LlDW 134. 14; *yr* 'for, because', in the form *pyr* (< *py yr*): *pyr na thr(a)ethwch traethawt* 'why do you not make a statement?' BT 19. 12, *pyr na'm dyweyt* 'why will you not tell me?' 27. 16; it occurs with the meaning 'that, because': *a thitheu ny bo teu dy benn pyr y kyuerchy di* 'and thou, may thy head not be thine, that thou dost ask' WM 456. 3 (also 486. 25 = *py rac* RM 126. 14); *rac* 'for, because': *pa rac na'm kyueirch* 'why does it not seek me?' BBC 50. 4, *Pa rac yd aflonydy ti arnaf vi* 'Why dost thou disturb me?' B ix. 147. 21, *Pa rac y lleuesseisti . . . y grogi ef yn enwir* 'Why didst thou dare to crucify Him unjustly?' xiv. 270. 31. This construction, which is found also in Breton and Cornish, belongs mainly to the early MW period, but the use of *paham*, *pam* has survived to this day.

Pa diw. This expression probably consists of the interrogative pronoun and a pronominal form of the preposition *y* 'to', OW *di* (in OW *padiu* occurs as a gloss on *quid*, see IEW 48): *Padiw yt*

rodir | Meirch vym brodyr ac eu tir 'To whom are given the steeds of my brothers and their land?' CLlH 43. 78[b], *geyr eu y eyr padyu y rodes* 'his word is word (decides) to whom he gave it' ZCP xx. 51. 8, *ac yn pedrus ganthav o'r diwed pa diw y damwenyei y uudugolyaeth* 'and he was doubtful at last to whom the victory would fall' BD 19. 5. The use of *y* 'to' with *pa diw* suggests that the second element was no longer understood: *ni a adnabydwn y bydiw y bo gorderch dec idaw* 'we shall know to whom there be a fair concubine' YCM 49. 31, *Edrychwch . . . y py diw yd oedewch yn credu* 'See in whom ye were believing' YBH 64. 4163–4.

It occurs as relative (cf. *pan, pieu*, §§ 87, 88): *gwynn y vyt pydiw y rodir kerennyd duw a hoedyl hir* 'blessed is he to whom are given God's friendship and long life' R 1056. 42. In OW *issit padiu itau gulat* occurs as a gloss on *est cui regia* Juv.

N. With *pa diw*, cf. Corn. *py gansse* 'by whom', *gansse* being the 3. pl. form of *gan* 'by, with'; see L & P 228, LlCC 36.

(*b*) The interrogative may be followed by a relative clause containing a personal form of the preposition (on this construction, see § 70): *a pha wlat yd hanwyt titheu oheni* 'and from what land dost thou come?' PKM 2. 25, *A pha ryw weith yd wyte yndaw, Arglwyd* 'And what kind of work art thou at, Lord?' 62. 2, *A pha duw y credy di yndaw* 'And what god dost thou believe in?' B ix. 327. 4.

(*c*) The preposition may be placed before the interrogative, thus: *dala ar ymdidan a orugant am benn y carw y bwy y rodit* 'they debated concerning the stag's head, to whom it should be given' WM 402. 40–42, *y bwy y credy di* 'in whom dost thou believe?' VST 31. 21, *yny allo ef . . . ystyryeit o ba betheu y dylyo amovyn ac ef* 'that he may be able to consider about what matters he ought to inquire of him' B vii. 371. 26.

§ 85. Pet 'how many?', in early MW; it was later superseded by *pa sawl* (§ 103): *pet wynt, pet ffreu, pet auon* 'how many winds, how many streams, how many rivers' BT 20. 22–23, *pet dyd ym blwydyn, pet paladyr yg kat, pet dos yg kawat* 'how many days in a year, how many spears in a battle, how many drops in a shower' 22. 1–2, *pet deilen yssyd* 'how many leaves there are' 28. 2.

§ 86. Cwt, Cw(d) 'where?, whence?, whither?', early MW: *cw mae eu kenedloed* 'where are their families?' AP 5. 136, *A wdosti cwd uyd nos yn arhos dyd* 'Dost thou know where the night is awaiting the day?' BT 28. 1, *mor, cv threia* 'the sea, whither it ebbs' BBC 88. 8, *mynet a oruc y brenhin yg kyghor kwt gaffei wreic* 'the king took counsel where he might get a wife' WM 453. 14, *kwt ynt plant y gwr . . .* 'where are the children of the man?' 453. 31, *Neu chwitheu kwt ymdewch* 'And you, where are you going?' 477. 9.

§ 87. Pan (Ir. *can*). It was originally interrogative, meaning 'whence?': *Arglwydes . . . pan doy di . . . ?* 'Lady, whence comest thou?' PKM 12. 13, *pan doeth yti y peir a rodeist y mi?* 'whence came to thee the cauldron thou hast given to me?' 35. 2, *Pan deuy titheu vy chwaer* 'Whence comest thou, my sister?' WM 138. 10–11, *Pan doy ti vnben* 'Whence comest thou, chieftain?' 150. 7, *Pan doy ti wr* 'Whence comest thou, fellow?' 486. 11. *Pan* may be repeated in the answer: *'Pan doy di, yr yscolheic?' heb ef. 'Pan doaf, Arglwyd, o Loygyr o ganu'* '"Whence comest thou, clerk?" said he. "I come, Lord, from song-making in Lloegyr"' PKM 61. 22, *'a phan doy titheu?' 'Pan deuaf,' heb ef, 'o lys Arthur'* '"and whence comest thou?" "I come," said he, "from Arthur's court"' WM 168. 23.

As well as serving to introduce an interrogative sentence, *pan* occurs as relative in an interrogative sentence, as follows: *'Py le pan deuy ti?' heb y marchawc. 'Pan deuaf o lys Arthur'* '"Whence comest thou?" asked the knight. "I come from Arthur's court"' WM 125. 36, *O ba genedyl pan wyt tti?* 'Of what race art thou?' B ix. 327. 1, *ae o bysgotta pan deuy di?* 'is it from fishing that thou comest?' YCM 81. 5–6. Later *pan* was superseded by *y(d)* in this construction: *O ba le yd hanwyt ti?* 'From what place dost thou come?' B vii. 371. 23.

In non-interrogative sentences we find *pan* used as relative after a noun governed by the preposition *o* 'from, of', with the meaning 'whence, that': *O vreithyell Gatraeth pan adrodir* 'Of the land of Catraeth it is related' CA 6. 131, *O ulodeu Lleu ban yw hynn* 'From Lleu's flowers doth this come' (lit. 'that this is')

PKM 89. 28, *Nyt o vam a that pan ym digonat* 'Not of mother and father was I made' BT 25. 21, *o vrthdir uffern pan hanoed y gwyr* 'from the uplands of hell did the men come' WM 461. 4, *o Freinc pan wyf* 'from France am I' B v. 210. 27.

Pan developed into a simple conjunction meaning 'that', and can be used when neither the interrogative nor the preposition *o* precedes: *ny wydyem pan oed ti a grogem* 'we knew not that it was thou we were crucifying' HGCr 13. 68. The use of *pan yw* 'that it is' is very common, and is found even when the verb of the following clause is past or future: *A gwybot a wnaeth Arthur pan yw hynny a uedylyei Owein* 'And Arthur knew that it was of that Owein was thinking' BR 12. 16–17, *o debygu . . . pan yv Yago Ebostol oed ef* 'by supposing that he was James the Apostle' B x. 24. 37, *Ac eissyoes Charlymaen a atnabu pan yw twyll oed hynny* 'And nevertheless Charlemagne knew that that was a deceit' Hg MSS ii. 28. 14, *yr hwnn a dywawt wrthunt pan yw dyn oed Grist ac nat Duw* 'who told them that Christ was man and not god' FfBO 35. 7. Later *pan yw* was superseded in this construction by *mae*, *taw*, §§ 144, 148 *b* 3.

§ 88. Pieu. This form consists of *pi* (which represents an oblique case of *pwy*, or possibly an unstressed form of it, cf. Ir. *ci*, *ce*, besides *cía*, GOI 286, 292) and *eu* (a variant of *wy* / *yw* § 6 n. 4). It was originally interrogative, meaning 'whose is?, who owns?', as in the following examples: *Pieu yniuer y llongeu hynn* 'Whose is this host of ships?' PKM 30. 12, *pieu y vydin racko* 'whose is yonder troop?' BR 7. 10, *a dywedy di y mi pieu y dyffryn tec hwnn a'r castelldref racco* 'wilt thou tell me who owns this fair valley and yonder walled town?' WM 433. 16–18, *Pieu y deueit a getwy di neu pieu y gaer* 'Whose are the sheep thou tendest, or whose is the fort?' 473. 7–8. *Pi-* is found with other forms of the verb 'to be': *Piwyt gwr di* 'To whom art thou a man?' SG 222. 31, *Hi a ovynnawd idaw pioed mab* 'She asked him whose son he was' 12. 36, *gouyn a wnaeth pioed y meirch* 'he asked whose horses they were' PKM 31. 22–23.

Like *pan*, *pieu* also developed into a relative: *yr unben bieu y llys* 'the chieftain whose court it is' PKM 85. 27, *y neb pieu y gelein*

'the one whose body it is' WM 474. 4. It is most commonly found in sentences of the mixed or abnormal order (§§ 146, 199): *minneu bieu y dwy iarllaeth* 'it is I who own the two earldoms' RM 239. 11; *pioedynt: nyt oed deu di yr un onadunt, namyn duw bioedynt* 'neither of them was thine, but it was God who owned them' SG 426. 5.

N. Only one example is attested of *pi-* before a verb other than the verb 'to be'; it serves as a relative in an interrogative sentence: *pa sserenn pi gurth(r)et loyr* 'what star (is it) to which the moon runs opposite?' Comp.

§ 89. From a fairly early period, the basic meaning of *pieu* was lost sight of, and it was taken as a sort of verbal stem, to which were added various forms of the verb 'to be'. The following formations are found in MW: Indic. pres. pl. 3. *piewynt* PKM 68. 22; fut. sing. 3. *pieiuyd* LlB 52. 21, pl. 1. *pieifydwn* YCM 64. 29; imperf. sing. 2. *pieuoetud* MA 164^{b}29, 3. *pieuoed* RM 196. 19, *piewoed* WM 121. 13, *piewed* 129. 13, *piowed* 178. 4, *pieoed* 135. 9, *pieuat* (*pieu* + *at* § 132 *b* 2) CLlH 36. 23^{b}; sec. fut. sing. 3. *pieivydei* SG 324. 15; pret. sing. 3. *pieiuu* WM 394. 31, *pieuu* 394. 33. Subj. pres. sing. 3. OW *piouboi* (see B xiii. 205), MW *pieiffo* LlB 115. 29, pl. 3. *pieiffont* 5. 14; imperf. sing. 3. *pieiffei* BD. 140. 30.

Occasionally these forms are used transitively: *ni a'e pieifydwn* 'we shall possess them' YCM 64. 29.

§ 90. Pwy bynnac, &c. *Pynnac* commonly occurs with *pwy* 'who', *beth* 'what', or *pa* 'what' + noun / pronoun, to denote the indefinite relative, 'whosoever, whatsoever', &c. Like the interrogative, the expression is generally followed by a relative construction.

Pwy bynnac, &c., and the clause following it usually precede the principal clause. The latter contains a pronoun or a personal form which refers back to the indefinite relative: *A phwy bynnac a goffao yr angheu yn wastat, ef a gyll y vywyt ehun* 'And whosoever continually thinks of death, he will lose his own life' B ii. 30. 21, *a phvy bynnac ny chattuo y ffyd honn . . . ny byd idav ymwaret* 'and whosoever shall not keep this faith, there will be no deliverance for him' v. 203. 14, *a pha beth bennac a weles e lleill en e wneithur, enteu a'e goruc* 'and whatsoever he saw the others do,

he also did it' ix. 145. 7–8, *pa beth bynnac a geffych . . . kymer ef yn llawen* 'whatever thou shalt get, take it gladly' ii. 30. 22.

N. 1. The principal clause does not always contain a reference to *pwy bynnac*, &c.: *Pa ymouyn bynnac a uei ganthunt wy y wrth y uorwyn, y chwedleu ereill y trossei ynteu* 'Whatever questions came from them concerning the maiden, he would turn to other matters' PKM 13. 13–14, *Beth bynnac o garueidrwyd a wei y rungthunt y dyd, ni bu unnos hyt ym pen y ulwydyn amgen noc a uu y nos gyntaf* 'Whatever affection was between them during the day, there was not one night to the year's end different from what the first night was' 5. 3–5. This is common when the clause is adverbial: *By hyt bynnac y buant ar y fford, wynt a doethant y Dyuet* 'However long they were on the way, they came to Dyfed' PKM 55. 3.

N. 2. Occasionally the pronoun which refers back to *pwy bynnac*, &c., is pl.: *a phwy bynnac a el y fford yno, wynt a uvydhaant ytti* 'and whosoever shall go that way, (they) will do thee homage' VST 34. 22, *A phvy bynnac a gueithredoed da gantav a ordiwedher, y rei hynny a ant y teyrnas gvlat nef* 'And whosoever shall be found with good deeds, (they) shall go to the kingdom of the land of heaven' B v. 203. 11.

N. 3. A verb may come between *pa* and *bynnac*, as in the following example: *Py diaspettych ti bynhac am gyfreitheu llys Arthur* 'However much thou mayest shout about the laws of Arthur's court' WM 457. 17.

N. 4. *Py diw bynhac* (§ 84 *a*): *Py diw bynhac y barnher datanhud* 'to whomsoever *dadannudd* (a title to land) shall be adjudged' LlB 72. 14.

N. 5. *Pieiffo bynnac* (§ 89): *pyeufo benac e chun* 'whoever may own the dogs' (lit. 'to whomsoever the dogs may be') ZCP xx. 81. 32.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN

§ 91. Sing. masc. *hwnn* 'this', fem. *honn*, neut. *hynn*; pl. *hynn*. Extended forms, sing. masc. *hwnnw* 'that', fem. *honno*, neut. *hynny*; pl. *hynny*. *Hwnn*, &c., is used of someone or something which is near in time or place; *hwnnw*, &c., of someone or something further removed, cf. *this*, *that*; *hic*, *ille*. When used of persons, *hwnn*, *honn*, *hwnnw*, *honno* often have the force of personal pronouns, but with a certain emphasis. Demonstrative pronouns may be substantival or adjectival.

(*a*) Substantival: *Rolant vy nei yw hwnn* 'This is Rolant my nephew' B v. 210. 28, *A honn a etholeis inheu* 'And (it was) she that I elected' x. 32. 10, *E neb a duc daoed ereill . . . teilung yu e hvnnv e dodi en vn lle ac Idas vradwr* 'He who took the possessions

of others, it is right for him to be put in the same place as the traitor Judas' x. 26. 2, *Riannon uy mam yssyd yno. Mi a rodaf it honno* 'Rhiannon my mother is there. I will bestow her upon thee' PKM 49. 19.

(*b*) Adjectival. The article is used with the noun on which the demonstrative depends: *y gwr hwnn* 'this man', *y wreic honn* 'this woman', *y pryf hwnnw* 'that creature' PKM 63. 14, *er anreuydodeu henne* 'those wonders' B ix. 335. 27.

N. 1. In the construction *hynn* / *hynny* + *o* 'of' + noun, the meaning is not appreciably different from that of the combination article + noun + demonstrative (see above), but the idea of 'such a', with an affective element, also seems to be indicated. This construction requires further investigation. Examples: *hynn o niuer* 'such a host as this' PKM 9. 9, *hynny o ginyaw* 'that feast' 46. 18, *hynny o yspeyt* 'that period' BD 12. 31, *hynny o obeith* 'that much hope' WM 183. 35, *hynn o weithret gwahardedic* 'this forbidden deed' LlA 132. 11, *henne o hun* 'that sleep' B x. 21, *hynn o gynghorev* 'these counsels' ii. 35. 30 (cf. *y kynghorev hynn*, l. 33), *hynny o wyrda* 'such nobles' v. 206. 36.

N. 2. The demonstrative may be used instead of a noun qualified by an adjective or dependent genitive, to avoid repetition (cf. *un* § 97 *a* 3): *Yr ystwffwl hwnn, a'r hwnn draw* 'This pillar and the one yonder' CLlH 19. 59[a], *emelltith Duw . . . a'r hon Gymry oll* 'the curse of God and that of all Wales' LlB 2. 11, *naud Duw a'r hon y brenhin* 'the protection of God and that of the king' 6. 2. For *yr hwnn* = *yr un*, see § 74 *a* n. 2 *b*. For the use of *yr hwnn* before a relative clause, see § 74.

§ 92. *Hynn, hynny* (sing.) are used to denote abstractions:

(*a*) Circumstance, event, thought, statement, question, reason, &c.: *'Beth yv hynn?' heb wynt* '"What is this?" said they' B x. 31. 20, *ryvedv hynny a oruc yr amerawdyr ehvn* 'the Emperor himself wondered at that' ix. 48. 17, *mi a wnaf hynny yn llawen* 'I will do that gladly' PKM 10. 24.

Hynny is often used instead of a nominal or verbal predicate with an adverb or adverbial expression, to avoid repetition; it is preceded by the conjunction *a* 'and': *a chyscu a wnaethpwyt genhyf, a hynny i'th ystauell ac i'th wely* 'and I was lain with, and that in thy chamber and thy bed' PKM 74. 13, *Ti yssyd iachwyavdyr paub, a hynny yn oes oessoed* 'Thou art saviour of all, and that for ever' B ix. 330. 34.

The prepositions *am, gan, o achaws, rac, wrth* are used with

hynn / hynny with the meaning 'because of this / that, accordingly, therefore'.

(*b*) Quantity or number: *kymeint a hynny* 'as much as that'.

(*c*) Quality or manner: *yn gynhebic y hynny* 'likewise' B ii. 30. 38; similarly *yn vn funut a hynny* ii. 35. 13, *val hynn / hynny, megys hynn / hynny*.

(*d*) Time, point or period of time. *Hynn* refers to present time, *hynny* usually to the past, but sometimes to the future: *yn hynny* PKM 74. 19, *ymysc hynny* BDe 10. 14, both meaning 'during that time, in the meantime', *e nos gynn no henne* 'the night before that' B ix. 338. 8–9, *wedy henne* 'after that, afterwards' ix. 337. 1, *hyt hynn* 'until now' ix. 327. 24, *ar hynny* 'thereupon' PKM 5. 19, *o law hynn* 'from now on, henceforth' B v. 217. 19 (*o law* § 232 *h*), similarly *o hynn allan* B x. 24. 10, *o hynny allan* 'from then on' PKM 8. 18.

§ 93. In MW (but not in ModW) *hynn, hynny* are used substantivally in the pl.: *ef a glywei llef erchwys arall, . . . a hynny yn dyuot yn erbyn y erchwys ef* 'he would hear the cry of another pack, and they (were) coming to meet his own pack' PKM 1. 13, *ny thebygaf i y un o hyn uynet ar dy geuyn di* 'I do not think anyone of these will go upon thy back' 25. 16, *Llyma eliwlu y byt o lygot; a chyfrif na messur ny ellit ar hynny* 'There was the mightiest host of mice in the world, and neither number nor measure could be set to them' 60. 6, *rei o hynny ysyd hedyv yn dyffeyth* 'some of these are today desolate' BD 2. 22.

More commonly, however, the pl. is expressed by *y rei hynn / hynny*, where *hynn / hynny* is adjectival, qualifying *rei* (§ 101): *Meirych Matholwch . . . yw y rei hyn* 'These are Matholwch's horses' PKM 31. 24, *Pa ryw aniueileit yw y rei hynny?* 'What kind of animals are those?' 68. 19, *Gwyr Llychlyn yw y rei hynny* 'Those are the men of Llychlyn' BR 9. 21–22, *Melineu a physcotlynneu beth a dalo y rei hynny yn y vlwydyn* 'Mills and fish-ponds, what are those worth in a year' B ii. 11. 6–7.

§ 94. Certain adverbial forms, such as *yma* 'here', *racko* 'yonder', &c., are used with *hwnn, honn, hynn*, to define more precisely the

meaning of the demonstrative: *o'r byt hwnn yma* 'from this world (here)' BDe 20. 19–20, *y geing honn yma* 'this branch (here)' PKM 65. 24, *y vorwyn honn yma* 'this maiden (here)' SG 143. 17, *Vy arglwydes i yw honn racko* 'That one yonder is my lady' RM 175. 26.

These adverbs and others are employed as demonstratives directly with nouns, without *hwnn*, &c.: *y daear yma* 'the earth here, this earth' BDe 23. 17, *y vydin burwenn racco* 'yonder pure white troop' BR 9. 21, *y marchawc gynneu* 'the rider just seen' 8. 15, *y gwas draw* 'yonder lad' CLlH 3. 12[a], *y deu gynt* 'the first two' WM 506. 15, *o'r gweithredoed uchot* 'of the above-mentioned deeds' B viii. 139. 3.

PRONOMINALIA

§ 95. Pronominals indicating alternatives may occur in two or more consecutive sentences, or within the same sentence. When they are definite, only two alternatives are possible; when they are indefinite, there may be more than two.

The pronominals may be substantival or adjectival.

(*a*) Substantival. (1) Definite: *y lleill, y neill . . . y llall, y lleill* 'the one . . . the other, others'; the first alternative is expressed by *yr un, y rei*, when followed by an adjective or relative clause, and in negative sentences. (2) Indefinite: *un* 'one', *rei* 'some' . . . *arall* 'other', *ereill* 'others'.

Examples: *bydwch y lleill yn uaed coed, a'r llall yn garnen coet* 'be the one of you a wild boar and the other a wild sow' PKM 75. 22–23, *yny orfei y lleill ar y llall* 'till the one should vanquish the other' WM 408. 4 (= *y neill ar y llall* Pen 6, p. 204. 25), *Deu ychen bannawc y lleill yssyd o'r parth hwnt y'r mynyd bannawc a'r llall o'r parth hwnn* 'The two horned oxen, one is on the other side of Mynydd Bannawg, and the other on this side' 480. 35–37, *Ac yn gyflym y lladawd y neill o'r gweisson, ac yn y lle y lladawd y llall* 'He quickly slew one of the youths, and forthwith slew the other' RM 191. 1–2, *A'r vn y bydei borth ef idi a gollei y gware. A'r llall a dodei awr* 'And the one he supported lost the game, and the other gave a shout' WM 174–5, *y gwyr ny mynhei yr vn*

onnyt a vynnei y llall 'the men, one of whom desired nothing except what the other desired' LlA 68. 2, *Penneu rei a dygynt, llygeit ereill, a chlusteu ereill a breicheu ereill* 'Of some they were carrying off the heads, of others the eyes, of others the ears, and of others the arms' BR 15. 2–3.

(*b*) Adjectival. (1) Definite: *y lleill / y neill* + noun ... *y(r)* + noun + *arall / ereill, y llall.* (2) Indefinite: *un / ryw* + noun ... noun + *arall / ereill.*

Examples: *o'r lleill parth ... o'r parth arall* 'on the one hand ... on the other hand' WM 421–2, *malpei vot y neill person yn Duv a'r llall yn dyn* 'as though the one person were God and the other man' B v. 201. 12, *Or bwytey mywn un amser yn y dyd a symut hynny y amser arall* 'If thou eatest at one time in the day, and changest that to another time' MM 162. 4–5.

N. The first alternative may be expressed by the noun only, and the second by *y llall, arall,* noun + *arall, ereill*: *a llad o lwdyn y llall* 'and one beast kill another' LlB 86. 28, *Yn gynnebrwydet ac y trewit yr amrant ar y llall* 'As readily as the one eyelid would be struck on the other' LlA 5. 3, *o vrenhinaeth y arall* 'from one kingdom to another' B ix. 326. 9. The first alternative may contain a demonstrative, substantival or adjectival: *kanys yr hynn a vynnei hwnn nys mynnei y llall* 'for that which one desired the other desired not' SG 49. 16, *O'r nos honno hyt y llall ym penn y ulwydyn* 'From that night to the same night (lit. 'other') at the end of a year' WM 470. 21–23, *Y gware hwnnw a teruynwyt a dechreu arall* 'That game was ended and another begun' BR 13. 25.

§ 96. (*a*) *Y neill* (adjectival) occurs without *llall, arall,* with the meaning 'one (of two)': *a'r neill droet idav* 'and one foot of his' B x. 27. 16, *ar neill law Hu* 'on Hu's side' (lit. 'on one side of Hu') v. 214. 23, *neill tu* 'one side'; also *y lleill*: *Glanhau a oruc hanher y lleill gyllell idaw* 'He cleaned half of one side of the blade for him' WM 487. 25.

Y neill may suggest two alternatives, which are expressed by *ae ... ae* 'either ... or': *Gwna y neill peth y gwr du ... Ae diosc dy arueu y ymdanat, ae titheu a rodych arueu ereill im y ymlad a thi* 'Do one of two things, black man: either put off thine armour from about thee, or give me other armour to fight with thee' WM 153. 34–36, *Mae y neill peth, ae tydi yn wr o bell, ae titheu yn ynuyt* 'It is one of two things: either thou art a man from afar or

thou art a fool' 162. 10–11, *Gwna y neyll peth . . . ae tydi a tynho dy penn ymdeith, ae titheu a el y'r twrneimeint* 'Do one of two things: either turn away thy head or go to the tournament' 163. 9–10, *y gwydyat vot yndaw y neill ae gwr ae gwreic* 'he knew that there was in it either a man or a woman' SG 54. 3.

(*b*) *Arall, ereill* (substantival and adjectival) occur without *y neill*, &c. Substantival: *Y neb a uo yn kadw da arall* 'He who is in charge of the property of another' B ii. 16. 15. Adjectival: *Na chwennych da dyn arall* 'Do not covet the property of another man' ii. 27. 37.

The pl. *ereill* is used with numerals in MW: *o'r deu vab ereill* 'from the other two sons' BY 12. 6, *tri ereill* 'three others' 22. 10; cf. § 37 *b*.

There are examples of *y llall, y lleill*, used instead of *arall, ereill*, after a definite noun (see § 28 *f* n.): *y dav y llall* 'his other son-in-law (lit. 'his son-in-law the other') BD 28. 9, *y mab y llall* 'her other son' BY 54. 25, *no'th chuioryd y lleill* 'than your other sisters' BD 29. 21–22, *an brodyr y lleill* 'our other brethren' LlA 81. 27–28, *urth vrenhined Ywerdon y lleill* 'to the other kings of Ireland' HGrC 112. 3–4.

§ 97. Un. This is the numeral 'one', which is freely used as a pronominal; it may be substantival or adjectival.

(*a*) Substantival. (1) As antecedent to a relative clause, § 74.

(2) With the meaning 'someone, anyone': *Ac e rodes vn idi teir keinyauc* 'And someone gave her three pence' B ix. 340. 33; also *yr un*, in negative sentences or in sentences where a negative meaning is implied: *nyt yttoed yr un yn y allel idaw* 'not one was able (to do) it for him' BDe 5. 9, *A chyt dywettit uot porthawr ar lys Arthur, nyt oed yr vn* 'And though it was said that there was a porter to Arthur's court, there was none' WM 223. 17–18, *damwein y gadei yr un y dwyn* 'it was chance that any one would permit himself to be carried' PKM 21. 27. *yr un* need not refer only to persons in such sentences: *Pa obeith yssyd y'r gler? Nyt oes yr vn* 'What hope is there for the bards? There is none' LlA 40. 4–5, *ony ellwch chwi . . . y dwyn hi, myui a'e dygaf, kan nyt oes im yr un* 'if ye cannot bear it, I will bear it, for I have none' SG 17. 9–10.

(3) It is commonly used instead of a noun with a dependent noun or an adjective, in order to avoid repetition (see § 91 n. 2), thus: *canys llei oed y niuer noc un y brenhin* 'for his host was smaller than that of the king' BD 137. 3, *canhorthvy duw ac vn e wynvyd-edic veir wyry* 'God's help and that of the blessed Virgin Mary' B ix. 335. 16, *eithyr y uot yn prudach pryt Gwydyon noc un y guas* 'save that Gwydion's mien was more staid than that of the lad' PKM 81. 24, *ny bu lei . . . brat y Daenysseit noc un y Gemry* 'the treachery of his Danes was not less than that of his Cymry' HGrC 122. 21–22, *pa dyuotyat uu un y marchawc* 'what coming was that of the knight' WM 395. 5–6.

(*b*) Adjectival. (1) 'same': *yr un piler* 'the same pillar' B v. 211. 33. Its construction is that of an equative adjective (§ 43); it is followed by *a(c)*, and is used without the article: *o un ystafell ac ef* 'from the same chamber with him' PKM 37. 26, *yn vn llety a mi* 'in the same lodging as myself' WM 147. 19–20, *yn vn bresseb a march peunydyawl y brenhin* 'in the same stall as the king's every-day steed' LlB 16. 11–12; *yn un a* 'one with, in agreement with, in league with': *Os y tyston a geffir yn un a'r cwynwr am eu tystol-yaeth* 'If the witnesses are found to agree with the complainant in their testimony' LlB 36. 22, *mi a dygwn wraged yn un a mi* 'I would bring women into league with me' PKM 23. 12. A demonstrative adjective may be used with the noun on which *un* depends, in which case *un* serves to emphasize the meaning of the demonstrative: *yr vn awr honno* 'that (very) hour' B ix. 338. 18, *er vn lle hvnnv* 'that (very) place' x. 30. 30.

(2) 'only': *e hun mab hi* 'her only son' B ix. 146. 6, *un uerch tat wyf* 'the only daughter of my father am I' x. 54. 36.

(3) 'any, a', in negative, interrogative, and conditional sentences, and sentences which contain a comparative, as follows: *llyna y godwrw mwyhaf a uu gan yniuer un ty* 'that was the greatest tumult that was by the host of any house' PKM 44. 3–4. Occasionally, it comes near to being an indefinite article, but in Welsh it did not, as in Cornish and Breton, develop as the indefinite article. Note the following examples: *nyt oes vn dyn divei o'r holl vyt* 'there is not a faultless man in the whole world' B ii. 29. 2, *a thav heb vn geir* 'and be thou quiet without (uttering) a word' ix. 332. 2, *yn y*

lle ny welsam eiryoet un prenn 'in the place where we never saw any tree' PKM 39. 21, *heb enni yn un lle o wyr Ynys y Kedyrn* 'without there being room in any place for the men of Ynys y Cedyrn' 44. 13, *hyt na allei dywedut un geir* 'so that he could not utter a word' 56. 19.

§ 98. Fy hun 'myself', &c. The reflexive pronoun consists of the prefixed possessive pronoun, followed by *hun* or *hunan*, which are forms of the numeral *un*. The pl. is *hunein*, but *hun* also is found: *eu lles e hun* B ii. 10. 2, *wynt eu hun* PKM 35. 27. The form of the personal pronoun in the 1. pl. is *ny*: *ny hunein* PKM 21. 5, also *ny hûn* BY 5. 14. Sometimes the *-y* of the prefixed pronoun 1. and 2. sing. appears as *-u* (§ 3). The forms *mi hun*, *mu hunan* CLlH 36. 27^{c}, *tu hun* are also found.

These forms are auxiliaries, and may follow a noun, pronoun, or a personal ending: *e'r amherauder e hun* 'to the emperor himself' B ix. 336. 33, *minheu uy hun* 'I myself' PKM 73. 8–9, *dy anwybot dy hun* 'thine own ignorance' 2. 12–13, *Neur diffetheeist du hun* 'Thou thyself hast destroyed' 20. 29, *yr a gewssynt e hun* 'despite what they themselves had got' 46. 27, *arnam ny hunein* 'on ourselves' 21. 5, *y ryngthunt ehunein* 'between themselves' BDe 18. 1. They may also follow a verbal form containing a reflexive *ym-*: *nac ymhoffa vyth dy hvn* 'do not ever praise thyself' B ii. 29. 37.

The examples cited above certainly represent the original construction of these forms, but as early as the MW period they are occasionally used independently also. (*a*) As object: *na chapla dy hun* 'do not reprove thyself' B ii. 23. 28, *ony ledy du hun* 'unless thou dost kill thyself' x. 24. 35 (the original construction would have been *ony'th ledy du hun*, with *du hun* supplementing the infixed pronoun *'th*, which would be the object of the verb), *Pob cristaun . . . a dyly adeilat ehun* 'Every Christian ought to edify himself' v. 196. 11 (for *y adeilat ehun*). (*b*) At the head of a mixed or abnormal sentence (§§ 146, 199): *ac ehun a uyd arglvyd ar y bobyl* 'and he alone will be lord over the people' BD 114. 17, *mihun e syd urthodedic* 'I alone am rejected' B x. 27. 24, *kanys ehunan . . . a dangosses trwy vrawt iawn ryrodi ohonaw vrawt gam kyn no hynny* 'because he himself has shown by a right judgement

that he has previously given a wrong judgement' LlB 102. 18–20; see further Henry Lewis, B x. 129. 31. They are commonly found after *namyn* 'but', and *no* 'than': *namyn my hun* CLlH 41. 62b, *namyn tu hun* B ii. 35. 31, *namyn ny hunein* v. 216. 30 (but *namyn ef e hun* B ii. 20. 14–15); *no my hun* LlA 67. 4, *no thy hun* B ii. 20. 6, *noc ehunan* LlB 45. 20; after *onyt* 'except': *onyt ehunan* 'except himself' YBH 18. 1167.

In some instances *e hun*, &c., is best described as adverbial, with the meaning (*a*) 'alone', (*b*) 'only'. (*a*) *ual yd oed y brenhin . . . yn kerdet ehun* 'as the king was travelling alone' BDe 3. 1–2, *e wreic drvan honno a edewit ehvn* 'that wretched woman was left alone' B ix. 335. 8, *pa ham yd wyf adawedic i vu hun y gennyt ti* 'why am I left alone by thee?' x. 27. 22, *dechreu wylav e hun en lle dirgel en e ty* 'she began to weep alone in a hidden place in the house' x. 30. 1; (*b*) *nyt a'r pechaut hvnnv e hun e peidyws* 'not from that sin only did he desist' B x. 23. 18, *kanys idaw ef ehun y rodes Duw breint a phennaduryaeth holl seint Kymry* 'for to him only hath God given privilege and sovereignty over all the saints of Wales' BDe 4. 2–3, *nyt e hun pa beth na pha delw y gwnaeth, namyn pa delw y codes ef duw yn anghyfyawn* 'not only what thing (he did) or in what way he did it, but in what way he unjustly offended God' B vii. 376. 15.

§ 99. Ryw. (*a*) Substantival 'kind, character, nature': *ryw y pechawt* 'the nature of the sin' B vii. 375. 4.

(*b*) Adjectival 'a (certain), some': *ryv duted edmic* 'an admirable covering' BBC 43. 15, *ryw lestyr emelldigedic* 'some accursed vessel' B ix. 48. 35, *y ryw bethan* 'some small thing' PKM 77. 17, *ryw rei* 'some people' SG 320. 29.

Ryw y occurs with the meaning 'proper to, natural to': *mor oed ryw y'm llew llywyaw'r dengwlat* 'how natural it was to my lion to rule the ten lands!' R 1226. 27, *Rhyw it oedd roi* 'It was natural to thee to give' GTA i. 88. 21.

It is used with a noun after *pa* 'what?', *pob* 'every', *neb* 'any', and a numeral, with the meaning 'what (kind of)?', 'every (kind of)', 'any (kind of)', &c.: *Pa ryw lun yssyd ar yr engylyon* Lat. *'qualem formam habent angeli?'* LlA 9. 4, *pob ryw da o'r a orchymynnei yr*

yscrythur lan 'every good that holy scripture ordained' 126. 11, *a phob ryw vlas ysyd ar y dwfyr hwnnw* 'and that water has every kind of taste' 167. 1, *o byd neb ryw hysbysrwyd ar yr enllip* 'if there be any foundation for the accusation' LlB 64. 28, *canyt oes nep ryw greadur a allo y drossi ef* 'for there is not any creature that can turn Him' LlA 33. 14–15, *nyt argyweda neb ryw wenwyn* 'no poison harms' 166. 3, *Tri ryw dyn yssyd* 'There are three kinds of persons' LlB 5. 12.

The article is used with *ryw* 'kind (of), such (a)' + noun: *y ryw lygeit corfforawl* 'such physical eyes' B x. 55. 21–22. A relative clause may follow: *Sef y ryw teruysc a orugum* 'This was the kind of strife I caused' BR 5. 2. Occasionally *ac* occurs before the relative clause (§ 77 *d*): *ny bu eiryoet y ryw lewenyd ac a wnaethpwyt* 'there never was such a welcome as was prepared' SG 144. 20. A demonstrative may follow the noun, thus: *y ryw gatwent honno* 'such a fight as that' RB 58. 29–30, *y ryw eidonneu hynny* 'such animals as those, those animals' LlB 22. 17, *y ryw ran honno* 'such a share, that share' 43. 8, *e ryw betheu henne* 'such things' B ix. 337. 31, *y'r ryw wr hwnnw* 'to such a man as that' BDe 10. 4–5, *y ryw bryf hwnnw* 'such a creature as that' PKM 61. 4, but *y ryw bryf a hwnnw* 62. 14.

§ 100. Amryw, Kyfryw, Unryw: compounds of *ryw*.

(*a*) **Amryw** 'various, several', with a sing. or pl. noun: *Yssit yn y boly hwnn amryw ulawt* 'There are in this bag various kinds of flour' PKM 43. 5, *amryv genedloed adar* 'various species of birds' BD 49. 26–27, *amryw wledeu* 'various feasts' LlA 70. 6.

(*b*) **Kyfryw** 'such'; its construction is that of an equative adjective (§ 43): *y kyfryw le a hwnn* 'such a place as this' PKM 7. 15; without the article: *kyfryw vrenhin a thydi* 'such a king as thou' B v. 208. 30, *kyfryw gyflauan a honno* 'such an outrage as that' WM 122. 15, *kyfryw dyn a hwn* 'such a man as this' 123. 30 (but *y kyfryw dyn a hwn*, l. 16). Before a relative clause; see § 77 n. A demonstrative may come immediately after the noun on which *kyfryw* depends (cf. *un*, *ryw*, §§ 97 *b* 1, 99): *y'r kyfryw wr hwnnw*

'to such a man as that' RB 65. 26, *y kyfryw gi hwnnw* 'such a dog as that' LlB 54. 8, *y kyfryw dynyon hynny* 'such people as they' B ii. 20. 30. The expressions *pa gyfryw*, *pob kyfryw*, *neb kyfryw* are used with a noun (cf. *ryw* § 99): *Pa gyfryw wr yw awch tat chwi* 'What kind of man is your father?' WM 152. 28, *pob kyuryv aniueil a ducpvyt yno* 'every kind of animal was brought there' BD 49. 24, *o bop kyfryw hat* 'of every kind of seed' B ii. 11. 10, *nyt oes neb kyuryw ford yn y byt y galler mynet ohonav* 'there is no way whatsoever whereby one can go from it' BD 137. 24.

N. *kyfryw* is used substantivally with the article: *mi a weleis y kyfryw a ofynny ti* 'I have seen such a man as thou dost ask after' WM 119. 10–11, *ef a darlleir ry gladu o'r kythreuleit lawer o'r kyfuryw* 'we read (lit. 'it is read') that the demons buried many such' LlA 49. 22. Sometimes *kyfryw* is lenited after the article (see TC 87–88): *ny rywelsei eiroet y gyfryw* 'the like of which he had never seen' WM 180. 20–21. In many cases, however, where lenition occurs, the *y* can be explained as the prefixed pronoun 3. sing. masc. The possessive pronoun may, of course, be used with *kyfryw*, e.g. *A'e gyfryw kyn noc ef ny chlywspwyt* 'And the like of it was not heard before' BDe 21. 12.

(*c*) **Unryw** 'the same (kind, nature)': *Vnryv yv y Tat a'r Mab a'r Yspryt Glann* 'Of the same nature are the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit' B v. 197. 12, *o'r unryw defnyd* 'of the same material' v. 211. 5–6. Like *kyfryw* its construction is that of an equative adjective (cf. also *un* § 97 *b* 1): *Nyt oes Duv vnryv y weithredoed a thi* 'There is no god equal in his deeds to thee' B ix. 334. 11. The second part of the comparison may be a relative clause (§ 77): *yn yr vnryw dyd ac y gwnnaethoed* 'in the same day that he had made it' LlA 20. 16, *a'r vnryw ymadrawd gantunt ac a dothoed gan y marchawc kyntaf* 'and the same tale with them as had come with the first knight' RM 200. 19.

§ 101. Rei, substantival 'some': *kanys dywedut a rodet y bawb, ac ny rodet doethinep ont y rei* 'for speech was given to all, but wisdom was only given to some' (Lat. *paucis*) B ii. 29. 19–20, *mal yd oed rei yn amheu beth a dywedey* 'while some were doubting what he said' BD 9. 11. It is followed by a definite pl. noun or pronoun, governed by *o* 'of': *rei o'r dynyadon* 'some of the men' B x. 55. 7, *rei onadunt* 'some of them' BR 1. 12.

It serves as the pl. of *un*, and like *un* is used instead of a noun on which another noun or an adjective depends (§ 97 *a* 3): *a chystal uyd eu backyneu a rei y tyrchot* 'and their bacons shall be as good as those of the boars' B ii. 14. 20, *na wna weithredoet kam . . . namyn gwna rei da* 'do not do unjust deeds, but do good ones' ii. 30. 3–4.

With the article, it often takes an adjective, as in the following examples: *y rei emelldigedic* 'the accursed (ones)' B ii. 27. 23, *y'r rei kyuyawn* 'to the just' x. 54. 34, *y rei aghynnil* 'the unthrifty' ii. 9. 27, *y rei eissywedic* 'the needy' viii. 136. 14 (cf. *yr eissiwedigyon* viii. 140. 23). The combination article + adjective (usually in a pl. form) is also commonly employed to denote the same meaning (§ 28*f*). Cf. also *y rei hynn / hynny* = *hynn / hynny* § 93.

For the use of *y rei* 'the ones, those' as antecedent to a relative clause, see § 74.

§ 102. Meint (Ir. *méit*, Bret. *ment*, Corn. *myns*, see B xvii. 273–4). For a discussion of *meint*, see CA 71, B x. 212–17, 297–8, TC 77–80. In MW it is usually masc., occasionally fem. It denotes size, amount, number, measure, or degree, and its syntax for the most part resembles that of *ryw* (§ 99).

Its constructions may be briefly described as follows:

As substantive, with a dependent noun: *meint yr erw* 'the size of an acre' B ii. 11. 15, *meint milwr a'e praffter* 'the stature of a soldier and his girth' WM 138. 34–35, *meint y niuer* 'the number of the host' B v. 207. 26, *meint y sarhaet* 'the magnitude of the injury' LlB 130. 15, *meint y twrwf* 'the magnitude of the peal' PKM 51. 23, *meint y phoenn* 'the extent of her pain' B ix. 328. 12; with a demonstrative adjective: *Mi a rodaf it y veint hon* 'I will give thee this much' LlB 63. 17; in a comparison after *mwy* 'more', where number or measure is expressed: *geloraur mvy no meint* 'biers beyond number' BBC 72. 3, *Llidiaw . . . yn vwy no meint* 'To be angry beyond measure' B v. 218. 17. Like *kymeint* and other equative adjectives it occurs with the prepositions *rac* 'on account of', *yr* 'in spite of' (§ 45): *rac meint y kynnwrwf hwnnw deffroi a oruc Ronabwy* 'with the magnitude of that commotion, Rhonabwy awoke' BR 21. 5, *a'th ovynn ti yssyd ar baup er meint*

vo y allu 'and everyone fears thee, however great his power may be' B ix. 329. 24.

It occurs with the meaning 'so great, such (a) great': *o'r veint eglurder* 'with such great brilliance' B x. 31. 13; with a demonstrative following the noun (cf. *un*, *ryw*, §§ 97 *b* 1, 99), thus: *y veynt wudugolyaeth honno* 'such a great victory as that' MA 501[a]13, *o'r veint drycdamwein hvnnv* 'so great a misfortune as that' B x. 27. 9, *y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny* 'such great victories as those' RB 199. 11.

It occurs before a relative clause, with the meaning 'as much / many as, all, how much / many'; with the article: *a'r meint a gredwys* 'and as many as believed' BT 7. 3; without the article: *Dysgogan derwydon meint a deruyd* 'Druids will foretell all that will happen' AP 6. 171, *clybot a wnnaeth hi meint a ordineuuyt o waet e seint* 'she heard how much of the blood of the saints was shed' B ix. 325. 31; with an interrogative: *ny didory pa veint o wyrda Ffreinc a diuaer* 'thou dost not care how many of the nobles of France are destroyed' YCM 119. 30; with a noun: *y meint gwellt a oed uch eu penneu* 'as much straw as there was above their heads' BR 3. 14, *y meint goruot a uu y wyr Ynys y Kedyrn* 'such victory as came to the men of Ynys y Cedyrn' PKM 44. 21, *y meint gwyr a oed idaw* 'as many men as he had' RB 46. 19–20, *y meint Cristinogyon a oed yn y dinas hwnnw* 'as many Christians as were in that city' FfBO 37. 28.

It is used adverbially with the preposition *yn* to denote extent or degree: *Kel yn y veint vwyaf y gellych cared dy gar* 'Conceal as much as ever thou canst the crime of thy friend' B ii. 35. 9, *yd wyfi y'th dyscu di yn y veint y gallaf* 'I am instructing thee as much as I can' vii. 372. 5.

N. The form *kymeint* (§ 41 *a* 3) is found used with the article; its initial consonant is lenited, which suggests that it is treated as fem.: *na dywedeis . . . y gymmeint yn y kyfryw le a hwnn* 'that I have not spoken as much in such a place as this' PKM 7. 15, *Y gymeint a wypwyfi mi a'e dywedaf* 'As much as I know, I will tell' WM 492. 21, *Y gymeint ohonof i a gaffer a geffir drwy ymlad* 'What is got of me, will be got by fighting' 493. 7.

y gymeint arall 'as much / many again, twice as much / many'; *yr y gymeint arall* 'for as much again' PKM 63. 21, *y gymeint arall o uwyt a llyn* 'as much again of meat and drink' WM 134. 11, *a phedeir mil a ladawd o*

wyr maxen . . . a'r gyment arall a vrathawd 'and he killed four thousand of Maxen's men, and wounded twice as many' VST 36. 24.

pa gymeint 'how much / many': *pa gymeint a el o hat yn yr erw . . . a pha gymeint a geffych o ennill* 'how much seed will go in an acre, and how much profit thou wilt get' B ii. 11. 10.

kymeint o: *kymeint o iawnder a gwirioned* 'so much justice and truth' RB 176. 16–17, *kymeint o lewenyd* 'so much joy' 183. 19.

kymeint un (for *un*, see § 97) 'all, every one', in apposition after a pl. noun or pronoun: *A'r brodyr kymeint un* 'And the brethren all' BDe 20. 7, *cymeint timmyn* 'every jot' R 582. 42; see WG 315, ChSDR 96, G 233.

§ 103. Sawl. (*a*) Substantival 'such, as many', as antecedent to a relative clause (§ 74). Its use with a dependent noun or pronoun is rare: *a rwy o sawl y rei yssyd* 'and more of the like of those that are' R 1252. 8.

(*b*) Adjectival 'as many, so many, all', with a sing. or pl. noun: *yr hon a ladavd y savl geuri ar traetheu enys Prydein* 'which slew so many giants on the shores of the island of Britain' BD 22. 24, *Nys gweles dyn eiryoet y sawl dynyon yn un lle* 'No man ever saw so many men in any place' BDe 21. 13. A relative clause may follow: *y'r sawl vilyoed vssyd yma* 'to all the thousands that are here' WM 162. 15, *y sawl uarw brenn a thwympath a uei ar y mays* 'every dead tree and bush that was on the plain' 472. 28, *y savl vrath a gveli a gymereis y* 'all the stabs and wounds that I received' BD 22. 19, *y'r savl uarchogyon a lithrei attav* 'to all the knights that flocked to him' 144. 25, *y savl sarhaedeu a wnaethost* 'all the injuries thou hast done' 162. 8; sometimes *ac* occurs before the relative clause (cf. *ryw* § 99): *y sawl ryuedawt ac yssyd yn y wlat honn* 'all the wonders that are in this land' SG 18. 37. A demonstrative may follow the noun: *y savl vlvydyned hynny* 'all those years' BD 6. 10, *y savl niuer hvnnv* 'all that host' 98. 24, *y savl uonedigyon hyn* 'all these nobles' 124. 2.

The interrogative *pa*, *py* may be used with *sawl* + noun, the latter remaining unlenited, *pa sawl* 'how many?': *pa savl marchavc a oed y gyt ac ef* 'how many knights were with him' BD 29. 30, *by sawl nef ysyd* 'how many heavens are there?' LlA 128. 24, *Py sawl pechawt a oruc Adaf* 'How many sins did Adam commit?' 131. 23.

N. Examples occur of *y sawl*, *pa sawl* followed by *o* 'of' and a pl. noun:

e savl o kestyll a cheyryd 'so many castles and forts' Pen 44. 26, *pa sawl o varchogyon a oedynt y gyt ac ef* 'how many knights were with him' MA 487[a]36. This construction, however, is not common.

§ 104. Peth 'thing, something': *Llyna beth eres* 'That is a strange thing' PKM 39. 22, *Nac ysgaelussa beth dielw neu beth rat* 'Do not disregard a profitless thing or a cheap thing' B ii. 21. 10, *pan tynher peth gan treis o'e llaw* 'when a thing is snatched with violence from her hand' LlB 4. 9, *Pwy bynhac a gollo peth trwy varn tremyc* 'Whoever shall lose a thing through a judgement of contempt' 103. 19. Pl. *petheu*: *a phetheu ereill da* 'and other good things' B vii. 374. 33.

It denotes 'some, part' (cf. Ir. *cuit*, GOI 134, and see Eric P. Hamp, B xvii. 158–61), and is followed by *o* 'of' and a definite noun: *o beth o uuched Veuno* 'of some of the life of Beuno' LlA 118. 30, *peth o'e weithredoed da* 'some of his good deeds' B x. 22. 9, *a pheth o laeth bronneu Meir* 'and some of the milk from Mary's breasts' v. 209. 2, *peth o gic y baed coet* 'some of the wild boar's flesh' YBH 3. 121.

For *y peth* before a relative clause, see § 74; for *pa beth* as an interrogative, see § 82.

N. Here is an example where *peth* is used adjectivally: *mi a dywedaf peth atteb iwch* 'I will give you some answer' WM 477. 18.

§ 105. Cilyd. This form was originally a noun, meaning 'fellow mate, companion' (cf. Ir. *céle*, see GOI 179): *duw y cheli vu y chilyd* 'God her Lord was her companion' R 1251. 16. It occurs as a personal name, CA 5. 120, WM 452. 1.

From an early period, however, it was employed with the 3. sing. masc. of the possessive pronoun to denote the meaning 'the other, another' (Ir. *a chéle*): *arthawc* (ms. *archawc*) *uyd chwaer wrth y gilyd* 'one sister will be rude to the other' R 1049. 35, *symut y geir yn y gilyd* 'to change the word into the other (word)' B v. 196. 4, *a'r dyd tra'e gilyd* 'from day to day' (lit. 'and the day beyond the other') ix. 146. 9; see § 238.

y gilyd most commonly occurs with *neb* 'any one' (§ 116), *dim* 'anything' (§ 117), *pawb* 'everyone' (§ 106 *a*), *pob* 'every' + noun

(§ 106 *b*), *un* 'one' + noun (§ 97 *b*), *yr un* 'the one': *ny byd escar neb yw gilyd* 'no one is an enemy to another' BT 53. 15, *nyt oes yn y Trindaut honn dim gynt no'e gilyd* 'there is not in this Trinity anything earlier than the other' B v. 200. 4, *ac y tagnouedwyd pawb onadunt a'e gilid* 'and peace was made between each of them and the other' WM 451. 15–16, *Ac yna, kyscu pob un lau heb lau gan uam y gilid* 'And then each casually slept with the other's mother' PKM 48. 5–6, *nyt kynt vn no'e gilyd* 'no one is earlier than the other' B v. 197. 11, *hyt na mynnei yr un uot heb y gilid* 'so that no one of them chose to be without the other' PKM 51. 10.

N. 1. The preposition *py* 'to' (Ir. *co*) is used with *cilyd*, as in the following examples: *O'r mor pwy gilyt* 'From sea to sea' (lit. 'from the sea to the other') LlHen 107. 5 (*pwy* < **po i*, see §§ 6 n. 4, 56 n. 2, L & P 236, or **pu i*, see B xvi. 281–4), *o'r mor py gilyd* RM 83. 20 (*py* < *py y*, see § 56 n. 2), *o'r eglvys pvy gilid* 'from one church to the other' BD 160. 6, *o'r pryt pwy gilyd* 'from one day till the morrow' (lit. 'from the time to the other') PKM 71. 2 (= *o'r pryt y gilyd* RM 62. 19; cf. also *O drwc y gilyd* 'From evil to evil' WM 505. 15, RM 141. 17–18, *o vrenhinyaeth y gilid* 'from one kingdom to another' YBH 49. 3160–1).

In the early period the preposition seems to have been more widely used, though examples are rare: *o'r mor bwy'r mor* 'from the sea to the sea' CA 26. 638 (*bwy* here probably by analogy with *bwy gilyd*), *Clwyf py glwyf* 'From wound to wound' GDG 274. 53. *awr by awr* GDG 318. 28, *awr py awr* RB 107. 23; the meaning is 'from hour to hour, at all times, at any time', hence *awr pob awr* (BD 68. 26), where *py* is replaced by *pob* 'every': *rhag ofyn dyfodyat Gruffudd awr pob awr* 'for fear of the arrival of Gruffydd at any moment' HGrC 148. 7; see BD 22. 8.

N. 2. There are a few early examples of *hennyd* 'fellow, companion, opponent' used like *cilyd*: *pan safhwynt galaned wrth eu hennyd* 'when corpses stand against each other' AP 4. 122. The form is cognate with Bret. *hentez*, Corn. *hynse*; see Sir Ifor Williams, B iv. 339–41, CA 100, AP 47, 74.

§ 106. (*a*) **Pawb** (Ir. *cách*), substantival 'everybody, all'; it is treated as both sing. and pl. Sing.: *ac a dal e baup herwyd e weithredoed* 'and who will give to every one according to his deeds' B ix. 148. 2, *Pawb ry gauas y gyuarws* 'Every one has obtained his boon' WM 470. 27. Pl.: *deffroi paub a datcanu vdunt* 'he roused everybody and declared unto them' B ix. 336. 22, *pawb a debygynt y uod yn engyl canhorthwy* 'all thought he was an angel helping' WM 463. 1–2.

(*b*) **Pob** (Ir. *cach*), adjectival 'every, all'. It comes before its noun, which is generally sing., but occasionally pl.: *pob kymhwt o'e teyrnas* 'every commot of his kingdom' LlB 1. 4, *a phob nos Calanmei* 'and every May-eve' PKM 22. 4. It is used with the pronominals *un* (§ 97), *rei* (§ 101), *peth* (§ 104): *pob un o honunt* 'each one of them' PKM 52. 11, *pob rei onadunt* 'all of them' B x. 59. 13, *drwy bop rei o'e aelodeu a'e synhwyreu* 'by means of all his limbs and senses' viii. 138. 24, *er hwnn a wnaeth pop peth* 'He who made every thing' x. 28. 14. *Pob ryw | kyfryw*, see §§ 99, 100 *b*.

It occurs in certain adverbial expressions: *bob ychydic* 'little by little' B ii. 10. 8 (*ychydic* § 112), *bob eilwers* 'in turn, alternately' (lit. 'every second time') B v. 213. 39, BDe 13. 13 (*gwers* § 249); with numerals: *Gwascaru a oruc llu Arthur bob un bob deu* 'Arthur's host dispersed one by one, two by two' WM 494. 5, *ac a'e lledeis pob tri pob petwar* 'and I slew them in threes, in fours' BD 16. 20–21, *pob ddec y lladei ynteu a'e ffon* 'in tens did he kill with his bludgeon' YBH 39. 2510; cf. also *bob un ac un*: *dan eu trychu bop vn ac vn* 'smiting them one by one' YCM 74. 28. See further WS 145–6, EGC 84.

§ 107. Oll, Holl (cf. Ir. *uile*, see Contrib U 60–63).

(*a*) **Oll,** substantival 'all'. It is used adverbially and follows the word which it modifies. That word may be a noun: *tywyssawc Kymry oll* 'prince of all Wales' LlB 1. 2, *a'r nythot oll* 'and all the nests' 14. 21, *ystauell haearn oll* 'a chamber all of iron' PKM 36. 8; a demonstrative pronoun: *Hynny oll* 'All that' PKM 64. 27; a personal pronoun or a personal ending: *eu llad oll* 'to slay them all' PKM 54. 27, *bei as caffwn oll* 'had I caught them all' 61. 1, *onadunt oll* 'of them all' B x. 29. 33; an adjective: *gorwac oll yw dy ymadrawd di* 'wholly idle are thy words' VST 34. 26; a superlative adjective: *mwyaf oll y kyffroant* 'all the more do they incite' B vii. 377. 18; *llyma* (§ 280): *Llyma oll* 'Here it is, all' PKM 23. 7.

It may modify a verb: *y ganhatau ytti oll yr hyn a ercheist idaw* 'to grant thee all (wholly) that which thou didst ask of him' VST 39. 6, *talet ehunan oll a del o'r llosc hwnnw o gollet* 'let he himself pay all (wholly) the damage that results from that burning' LlB 34. 17, *gwadu oll y dadyl a dotter ar dyn* 'to deny all (wholly) the

suit that is instituted against a person' 125. 21, *ual y traethwyt uchot oll* 'as it was all (wholly) related above' B v. 220. 12.

(*b*) **Holl,** adjectival 'all the', with a definite noun: *holl lyssoed y dayar* 'all the courts of the earth' PKM 4. 23, *holl wyr ymlad Iwerdon* 'all the fighting men of Ireland' 40. 15, *yr holl dref* 'the whole town' 54. 20, *yr holl anhedeu* 'all the dwellings' 65. 13.

N. 1. Occasionally it is found with an indefinite noun: *holl anyueileit dof* 'all tame animals' LlB 16. 23, *holl allu* 'all power' B ix. 339. 36.

N. 2. It may be used adverbially with an adjective: *holl gyuoethawc* 'almighty' B x. 58. 34, *holl iach* 'completely healthy' BDe 16. 18.

N. 3. Examples occur of *hollre* (*holl* + *gre*, see WG 309) used adjectivally: *yr olre* (ms. *y rolre*) *seint* 'all the saints' HGCr 21. 28, *holre oludoed* 'all the riches' LlA 165. 9, *hollre genedyl anifeileit* 'all the species of animals' 166. 1. See further RC xli. 220.

N. 4. The adjectival form *hollawl* is used adverbially with *yn*, meaning 'wholly, completely': *Pwy bynhac a watto llofrudyaeth a'e haffeitheu yn hollhawl* 'Whoever shall deny murder and its accessories completely' LlB 30. 30, *a'e llyngku a oruc y dreic yn hollawl* 'and the dragon devoured her completely' B x. 55. 31.

(*c*) **Yll.** This form may be explained as pl. of (*h*)*oll* (see L & P 234, but see also WG 275, 281). It occurs with numerals in apposition after personal pronouns or personal endings: *yn y taraw wynteu yll deu* 'striking them both' PKM 76. 24, *eisted a wnaethant ell deu* 'they both sat down' WM 182. 6, *udunt ell deu* 'for them both' 182. 8, also with the pl. forms *deuoed* (*deuwed*), *dwyoed*: *yng gwely Arthur y kysgassant ell deuoed* 'in Arthur's bed they both slept' SG 13. 16–17, *ac ymauael ac ef a'e dwylaw yll dwyoed* 'and took hold of it with both hands' 39. 30–31 (here in apposition to a noun, *dwylaw*), *ygyt y kysgassant ell tri y nos honno* 'together did the three of them sleep that night' 17. 16, *a chyrchu Gorssed Arberth a wnaethant yll pedwar* 'and the four of them proceeded to Gorsedd Arberth' PKM 51. 21, *onyt wyll pedwar* 'except the four of them' 52. 3 (*wyll* < *wy yll*), *a'y rannu y rydunt yll pymp* 'and divided it amongst all five of them' 48. 7, *yny delei yr un marchawc a oruydei arnadunt wy yll seith* 'until one knight came who would conquer all seven of them' SG 33. 22–23, *ny rodwn i geinawc erdunt hwy yll cant* 'I would not give a penny for all hundred of them' YBH 17. 1110–11.

A few examples occur where no personal pronoun precedes *yll* + numeral: *ae vn ohonunt a uo kylus, ae ell deu* 'whether one of them be in fault, or both of them' LlB 44. 24. Cf. also *Gweslan Escob . . . a disgybyl y Dewi a elwit Eliud, yll deu a dyrwestassant* 'Bishop Gweslan and a pupil of Dewi who was called Eludd both fasted' BDe 10. 6–7.

N. *yll* is found only in the 3. pl. When the preceding pronoun is in the 1. or 2. pl., forms of the prefixed possessive pronoun are used with the numeral; see § 56 n. 6.

§ 108. Cwbyl. (*a*) Substantival 'the whole': *a wnel cwbyl y drostaw* 'who may bear the whole for him' LlB 44. 19; followed by *o* 'of' and a definite noun: *cwbyl o'r gouut* 'all the trouble' PKM 65. 1, *cwbyl a geueis i o'm hamherodraeth* 'I have gained possession of all my empire' WM 190. 34.

(*b*) Adjectival 'complete, full': *Cwbyl waradwyd a geueis* 'A full insult have I had' PKM 32. 24, *Y neb a wnel cwbyl weithret, cwbyl sarhaet a tal* 'Whoever commits the complete act, full penalty shall he pay' LlB 66. 32; after its noun: *Gwnelet velly trwy y vlwydynn gwbyl* 'Let him do thus for the whole year' LlB 16. 30, *kany bu weithret cwbyl yrydunt* 'since there was not a complete act between them' 66. 26; as nominal predicate: *yny oed gwbyl o bryt, a thwf, a meint* 'till he was complete in appearance, growth, and stature' PKM 81. 12, *yny uu gwbyl idaw y dal* 'until his tally was completed' 34, 26, *Llw vn dyn yssyd gwbyl y wadu ki* 'The oath of one person is sufficient to deny a dog' LlB 53. 4.

The adjective has the compared forms *cwplet, cwblach, cwplaf*: *a golleis i uy nerthoed yn gyn gwplet ac y dywedy di* 'whether I have lost my strength so completely as thou sayest' WM 417. 27, *ni wnaeth Duw . . . un dyn gwblach noc Arthur* 'God did not make any man more accomplished than Arthur' MA 531[a]6–7, *yny oed delediwhaf gwass . . . a chwpplaf o pob camp da* 'until he was the finest youth and the most accomplished in all manly feats' PKM 27. 14.

(*c*) Adverbial 'wholly, completely, fully'; as the first element in a close or loose compound with a verb or adjective: *kwbyl drossi buched* 'to change one's life completely' R 1269. 36–37, *kwbyldoeth*

'wholly wise' LlHen 75. 24; with the preposition *o* or *yn*: *ereill a dileawd o gwbyl* 'others he abolished completely' LlB 2. 7, *Hitheu ... a ymrodes o gwbyl y Duw* 'She surrendered herself completely to God' B ix. 326. 2, *gwedy daruot y'r gennat menegi idaw ef o gwbyl ansawd Aedan y disgybyl* 'after the messenger had declared unto him fully the condition of Aeddan his pupil' BDe 11. 17, *yny daruu eu dystryw yn gvbyl hayach* 'until they were almost completely destroyed' BD 7. 4, *kyn y llyngku yn gwbyl* 'before she was completely devoured' B x. 55. 32, *Ony mynn ef gyffessu yn gwbyl y bechodeu* 'If he will not fully confess his sins' vii. 372. 25.

§ 109. Llawer (Ir. *lour*). (*a*) Substantival, sing. 'much', pl. 'many': *guedy byryer llawer yndi* 'after much has been thrown into it' PKM 15. 7, *llauer nys guir a'e gowin* 'many who do not know it ask it' BBC 68. 14. *Llawered*: *a llawered y gyt ac wynt* 'and many along with them' YCM 136. 21.

Llawer may be followed by *o* 'of' and a definite noun: *llawer o wyr Groec* 'many of the men of Greece' BR 20. 4, *llawer o'r deueit* 'many of the sheep' B ii. 16. 5. For the use of *llawer o'r* before a relative clause, see § 75.

(*b*) Adjectival 'many a', followed by a sing. noun: *llawer damwein* 'many a chance' PKM 19. 28, *llawer mab* 'many a youth' 83. 10, *llawer peth* 'many a thing' B ii. 29. 30, *llawer kerdawr* 'many a minstrel' CA 4. 93. Pl. *llaweryon*: *a thrvy laweryon amseroed* 'and through many periods' BD 104. 28.

The order *llawer* + *o* 'of' + indefinite noun (pl., collective, or abstract) is often found: *llawer o betheu* 'many things' B ix. 145. 9, *llawer o dynyon* 'many men' ii. 9. 29, *llawer o vlwynyded* 'many years' BDe 1. 7, *llawer o bobyl* 'many people' B ii. 25. 2, *llauer o dvfyr* 'much water' v. 201. 16, *llaver o gynhen a dadleu* 'much contention and dispute' BD 33. 12. *Llaweryon*: *laveryon o nadred* 'many snakes' BD 114. 6.

(*c*) Adverbial '(by) much', denoting measure or extent, with a comparative adjective: *gwneuthur rei ereill yn llei lawer no'y throet* 'to make others much smaller than her feet' PKM 80. 8, *Trymuryt a goueileint a gymerth Math yndaw, a mwy Wydyon noc ynteu lawer* 'Heaviness and grief Math felt within him, and Gwydion

more than he by far' 88. 18 (= *o lawer* RM 77. 24), *Mwy oed ef lawer no hynny* 'Bigger was he by far than that' WM 229. 9 (= *o lawer* RM 166. 27).

§ 110. Lliaws. (*a*) Substantival 'many, a multitude': *llyaus* BBC 5. 1, 4, 5, 6, *Lliaws gwledic ry dreulyas* 'Many (things) has the lord spent' CLlH 17. 45^{c}.

(*b*) Adjectival 'many a, much': *lliaws guryaw* 'much suffering' R 1216. 27, *keueis i liaws awr eur a phali* 'I got many a time gold and silk' LlHen 8. 13, *o liaws eirchyeid* 'of many suppliants' LlHen 100. 5.

The following forms also occur: *lluossyd* 'many, a multitude' BBC 66. 9, WM 137. 5; *lluossogrwyd* id. PKM 24. 13, LlB 102. 31; *lluossawc*, adjectival 'numerous' R 1043. 31.

§ 111. Odit, substantival 'a rarity': *Odit a vo molediw* 'A rarity (is he) who is worthy of praise' CLlH 18. 47^{b}. It may be followed by *o* 'of' and a definite noun: *odit o'r rei hynny ysyd yn Gristonogyon* '(only) a few of those are Christian' LlA 165. 21.

Odidawc (ModW *godidog*), adjectival 'rare, excellent': *hynny o amrauael liw odidawc* 'such variety of rare colours' BR 21. 12–13.

§ 112. Bychydic, Ychydic. (*a*) Substantival 'a little, a few': *bychydic a dal vy nghyngor i y ti* 'little does my advice avail thee' SG 43. 39, *either ychydic a eteliis y gyt ac ef* 'except a few which he kept with him' B ix. 339. 25, *Pa obeith yssyd y'r porthmyn? Ychydic* 'What hope is there for the merchants? Little' LlA 40. 8.

Ychydic may be followed by *o* 'of' and a definite noun (cf. *llawer* § 109 *a*): *ychydic o'r bwyt* 'a little of the food' B ix. 341. 11, *ychydic o greireu Kaerusalem* 'a few of the relics of Jerusalem' v. 208. 35, *ychydic o'e eneyt* 'a little of his life' BD 10. 6.

(*b*) Adjectival 'a little, a few': *bychydic egin* 'a few sprouts' B x. 29. 12, *ychydic kybydyaeth* 'a little cupidity' x. 26. 14.

The order *ychydic* + *o* 'of' + indefinite noun (pl., collective, or abstract) is found (cf. *llawer* § 109 *b*): *ychydic o dydyeu* 'a few days' B x. 25. 36, *ychydic o niuer* 'a small force' ix. 336. 39, *ychydic o amser* 'a little time' x. 27. 19.

(*c*) Adverbial: *Kyn no hynny ychydic yd aeth Creidylat* 'A little before that Creiddylad went' WM 496. 4, *Arho ychydic* 'Wait a little' B ix. 333. 7, *bob ychydic* (§ 106 *b*).

N. The following substantival forms also occur: *bychot* 'a little' CLlH 26. 24[c] (*behot* B iii. 26); *bychoded* id. R 1144. 34–35; *bychodrwyt* id. LlHen 38. 18.

§ 113. Digawn. (*a*) Substantival 'a sufficiency, enough': *Digawn ry dodet ymman* 'Enough has been put herein' PKM 15. 11, *Ancwyn a geiff yn diuessur, kanys digawn a dyly* 'He gets food without measure, for a sufficiency is his due' LlB 5. 11.

Digawn may be followed by *o* 'of' + indefinite noun (pl., collective, or abstract), cf. *llawer, bychydic*, §§ 109 *b*, 112 *b*: *digawn o arueu* 'enough arms' PKM 82. 21, *digawn o lu* 'sufficient of a host' BR 20. 5, *digawn o eur ac aryant* 'enough gold and silver' VST 32. 24–25, *digawn o vwyt* 'enough food' B ii. 32. 17–18. *Digoned: digoned o bob araf* 'a sufficiency of every weapon' B v. 207. 4.

(*b*) Adjectival 'sufficient, enough', comparative *digonach* PKM 50. 18 (see § 45).

(*c*) Adverbial: *digawn y buawch ym poen* 'long enough have you been under punishment' PKM 76. 26, *da digawn yw y enw* 'good enough is his name' 80. 24, *ef a'th ledir yn ebrwyd ddigawn* 'thou wilt be killed readily enough' YBH 40. 2583.

N. The noun *dogyn* '(due) measure, portion, quota' is commonly used with the same meaning and in the same constructions as *digawn*, thus: *Dogynn o bop ryw da hep neb ryw eissev* 'A sufficiency of every kind of good without any want' LlA 66. 29, *o'e rwymaw drwy dogyn o wystlon* 'to bind him through a sufficient number of hostages' YCM 117. 9, *gwedy yuet dogyn o honunt* 'after they had drunk enough' YBH 43. 2777, *dogyn yu dy benyt* 'sufficient is thy penance' B ix. 148. 7, *Os gwr ny charawd y wreic briawt yn dogyn* 'If a man did not love his wife sufficiently' viii. 137. 4.

§ 114. Ragor. This form probably derives from *rac-* 'before' and *or* 'edge, boundary' (cf. Ir. *or*), and means 'front', especially 'front line in battle' (see B ii. 307–8, iv. 137–41, CA 167): *Coch y lauyn o lat yn ragor* 'Red is his blade from slaying at the front' MA 162[a]57. It is also used to denote the distance by which one is in front, 'lead': *a cherdet o'r blaen a chymryd ragor mawr* 'and

travel ahead and keep a good lead' WM 418. 18, *a chadw y ragor a oruc* 'and she kept her distance' 422. 27. Later it developed the more abstract meanings of 'difference, superiority, more', &c., and the preposition *rac* was used with it.

(*a*) *canys ragor oed arnadunt o pryt a gosged . . . rac y lleill* 'for they were superior to the others in appearance and stature' (lit. 'for a superiority of . . . was on them') BD 91. 12 (with *ragor o*, cf. *llawer o*, &c.; see §§ 109 *b*, 112 *b*, 113 *a*, 115 *b*), *ragor clot idaw rac ereill* 'greater praise (attributed) to him than to others B v. 208. 22.

(*b*) Adverbial, with *yn*: *tri chastell a adavssei y tat y Assaracus . . . yn ragor rac y vravd* 'three castles which the father had left to Assaracus more than to his brother' BD 5. 6, *A pheth yw cost y march yn ragor rac yr ych* 'And what the horse costs in excess of the ox' B ii. 12. 4; with *o*, *o ragor* meaning '(by) much': *gwell o ragor* 'much better' YCM 56. 8, *a'r honn a oed ar y thraet oed degach o ragor mawr no'r lleill* 'and the one that was on her feet was very much fairer than the others' SG 191. 35.

N. The verbal form *ragori* is found. Originally it meant 'to go in front, precede': *ragorei tyllei trwy vydinawr* 'he went in front, he pierced through armies' CA 15. 376. Later it came to mean 'exceed, surpass', with *ar*: *o ragora yr vn o'r gwlyboreu hynn ar y gilyd* 'if one of these humours exceeds the other' EC viii. 82. 8, *gi a ragorawd ar milys yn ygwanec y wryt* 'Gi was ahead of Milys by more than a fathom' YBH 55. 3566.

§ 115. Gormod. (*a*) Substantival 'excess, too much': *pan yfont ormod* 'when they drink too much' B viii. 138. 30. Pl. *gormodyon*: *o ormodyon kyuoeth a drythyllwch a golut* 'from the excesses of power, luxury, and wealth' BD 198. 8.

(*b*) Adjectival 'excessive, extreme, too much', preceding its noun: *gormod diaut* 'too much drink' B x. 27. 34, *gormod chwant* 'excessive desire' ii. 21. 12–13, *gormod wharyeu* 'excessive feats' v. 217. 27, *gormod dievyl* 'demons beyond number' ix. 48. 37; following its noun: *tlodi gormod* 'extreme poverty' B x. 28. 18.

The order *gormod* + *o* 'of' + an indefinite noun is found (cf. *llawer*, *ychydic*, *digawn*, §§ 109 *b*, 112 *b*, 113 *a*): *gormod o lynn* 'too much drink' B ii. 27. 9, *gormod o drwc* 'too much evil' ii. 32. 6–7.

(*c*) Adverbial: *na chwsc ormod* 'do not sleep too much' B ii. 28; with *yn*: *Nac ymdiriet y'r da bydawl yn ormod* 'Trust not too much in worldly goods' ii. 27. 30.

For the etymology of *gormod*, cf. B ii. 104.

§ 116. Neb (Ir. *nech*). It is used in interrogative, concessive, conditional, and negative sentences, also sentences in which a negative meaning is implied, and sentences which contain a comparison, expressed or implied.

(*a*) Substantival 'anyone': *O gelly wneithur da y nep* 'If thou canst do good to anyone' B ii. 33, *neb ny dieghis odyna namyn ef a'e wreic* 'no one (lit. 'not anyone') escaped from there, save him and his wife' PKM 36. 21, *rac tremygu neb* 'in order not to insult anyone' B ii. 10. 11, *go athrist yw genhyf i guelet neb yn lle Bendigeiduran uy mrawt* 'quite sad do I feel at seeing anyone in the place of Bendigeidfran my brother' PKM 49. 14, *pebyll brychuelyn mwyhaf o'r a welas neb* 'a spotted yellow pavilion, the largest that anyone had seen' BR 13. 28, *a chyn cael o neb guelet yr eil olwc arnaw* 'and before anyone could get a second glimpse of it' PKM 77. 18.

It may be followed by *o* 'of' and a definite noun or pronoun: *Mi a rodaf it gyuoeth ac enryded moy noc y neb o'm holl dylwyth* 'I will give thee dominion and honour more than to anyone of all my family' B ix. 327. 21, *ny dichawn nep onadunt mynet yg kyfuyrgoll* 'not one of them can go unto perdition' LlA 34. 19–20.

For the use of *y neb* 'the one, he', *neb o'r* before a relative clause, see §§ 74, 75.

N. 1. *Nebawt* 'anyone, anything': *ny gwybyd nebawt* 'no one (not anyone) will know' BT 19. 26, *Ny digonir nebawt heb gyfoeth y trindawt* 'Nothing (not anything) can be done without the power of the Trinity' 41. 15, *Ny wyr neb nebawt arnaf* 'No one knows that there is anything on me' (i.e. 'that I am suffering') CLlH 16. 36^{c}; adjectively 'some, any': *nebawd nossweith* 'some night' LlHen 320. 13.

N. 2. *Nemawr*, also *ynemawr* (with prosthetic *y-*, § 15) < **neb mawr*; with a negative 'not much, not many, but little': *ny weleiste eto nemawr o boenev vffernn* 'so far thou hast seen but little of the torments of hell' LlA 154. 7; adjectively: *heb ynemawr gohir* 'with but little delay' B v. 217. 32.

N. 3. There are examples of *gwr* (Ir. *fer*) and *dyn* (Ir. *duine*) used like *neb*: thus, (*a*) *gwr*: *Ny weleis ansyberwyt uwy ar wr* 'I have not seen greater

discourtesy in anyone' PKM 2. 15, *Ny welsei neb ar wr dremynt druanach . . . noc a oed arnaw ef* 'No one had seen on any man a more pitiful sight than was on him' 90. 16; (*b*) *dyn*: *hyt na diengis dyn yn vyw onadunt* 'so that not one of them escaped alive' WM 502. 27, *heb ohir, na chael o dyn yn y ty gauael arnaw* 'without delay, and before anyone in the house could lay hold on him' PKM 43. 25, *nyt oed dyn a adnapei y gerd honno* 'there was no one that might understand that song' BR 20. 14.

(*b*) Adjectival 'any'; found in the same type of sentence as *neb* substantival: *Or byd adef ar neb eidon llad y llall* 'If it is acknowledged that one bullock killed the other' LlB 87. 7, *nyt oes neb dyn a wypo eu rif* 'there is not any man who knows their number' VST 39. 19, *ny dodyw neb gwestei eiroet oheni a'e uyw ganthaw* 'no guest has ever come thence with his life' WM 486. 19; with *peth* 'thing', *nepeth* B ii. 30. 34; *neb ryw | kyfryw* §§ 99, 100 *b*.

Neb un 'someone, anyone, a certain person', pl. *neb rei*; generally in affirmative sentences: *e doeth nebun claf . . . e'r dywededic eglvys honno* 'a certain sick person came to that aforesaid church' B x. 27. 15, *Odyna y dav nebun yn tinpan a thelyn* 'Then someone will come with drum and harp' BD 115. 16, *Nep rei drwc a boenir yman o eissev a thrallawt* 'Some evil ones will be punished here through want and affliction' LlA 30. 6; also adjectivally 'some, certain': *odena em penn yspeit e doeth neb un amperavder* 'then after a while there came a certain emperor' B ix. 339. 8, *e wynvydedic wyry a emdangosses y nebun yscolheic* 'the blessed Virgin appeared to a certain scholar' x. 23. 26, *neb rei rinwedeu neu wrthyeu ryuedolyon* 'certain virtues or wondrous miracles' LlA 102. 30.

§ 117. Dim 'anything'. (*a*) It is used in the same type of sentence as *neb* (§ 116): *A welewch dim namyn hynny?* 'Could you see aught but that?' PKM 39. 22, *Kyt gwahardo brenin rodi dim y eircheit yn y wlat* 'Although the king shall prohibit giving anything to suitors in his country' LlB 26. 8, *Nit yttoydwn i yn holi dim i ti* 'I was not claiming anything from thee' PKM 5. 26.

neb dim: *nyt oes neb dim a allo* Lat. '*nihil potest*' LlA 73. 9; *neb ryw dim*: *ny welynt neb ryw dim* 'they could not see any manner of thing' PKM 51. 27; *pob dim* 'everything' R 1251. 37.

(*b*) An indefinite noun may follow *dim* in a genitival relationship: *heb dim llywenyd* 'without any joy' (lit. 'without anything of joy') LlA 147. 25, *heb allel gwneuthur dim lles* 'without being able to do any good' SG 37. 20, *heb dim yt* 'without any corn' B x. 29. 12.

(*c*) A definite noun or pronoun following *dim* requires *o* 'of' with it; *dim o* is common in MW: *a dywedy di ymi dim o'th negesseu?* 'wilt thou tell me anything of thine errands?' PKM 12. 18–19, *or diffic dim o'e edewit* 'if anything of his promise fails' B v. 218. 13. In negative sentences *dim* often serves merely to emphasize the negative: *Ny warandawei dim o'r attep* 'He would not listen to (anything of) the answer' PKM 41. 23, *ny cheffvch dim o'r eneit hvnn* 'you shall not get (anything of) this soul' B x. 23. 3, *na ry gaussei dim o'e da* 'that he had not received (anything of) his goods' x. 29. 1, *Vy enw i . . . ny elly di wybot dim ohonaw* 'My name thou canst not know (anything of) it' SG 18. 31–32, *mi a wnn na wrthyt ef dim o honat ti* 'I know that He will not reject (anything of) thee' 43. 14–15, *ny weles dim o'e nei yno* 'he did not see (anything of) his nephew there' 262. 36. Later *dim o* was reduced to *mo*, see WS 155. For the use of *dim o'r* before a relative clause, see § 75.

N. Owing to its frequent use with the negative, *dim* (like *neb*) acquired a negative meaning. In ModW it may mean 'nothing' without a qualifying negative, especially in the spoken language; in the literary language its use in this sense is severely restricted. There are a few examples from late MW (fourteenth century) where *dim* means 'nothing': *y neb a wybu wneuthur pob peth o dim* 'he who knew how to make everything from nothing' LlA 60. 13–14, *canys yna y diueir deduefeu yn ryeni ni. hyt ar dim* 'for then the ordinances of our ancestors will be destroyed, even to nought' Hg MSS ii. 261. 17, *Sef yw dim, absenn a gwrthwyneb y bop ryw beth* '*Dim* means the absence and opposite of every (kind of) thing' LlA 89. 21–22; see further WS 158, G 358, GDG 506.

(*d*) *Dim onyt* 'nothing but, only', with the negative: *Nit oed dim onyt croen ac ascwrn* 'He was nothing but skin and bone' PKM 90. 17. Cf. *dim namyn* PKM 39. 22 above. *Dim ond* in ModW is commonly used with the meaning 'only', without the negative: *Dim ond calon lân all ganu* 'Only a pure heart can sing'.

(*e*) *Dim* is used adverbially with the meaning 'at all': *Ae argywed y'(r) rei da y llad, neu y marw o anghev deissyuyt. Nac ef*

dim 'Is it a misfortune to the good to be killed, or to die a sudden death? No, not at all' LlA 48. 27–28; *o dim*: *eissoes ny dygrynoes hynny o dim udunt* 'nevertheless, that did not avail them at all' RB 168. 25–26; *yn vwyaf dim* 'above all': *a char ef yn vwyaf dim* 'and love Him above all' B ii. 9. 14–15.

THE VERB

§ 118. The verb has three moods, indicative, subjunctive, and imperative. The indicative has four tenses, present, imperfect, preterite, and pluperfect. The subjunctive has two tenses, present and imperfect. The imperative has only the present tense.

The following is a brief description of the time relationships and other aspects of meaning expressed by the various moods and tenses.

Indicative

§ 119. PRESENT. (*a*) The simple present: *ni a glywn utkyrn a lleuein* 'we hear trumpets and clamour' PKM 82. 13, '*Gwir a dywedy*,' *heb yr Arthur* ' "Thou speakest true," said Arthur' BR 8. 27. The periphrastic construction, consisting of the present of *bot* + *yn* / *y* + verbal noun, is employed to denote this meaning: *Ae o'th anuod di y mae mackwyeit yr amherawdyr yn brathu dy vrein* 'Is it against thy will that the emperor's squires are wounding thy ravens?' BR 13. 18–19, *ac y mae ynteu weithyon y'm digyuoethi inheu* 'that he is now dispossessing me' BD 51. 5.

(*b*) The universal or gnomic present, without specific reference to time: *Dyn a wyl y brechewyn yn llygat arall ac ny wyl y trawst yn y lygat e hun* 'Man sees the speck in another's eye, but does not see the beam in his own eye' B ii. 19. 12–13. It is constantly used in the Laws: *Guas ystauell a morwyn ystauell a gaffant wely ynn yr ystauell* 'The chamberlain and the maid of the chamber are to have a bed in the chamber' LlB 10. 11–12, *Or lledir ki neu or dygir letrat, camlwrw a telir drostaw* 'If a dog is killed or stolen, a *camlwrw* (fine) is to be paid for it' 53. 1.

(*c*) The consuetudinal present, not always distinguishable from (*b*) above: *ef a wyl pawb o'r a del y mywn, ac nys gwyl neb efo* 'he sees everyone who enters, and no one sees him' WM 156. 28–29. The verb *bot* (and compounds of *bot*) has the forms *bydaf, bydy*, &c., to denote this meaning, forms which also express the future (§ 144).

(*d*) The dramatic present, used for the simple past in vivid narrative: *nyt kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch, noc yd a hitheu hebdaw ef* 'no sooner had he mounted his horse, than she passed him by' PKM 11–12. It is commonly found in subordinate temporal clauses: *Pan daw, nyt oed namyn y calaf yn llwm* 'When he came, there was nothing but the stalks naked' PKM 59. 12, *gossot a oruc ynteu ar y marchawc . . . yny hyllt y daryan ac yny dyr yr arueu* 'he made an onset on the knight, till he cleft the shield and broke the arms' RM 271. 12–13.

(*e*) The future; this meaning is very common, as the Welsh verb has no future tense: *minheu a baraf idaw ef uynet y sseghi y bwyt yn y got* 'I will make him go and tread down the food in the bag' PKM 15. 11, *y gyt y kerdwn odyma* 'together will we go from here' 19. 8. For *bot*, see (*c*) above.

(*f*) An action continuing up to the present (the present of *bot*): *ys guers yd wyf yn keissaw a olchei vyg cledyf* 'for a while I have been seeking one who should polish my sword' WM 487. 8–9, *Yr hynny hyt hediw yd wyf i yma* 'From that day to this I have been here' 490. 38, *Ac agos y pym mlyned yr pan ydym ninheu yn ymrodi y wledeu ac y seguryt* 'And there are nearly five years since we have been indulging in feasts and idleness' BD 163. 7, *yr hynny hyt hediw y may y delw honno yn Rvvein* 'from that day to this that imprint has been in Rome' B ix. 48. 9.

§ 120. IMPERFECT. Except in the case of the verbs *bot, gwneuthur, mynet, dyuot* (§§ 144, 141, 142, 143) there is only partial formal distinction between the imperfect indicative and the imperfect subjunctive (for *-h-* in the subjunctive, see § 137). The imperfect is employed to express the following meanings:

(*a*) Continuous action or state in the past: *ual y kyrchei ef y bont* 'as he was making for the bridge' WM 433. 8. The

periphrastic construction, consisting of the imperfect of *bot* + *yn* / *y* + verbal noun, is commonly employed to denote this meaning: *gvyr Groec oedynt yn ryvelu arnav* 'the men of Greece were making war upon him' BD 5. 3, *yma yd oedwn yn kerdet ui a'r gwr mwyaf a garwn, ac ar hynny y doeth tri chawr o gewri attam* 'here was I travelling, I and the man I loved best, and with that there came three giants upon us' WM 441. 6–9.

(*b*) The consuetudinal past, expressing repeated or customary action: *a phob nos Calanmei y moei* 'and every May-eve she foaled' PKM 22. 5. The verb *bot* (and its compounds) has the forms *bydwn*, *bydut*, &c., to denote this meaning.

(*c*) Possibility, the verbs *gwelet* 'see', *klywet* 'hear': *Ny welei ef y twrwf rac tywyllet y nos* 'He could not see the commotion, as the night was so dark' PKM 22. 23, *ym pell yn y coet ef a glywei diaspat* 'far into the forest he could hear a shriek' WM 131. 4.

(*d*) In indirect speech, corresponding to a present indicative in direct speech: *Y guyr hynny . . . a ouynyssant idaw, pa darpar oed yr eidaw, a pha achaws yd oed yn mynet e ymdeith* 'Those men asked him what was his intent and for what reason he was going away' PKM 32. 20–22.

(*e*) Secondary future: *diheu oed genthi na deuei Ereint uyth* 'she was sure that Gereint would never come' WM 441. 20–21. For the verb *bot*, the forms *bydwn*, *bydut*, &c., are used.

(*f*) Conditional: *bei dywettut ti imi yr hyn a ofynhwn ytti, minheu a dywedwn itti yr hyn a ofynny titheu* 'if thou wouldst tell me that which I would ask of thee, I in turn would tell thee that which thou dost ask' WM 118–19, *Vyn tebic i yw . . . y gallei y gwas melyn er meitin gwneuthur gwaet ar y gwas gwineu pei as mynnei* 'It is my opinion that the yellow-haired youth could long since have drawn blood from the auburn-haired youth, had he wished it' 128. 6–9, *bei gwnelhit uyg kyghor i, ny thorrit kyfreitheu llys yrdaw* 'if my counsel were followed, the laws of the court would not be broken on his account' 458. 23–25.

For the verb *bot*, the regular conditional is *bydwn*, &c. (see *b*, *e*, above), but in MW *oed* often occurs with the meaning 'would' in principal clauses, as follows: *Ryuedawt hagen da oed gennyf pei ys guelwn* 'A wonder, however, I would be glad were I to see it'

PKM 9. 9–10, *oed llessach y'r march, pei ass archut yr meityn* 'it would have been better for the horse, hadst thou asked it long since' 12. 9, *da oed genhyfi . . . pei kawn le esmwyth y gyscu* 'I would be pleased were I to have a comfortable place to sleep' WM 134. 22–23. It is found with this meaning where no condition is expressed: *bychan a dial oed yn lloski ni* 'it would be small vengeance to burn us' PKM 20. 13, *eissyoes gwell oed gennyfi vy mot y'm llochwes yn y daear* 'however I would prefer to be in my hiding-place in the earth' ChO 2. 18. *Oed* does not occur in a modal sense in late ModW; cf. E. Benveniste, BSL xlvii. 19.

(*g*) It is used with the meaning 'would', &c., in various other cases, e.g. *Nyt eynt wy o'y bod* 'They would not go of their own free will' PKM 36. 5, *nys kredei neb onyt a'e gwelei* 'no one would believe it except him who could see it' B v. 212. 19.

§ 121. PRETERITE

(*a*) As preterite, the tense ordinarily used in narrative: *Y gysgu yd aethant y nos honno. A phan welas y meichat lliw y dyd, ef a deffroes Wydyon* 'That night they went to sleep. And when the swine-herd saw the light of day he roused Gwydion' PKM 89. 9–10.

(*b*) As perfect; this meaning is far less common: *E wisc honn a dugum mi yty o baradwys* 'This garment have I brought thee from Paradise' B x. 22. 19; with *ry*, see § 185 *a*.

The periphrastic construction, consisting of the present of *bot* + (*g*)*wedy* + verbal noun, is commonly used to express this meaning: *y mae gvedy mynet gyd a Gwenhwyuar y hystauell* 'she has gone with Gwenhwyfar to her chamber' WM 408. 7.

§ 122. PLUPERFECT

(*a*) An action or state antecedent to a point of time in the past, 'had': *o'r a welsei ef o helgwn y byt, ny welsei cwn un lliw ac wynt* 'of all the hounds he had seen in the world, he had seen no dogs the same colour as these' PKM 1. 20–21. The periphrastic construction, consisting of the imperfect of *bot* + (*g*)*wedy* + verbal noun, is also used to express this meaning: *A phan yttoedynt gwedy gware talym* 'And when they had played awhile' BR 16. 17.

(*b*) As pluperfect conditional, in both protasis and apodosis: *A phei buassut ti deilwng a chyuyawn, ny buasut gyfueillt y delweu mut a bydeir* 'If thou hadst been honourable and just, thou wouldst not have been a friend to dumb and deaf idols' B x. 56. 27–28, *buassei well itti bei roessut nawd y'r maccwy* 'it would have been better for thee hadst thou given quarter to the squire' WM 148. 14–15.

Subjunctive

§ 123. Subjunctive forms commonly occur in all kinds of subordinate clauses, usually denoting what may or might happen / be, as opposed to actual occurrence or fact, e.g. *Aet vn . . . y wybot pwy vo* 'Let one go to find out who she is' RM 9. 1–2 (= *pwy yw* PKM 9. 19; contrast also the following example where the potential meaning is clearly absent: *mi a wnn pwy wyt ti* 'I know who thou art' PKM 2. 8), *A chyt archo ef yti rodi yr eil, na dyro* 'And though he ask thee for a second, do not give it' PKM 3. 19–20, *gwnaet iawn mal y barno goreugwyr y llys* 'let him make recompense as the nobles of the court shall decide' RM 261. 4–5, *pan delych dy hun i'th wlat, ti a wely* 'when thou thyself comest to thy land, thou shalt see' PKM 6. 20 (contrast *A phan doethant y'r lle yd oed Dewi, y dygwydassant* 'And when they came to the place where Dewi was, they fell' BDe 7–8), *mal y crettoch* 'that ye may believe' WM 492. 26, *yr a ymbilio a thi* 'however much he entreat thee' PKM 3. 20, *Keis a'th lado* 'Seek who may slay thee' 6. 2 (contrast *ti a wely a wneuthum i yrot ti* 'thou wilt see what I have done for thee' 6. 20–21), *Mi a baraf . . . na bo i'th gyuoeth na gwr na gwreic a wyppo na bo tidi wwyf i* 'I will cause that there be in thy kingdom neither man nor woman who may know that it be not thou that I am' 3. 23–24.

It is used to denote the unreal or impossible, where negation is expressed, thus: *Nit oes yndi nep ni'th adnappo* 'There is in it no one who does not know thee' PKM 4. 2, *ny wnn i neb a'e gwypo* 'I know of no one who knows it' RM 131. 1–2, *Hawd yw gennyf kaffel hynny, kyt tybyckych di na bo hawd* 'It is easy for me to get that, though thou mayest think it is not easy' RM 120. 26.

For its use in conditional clauses, see §§ 120*f*, 274.

See further IEW 70–74, L & P 272–6, RC xlix. 382–405.

N. In ModW the use of the subjunctive is much more restricted than in MW.

§ 124. PRESENT. In principal clauses it may denote:

(*a*) The various meanings of the imperative and optative, command, wish, &c. (§ 125): *un dyrnaut a rodych di idaw* 'one blow thou art to give him' PKM 3. 18, *Duw a dalo itt dy gydymdeithas* 'May God repay thee thy friendship' 6. 19, *Gwaret arnaf, Naf, nawd a'm rodych* 'Save me, Lord, lend me protection' HGCr 102. 1, *ac erchych hynny idaw yn gyuarws it* 'and ask that of him as a gift to thee' WM 454. 33, *A dyuot a wnelych genhyf* 'And come thou with me' 476. 23.

The imperfect subjunctive also has this force: *Ac yna pan glywyn y gorn ef, gvnelhey bawb y allu* 'And then, when they should hear his horn, everyone was to do his best' BD 9. 21, *Agamemnon . . . a dwawt y peidei ef a'r llywodraeth honno yn llawen . . . a gossotynt hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef* 'Agamemnon said he would gladly give up that command, and that they should set whomsoever they desired in his stead' RB 24. 11–14.

(*b*) Futurity; common in early poetry, but rarer in prose: *nyt arbettwy car corff y gilyd* 'a kinsman will not spare the body of another' BT 16. 13, *Moch guelher y niuer gan Elgan* 'Soon will the host of Elgan be seen' YMTh 57. 10, *o honot ti yt gaffo* 'it is by thee he shall have it' WM 453. 39.

N. In subordinate clauses the present subjunctive occasionally has a perfect meaning: *ni wn na bo yno y caffo* 'I know not but that it be there he may have found it' PKM 35. 4, *a chyn gwnel gameu it . . . ny buost hawlwr tir a dayar eiryoet* 'and though he may have done thee wrong, thou hast never been a claimant for land and soil' 49. 11, *Kyn ny lado cledyf eu gelynyon wynt, eissoes ny chollassant wy palym budugolyaeth* 'Though the sword of their enemies may not have killed them, nevertheless they did not lose the palm of victory' YCM 25. 7; with *ry*, see § 185 *a*.

Imperative

§ 125. Various meanings may be expressed by the imperative: (*a*) a positive command: *Drycheuwch y fyrch y dan uyn deu amrant* 'Raise up the forks under my two eyelids' WM 477. 13–15; (*b*) advice, exhortation, direction: *Vy mab dwc dy uuched yn gall* 'My son, lead thy life sensibly' B ii. 9. 13, *Dos di yn dibryder* 'Go

thou without worry' v. 218. 27; (*c*) request, entreaty, wish: *Trugarha wrthyf, Arglwyd* 'Have mercy on me, Lord!' B ix. 326. 18; (*d*) invitation: *dyret y estavell e vuched tragywyd* 'come to the chamber of eternal life!' B x. 31. 3.

THE REGULAR VERB

§ 126. By the MW period the verbal system had been greatly simplified. Most verbs conform to a uniform pattern in which the endings of the various tenses and moods are all added to a single stem-form. There are traces of older systems in early MW, and later, but over the MW period generally these archaic formations tend to disappear. Widespread analogical levelling resulted in the further development and extension of a 'regular' conjugation. (For the irregular verbs, see §§ 141–58.)

Each of the tenses is inflected for the three persons of the sing. and pl.: the imperative, however, lacks the 1. sing. Every tense has in addition an impersonal or passive form. Every verb has a verbal noun (§§ 178–83), and most have verbal adjectives (§ 184).

§ 127. The verb **car-af** 'I love' is conjugated as follows:

Indicative Mood

	Present		Imperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*caraf*	*carwn*	*carwn*	*carem*
2.	*kery*	*kerwch*	*carut*	*carewch*
3.	*car*	*carant*	*carei*	*kerynt*
	Impers. *kerir*		*kerit*	

	Preterite		Pluperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*kereis*	*carassom*	*carasswn*	*carassem*
2.	*kereist*	*carassawch*	*carassut*	*carassewch*
3.	*carawd* (*cafas* 'he got')	*carassant*	*carassei*	*carassynt*
Impers.	*carwyt* (*caffat* 'was got')		*carassit*	

Subjunctive Mood

	Present		Imperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*car(h)wyf*	*car(h)om*	*car(h)wn*	*car(h)em*
2.	*ker(h)ych*	*car(h)och*	*car(h)ut*	*car(h)ewch*
3.	*car(h)o*	*car(h)ont*	*car(h)ei*	*ker(h)ynt*
	Impers. *car(h)er*		*ker(h)it*	

Imperative Mood

	Sing.	Pl.
1.		*carwn*
2.	*car*	*kerwch*
3.	*caret*	*carent*
	Impers. *carer*	

Verbal noun: *car-u*
Verbal adjectives: *car-edic*, *car-adwy*

Additional Notes

Indicative

§ 128. PRESENT. (*a*) Sing. 1. *-af*. This ending probably derives from *-na-* stems, whence it doubtless spread at an early period to the *-ā-* stems, Lat. *amā-re* (*-af* < Brit. **-a-me*). The old *-i-* stem (cf. Lat. *audi-re*) is also represented by some early forms with *-if* (< **-i-me*): *kenif* 'I sing', *kwynif* 'I complain', *bytif* 'I shall be', *dygif* 'I bring', *keriu* 'I love' LlHen 1. 15, 4. 3, 6. 23, 24. 11, *gweiniu* 'I serve' HGCr 22. 9, *gwelif* 'I see', *mudif* 'I change' CLlH 1. 4[a], 2. 5[c], *gwnëif* 'I do, make' CA 1. 11.

(*b*) Sing. 2. The ending was originally *-yđ* (Bret. *-ez*, Corn. *-yth*), instances of which occur from early MW: *imwaredit* 'savest thyself' HGCr 6. 13, *digonit* 'committest' ib., *guneit* 'makest' 7. 47, *doit* 'comest' BBC 102. 1, *rodyd* 'givest', *kynnullyd* 'gatherest' BT 57. 15, *gwesceryd* 'scatterest' 57. 16, *atebyd* 'answerest', *dywedyd* 'sayest', *kyuerchyd* 'greetest' R 582. 36–39, *diengyd* 'escapest' CLlH 1. 4[a], *keed* (≡ *ke-yđ*) 'obtainest' LlA 151. 23. *-đ* was lost early (§ 11), and by the ModW period *-y* had become *-i*

by assimilation with the *i* of the affixed pronoun *di*, which followed.

N. Instances of *-i* (for *-y*) occur as early as the OW period; see L & P 279, also 283, where it is suggested that there was an old ending *-i* < **-i-si* (*-yð* < **-i-ịei*). But there is good evidence for the loss of *-ð* in the OW period (see LHEB 426–7).

A few examples of *-i* are found in the poetry of Dafydd ap Gwilym (fourteenth century); see GDG lxxxix.

§ 129. Sing. 3. The standard form consists of the bare stem with no ending, and derives from old conjunct forms (see L & P 283).

(*a*) In some forms the vowel of the stem undergoes the ultimate *i*-affection, a development which derives originally from old *-ī-* stems (**-īt*). The following changes are attested:

a > *ei*: *arch-af* 'ask', *eirch*; *cadw-af* 'keep', *keidw*; *cynhali-af* 'support', *cynneil*; *galw-af* 'call', *geilw*; *llanw-af* 'fill', *lleinw*; *llefar-af* 'speak', *llefeir* AP 1. 23; *par-af* 'cause', *peir*; *parch-af* 'keep, respect', *peirch*; *saf-af* 'stand', *seif*.

o > *y*: *coll-af* 'lose', *cyll*; *deffro-af* 'wake', *deffry*; *dod-af* 'place', *dyt*; *ffo-af* 'flee', *ffy* BD 111. 10; *hollt-af* 'split', *hyllt*; *llosg-af* 'burn', *llysc*; *porth-af* 'bear', *pyrth* CA 26. 662; *rod-af* 'give', *ryd*; *torr-af* 'break', *tyrr*; *tro-af* 'turn', *try*.

e > *ei* / *y*: *dywed-af* 'say', *dyweit*; *gwel-af* 'see', *gwyl*.

aw > *eu* / *y*: *taw-af* 'am silent', *teu*; (*a*) . . . *a* . . . *aw* > (*e*) . . . *e* . . . *eu* / *y*: *adaw-af* 'leave', *edeu*, *edy* (§ 159); *aḋaw-af* 'promise', *etev* BBC 102. 5; *taraw-af* 'strike', *tereu*, *tery*; *gwarandaw-af* 'listen', *gwerendeu*, *gwrendy*.

a . . . *a* > *e* . . . *ei* / *y*: *attali-af* 'withhold', *etteil*; *gwahard-af* 'forbid', *gweheird*; *gwarchadw-af* 'guard', *gwercheidw* CLlH 7. 43[c]; *gwasgar-af* 'scatter', *gwesgyr*; *manag-af* 'declare', *menyc*.

a . . . *o* > *e* . . . *y*: *agor-af* 'open', *egyr*; *anuon-af* 'send', *enuyn*; *anog-af* 'urge', *ennyc* YCM 116. 20; *aruoll-af* 'receive', *eruyll*; *arho-af* 'wait', *er(h)y*.

a . . . *e* > *e* . . . *y*: *gwared-af* 'deliver', *gweryt*.

In many verbs which have *a* the vowel is unaffected: *car* 'loves', *can* 'sings', *tal* 'pays', *gat* 'leaves'; also some with *e*, as *atuer* 'restores', *arbet* 'spares' BT 31. 17, *aruer* 'uses' FfBO 51. 17 (also *aruerha* BD 109. 8), *atteb* 'answers' LlB 36. 13, *kymer* 'takes'.

Some verbs with *a* have both the affected and unaffected forms: *beirn* 'judges' R 1321. 13, *barn* 1184. 7; *chweird* 'laughs' 1240. 9, *chward* 1342. 4; *dieil* 'avenges' LlA 135. 3, *dial* BD 114. 4. Also *kyrreid* 'reaches' R 1388. 31, *kyrraed* 1378. 6; *diylch* 'thanks' R 1303. 38, *diolwch* LlHen 259. 20.

(*b*) When the vowel of the stem is mutable, the 3. sing. has the radical, which is mutated in the other forms of the verb:

y [ï] > *y* [ə]: *kyrch* (> *kyrch-af*) 'makes for', *disgynn* (> *disgynn-af*) 'descends'.

w > *y*: *kwsc* (> *kysg-af*) 'sleeps', *dwc* (> *dyg-af*) 'brings', *llwngk* (> *llyngk-af*) 'swallows'.

aw > *o*: *bawd* (> *bod-af*) 'drowns', *hawl* (> *hol-af*) 'asks', *llawch* (> *lloch-af*) 'fondles' CLlH 38. 39^{c}, *tawd* (> *tod-af*) 'melts'.

In disyllabic stems where the unaccented *aw* became *o*, the latter was in some cases treated like an original *o* and affected to *y*: *adrod-af* 'I narrate', *edryd* R 1253. 39 (but *adrawd* CA 2. 27); *halog-af* 'I defile' (< *halawc*), *helyc* LlA 34. 8.

(*c*) Forms in -(*h*)*a*. Denominative verbs could be formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of a suffix *-ha*: *digrif-ha-u* 'to please' (*digrif* 'pleasant'). The 3. sing. consisted of the bare stem, as in other verbs (likewise the 2. sing. imperative § 140 *a*): *parha* 'lasts' BT 40. 14, also *para* PKM 71. 1, where *-h-* has been lost following the accent (*pereu* BY 10. 9, and *pery* are later). Occasionally *-h-* coalesced with the preceding consonant, and the resulting provection is attested in some forms: *bwyta* (< *bwyd* + *ha*) 'eats' WM 456. 25 (*bwyty* is later). As a result of the disappearance of post-tonic *-h-*, *-a* came to be regarded as a 3. sing. ending. It is added to the following classes of stems:

(1) Most denominative stems which lack a suffix: *argyweda* (*argywed* 'harm') BD 105. 16, *kyflea* (*kyfle* 'position') R 1286. 17 (verbal noun *kyflëu*, but also *kyflehäu*, see G 210), *kyfuyrgolla* (*cyfrgoll* 'perdition') LlA 35. 30, *hwydda* (*hwyd*, *chwyd* 'swelling') 148. 6, *dilyssa* (*dilys* 'certain') R 1254. 7, *gwarchaea* (*gwarchae* 'siege') 1285. 35, *gwassannaetha* (*gwassanaeth* 'service') LlA 28. 19, *llaessa* (*llaes* 'loose') R 1254. 10, *metha* (*meth* 'failure') 1253. 41, *saetha* (*saeth* 'arrow') 1272. 39.

(2) Stems not obviously denominative: *kerda* 'goes' LlA 167. 3, but *a gerd* BT 15. 17; *damvna* 'wishes' LlA 148. 26 (the noun is *damunet* 'wish'); *sathra* 'tramples' 147. 20, but *sathyr* RB 144. 26; *traetha* 'relates' BBC 8. 9.

(3) Stems in *-i̯-*, mostly denominatives: *kilya* 'recedes' (*cil* 'back') R 1382. 35, but *kil* LlHen 287. 9; *diffyccya* 'fails' (*diffyc* 'defect') LlA 167. 10, but *diffyc* BD 115. 6; *distrywa* (§ 8 *b* n.) 'destroys' (*distryw* 'destruction') LlA 19. 28, but *distryv* BD 112. 20; *tykya* 'avails' (*twc* 'success') PKM 9. 25.

(4) Denominative stems in *-ych-*: *gwledycha* 'governs' LlA 169. 17, *fflammycha* 'flames' MA 224[a]43, but *chwennych* 'desires' (*chwant* 'desire') R 1153. 15.

(5) Denominative stems in *-ha-*: *arvydocaa* 'signifies' BD 104. 2, *llavenhaa* 'rejoices' 106. 15, see p. xliv (*-haa* > ModW *-hâ*: *arwyddocâ*, *llawenhâ*, &c.).

There are instances also of *-ha* (analogical) added to form the 3. sing. present of verbs whose stems do not contain *-ha-*: *aulonydha* 'disturbs' BD 113. 24; *aruerha* (§ 129 *a*); *blodeuha* 'blossoms, thrives' BD 114. 18 (= *blodeua* RB 153. 21); *gwata* 'denies' (*gwad* + *ha*) R 1382. 30, but *gwada* 1256; *gwedha* 'beseems' LlA 165. 14, but *gweda* R 1272. 4; *poenha* 'punishes' LlA 28. 29, but *poena* 147. 18; *surha* 'turns sour' WM 483. 8 (= *sura* RM 123. 17); see BD xlv.

(*d*) There are some archaic endings which disappeared completely during the MW period. They seem to be survivals of the older verbal system shared by all the Celtic dialects. According to this system there were two forms for each person, namely absolute and conjunct. The absolute form was used when the verb stood independently at the head of the sentence; when the simple verb was preceded by a prefix, or a pre-verbal particle such as the negative, the conjunct was used. This system, which survives in OIr. (GOI 350 f.), was abandoned very early in the Brittonic languages. Most of the Welsh forms derive from the old absolute formations. In the 3. sing. (and pl.), however, the conjunct endings prevailed (see L & P 282), but a number of 3. sing. forms based on the old absolute are found in the early period. The following endings are attested:

(1) *-(h)it*: *dwyrëit* 'rises' HGCr 62. 20, *gwypit* 'knows' 73. 24, *gellit* 'is able' 75. 58, *dyrcheuit* 'rises' 90. 4, *tyruit* 'roars' CLlH 4. 20[a], *toit* 'covers' ib., *tohid* 27. 5[a], *llicrid* 'spoils' 27. 1[b], *reuhid* 'freezes' ib., *ottid* '(snow) falls' 27. 2[a], *meccid* 'fosters' 27. 6[a] (but *meckyt* B ii. 120. 1), *gelwit* 'calls' CLlH 37. 38[c], *chwerdit* 'laughs' R 1174. 41 (but *chwerdyt* 1028. 12), *krennit* '? brandishes' CA 18. 456. OW *prinit* 'buys', *agit*, *hegit* 'goes' Ox 1, *retit* 'runs' Comp; added to subjunctive stems in *elit* 'goes' R 581. 29, *gwnelit* 'makes' CLlH 25. 21[b].

Note the following examples, which demonstrate the original construction and use of absolute and conjunct forms: *Pereid y rycheu. Ny phara a'e goreu* 'The furrows last; he who made them lasts not' CLlH 44. 87[b, c], *trenghit golut, ny threingk molut* 'wealth perishes, fame perishes not', *tyuit maban, ny thyf y gadachan* 'an infant grows, his swaddling-clothes grow not' RBH 1082, *chwaryit mab noeth, ny chware mab newynawc* 'a naked boy plays, a hungry boy plays not' 1060.

(2) *-yt*: *eyt* 'goes' R 1055. 16, *perheyt* 'lasts' 1168. 28, *llewychyt* 'shines' CLlH 24. 11[b], *cwydit* 'falls' (rhyming with *vryt*) 24. 13[b], *llwytyd* 'prospers' LlHen 45. 14, also *meckyt*, *chwerdyt* (see 1 above).

(3) *-(h)awt*. Most of the forms seem to have a future meaning: ? *gwasgarawt* 'will scatter' CLlH 2. 9[a], *gunahaud* 'will make' BBC 54. 4, *reddaud* 'will run' 58. 1, *dirchavaud* 'will arise' 61. 5, *llettaud* 'will spread' HGCr 7. 65, *kymerawd* 'will take' 69. 11, *cosbawd* 'will punish' 69. 19, *parahawt* 'will last' BT 23. 8, *gyrhawt* 'will drive' AP 1. 28, *bydhawt* 'will be' WM 456. 34, *methawd* 'will fail' 457. 11, *ymhoelawd* 'will turn' 457. 13.

N. The forms *cluttaud* 'will be brought' BBC 10. 2, *briuhaud* 'will be broken' 58. 9, appear to be passive.

(4) *-yd*. This appears to be a relative ending (< *-*i̯o < -*i̯o, cf. *-yđ* in *yssyđ* § 66): *ni glivit* 'that hears not' BBC 20. 5, *a uedyd* 'that rule' BT 40. 23, *na welyd* 'that he sees not' HGCr 96. 1, *ny wneyd gwir* 'he who does not do justice' R 1055. 26. Cf. OW *nit egid* 'goes not' Comp.

§ 130. (*a*) Pl. 2. The regular ending is *-wch*. The umlaut in the

penult (i.e. *a* > *e* in *kerwch*) shows that a short *i* once stood before the personal ending (see L & P 283). The form with *-wch* contains the affixed pronoun (**swēs* > *chwi*), which coalesced with the earlier form with *-t(e)*.

N. The original ending was probably *-te* (cf. the Ir. conjunct form *-ith, -id*: *-berith*, &c.; see GOI 360). Without the affixed pronoun this would yield *-d* in Welsh, and Sir Ifor Williams has shown that there are a few early examples of *-yt* [ïd] (< **-i-te*): *dywëyt* (ms. *dyweit*) 'you declare' BT 27. 16, *erlynyt* 'you follow' 27. 17, also *crinyt* 'tremble' (2. pl. imper.) 45–46; see B xiii. 199–201.

(*b*) Pl. 3. In addition to the usual ending *-ant*, the following endings are found in the early period:

(1) *-ynt*, OW *-int*: *limnint* gl. *tondent*, *nertheint* gl. *armant*, *scamnhegint* gl. *leuant* Juv. MW: *dottint* 'they set' BBC 58. 8, *dygobryssyn* 'they hasten' AP 1. 1, *diuryssint* 'they hasten' CLlH 27. 5^{b}, *llwybryn* 'they go' 22. 8^{c}, *techyn* 'they (will) flee' AP 4. 96, *torrynt* 'they (will) break' R 582. 5.

(2) *-(h)awnt*, corresponding to the sing. *-(h)awt* (§ 129 *d* 3): OW *cuinhaunt* 'they will lament' Juv. MW *gwnahawnt* 'they will make' AP 1. 8, *pebyllyawnt* 'they will encamp' 77. 15, *bydawnt* 'they will be' 78. 5.

N. 1. *-h-* occurs in some forms of the 3. sing. and pl. by analogy with subjunctive forms (see § 137).

N. 2. The change *-nt* > *-n(n)* in the 3. pl. ending of the present and of other tenses is attested in early MW and even in OW: *tirran* 'they muster' YMTh 57. 7, *dygan* 'they bring' 57. 9, *darparan* 'they prepare' 57. 24, *bidan* 'they will be' 58. 26; imperf. OW *treidin* 'they should declare' Juv. MW *cvitin* 'they fell' BBC 95. 8, *kyuodyn* 'they rose' PKM 44. 11, *guelyn* 'they saw' 51. 26, *bydyn* 'they were' 65. 20; pret. *deuthan* 'they came' BBC 2. 8, *darvuan* 'they perished' 6. 11, *lladassan* 'they killed' CA 14. 361, *atcorsan* 'they returned' 14. 362.

§ 131. Impersonal. In early MW the following endings are also found:

(*a*) *-ator, -otor, -etor, -itor*. OW *ceph-itor* 'is obtained' Comp. MW *eiryach-ator* 'is spared' LlHen 86. 2, *can-otor* 'is sung' MA 133^{b}44, *kymysc-etor* 'is mixed' BT 55. 10, *gwel-itor* 'will be seen' R 1174. 16, *ken-itor* 'is sung' LlHen 86. 8, *treith-itor* 'is spoken of' 85. 14, *tel-itor* 'is paid' 86. 4. An analogical *-h-* occurs

in these endings: *can-hator* 'is sung' BT 75. 9, *gwel-hator* 'are seen' LlHen 44. 28, *guel-hitor* HGCr 90. 3 n. The consonant was originally *-d-*, but *d* + *h* (analogical) yielded *t* (wr. *-tt-*): *traeth-attor* 'is spoken' BT 22. 16, *brith-ottor* 'are variegated' BBC 33. 5, *meg-ittor* 'will be bred' 62. 5, *gwel-attor* 'will be seen' R 1054. 28, also *gwel-hattor* HGCr 90. 3, *ken-hittor* 'will be sounded (sung)' BBC 52. 7. Cf. *llem-ittyor* 'is leapt (upon)' R 1055. 20.

The following seem to have been influenced by forms in *-(h)awr* (see *b* below): *dyg-edawr* 'are brought' BT 75. 20, *dyg-etawr* 10. 16, *dyg-ettaur* HGCr 7. 67, *galw-etawr* 'is called' BT 41. 1, *galw-ettawr* 41. 2, *llosc-etawr* 'will be burned' 10. 19, *golch-ettawr* 'are washed' 41. 6, *dysgog-ettawr* 'is moved' 79. 1, *berw-hodawr* 'is boiled' 75. 8.

traethatter 'may be uttered' (R 1051. 33) is a pres. subj. form.

N. The above forms may represent old absolute forms in opposition to conjunct forms without *-d-*; cf. § 129 *d*.

(*b*) *-(h)awr*, with future meaning (cf. *-(h)awt*, *-(h)awnt*): *tal-haur* 'will be paid' HGCr 4. 27, *ffo-hawr* 'will be put to flight' AP 4. 106, *dial-awr* 'will be avenged' 4. 123, *etmyccawr* 'will be honoured' 6. 164, *agor-awr* 'will be opened' WM 456. 32, *yscar-hawr* 'will be separated' 470. 36.

§ 132. IMPERFECT. (*a*) Sing. 2. The ending in MW is -[üd]; by the ModW period it had become -[it] under the influence of the affixed pronoun *di* (*-ud di* > *it ti*).

N. There are indications that this change might have already occurred by the fourteenth century; see GDG lxxxix.

(*b*) Sing. 3. In addition to the usual ending *-ei*, two other endings are found in MW:

(1) *-i*, early MW; it causes umlaut of a preceding *-a-* in the stem: *renni* 'shared' (*rann-af*) LlHen 4. 9, *keri* 'loved' (*car-af*) 29. 3, *nodi* 'protected' CA 2. 36, *lledi* '(they) killed' (*llad-af*) 3. 66, *gogyuerchi* 'asked' (*gogyfarch-af*) 8. 197, *klywi* 'heard' 32. 795, *dylyi* 'merited' 32. 798, *gelwi* 'called' (*galw-af*) 44. 1107, *pelli* 'failed' (*pall-af*) HGCr 23. 16, *gorelwi* 'cried' (*goralw-af*) 48. 168, *gweli* 'saw' BBC 45. 4, *seui* 'stood' (*saf-af*) PKM 92. 9.

(2) *-(i)at*, in a few verbs only (probably derived from old middle forms with the ending *-to*, *-at* [ad] <**-a-to*; cf. Ir. *-benad*, *-carad*): *gwybot* 'to know': *gwydyat* WM 183. 6, *gvydat* BD 101. 26; *adnabot* 'to know, recognize': *atwaenat* SG 72. 22; *bot* 'to be': *buiad* BBC 50. 17, *bwyat* CLlH 4. 25[a], *bydat* 5. 30[b]; *pieu*: *pieuat* (§ 89); *didarbot*, *didorbot* 'to care': *didoryat* BD 172. 24 (? emend *didorynt*, see pp. 273–4).

(*c*) Pl. 3. Examples occur of *-eint*, formed by analogy with the 3. sing. *-ei*: *achubeint* 'they seized' WM 466. 38, *redeint* 'they ran' HGCr 44. 18, *caneint* 'they sang' LlA 95. 28.

§ 133. PRETERITE. Sing. 3. A number of old formations are represented by the various endings which occur in MW.

(*a*) Endings in *-s(s)* (< **-s-ti*).

(1) *-as*: *cafas* 'got', *gwelas* 'saw' (also *gweles*), *amwelas* 'visited' WM 142. 6. These are the only verbs in which it is regularly attested in MW, but it is occasionally found with other verbs, mostly in the early period: *bradas* 'betrayed' BBC 81. 17, *twyllas* 'deceived' ib., *creas* 'created' R 1424. 11 (but *crewys* BT 10. 12, *creawd* R 1153. 37), *talas* 'paid' CA 7. 174, *gwylyas* 'kept watch' CLlH 4. 18[a] (but *gwylwys* 3. 15[a], *gwyliis* 3. 16[a]), *techas* 'fled' 3. 14[b], *llewas* 'consumed' LlA 106. 12 (= *llewes* BDe 3. 10).

(2) *-es*, added to stems containing *-o-*/*-oe-*: OW *dicones* 'wrought' Juv. MW *rodes* 'gave', *torres* 'broke', *arhoes* 'waited', *ffoes* 'fled', *anuones* 'sent', *colles* 'lost', *dodes* 'put', *sorres* 'sulked', *ymhoeles* 'turned, returned' (*ymchweles* LlA 73. 22, but *ymchwelwys* PKM 33. 10), also *gweles* 'saw'. There are very few instances of any other ending used with such verbs in MW. The following may be noted; they belong to late MW, when *-awd* was beginning to supplant the other endings: *canmolawd* 'praised' YCM 118. 12 (*canmoles* R 1405. 18), *gwahodawd* 'invited' ChO 8. 1, *agorawd* 'opened' FfBO 38. 25, *kynghorawd* 'advised' 39. 1, *gwrthodawd* 'rejected' 38. 21, *trossawd* 'translated' 57. 10.

(3) *-is*, added to many (but not all) stems containing *-a-*/*-aw-*, which are affected to *-e-*/*-ew-*: *trenghis* 'perished', *kedwis* 'kept', *peris* 'caused', *edewis* 'left' § 159, *eđewis* 'promised', *delis* 'caught', *gelwis* 'called', *menegis* 'declared', *eteliis* 'withheld', *cynheliis*

'supported', *diengis* 'escaped', *enwis* 'named' (OW *anu* § 30 *b* n. 2), *erchis* 'asked' (but *kyfarchwys* BR 12. 19, *kyuarchawd* 16. 9), *gwerendewis* 'listened', *seuis* 'stood', *trewis* 'struck', *dyrchefis* 'raised' (but *dyrchafwys* R 1186. 41), also *dechreuis* 'began' (*dechreu*) PKM 19. 18 (but *dechreuawt* 70. 8, *dechreuwys* BD 55. 22), *dineuis* 'emptied' (*dineu*) WM 122. 3, *ymeueilis* 'caught hold of' (*ymauael*) RC xxx. 247 (but *ymauaelwys* YCM 53. 24). Examples are found in late MW of *-awd* used with some of these verbs: *dallawd* 'caught' LlA 133. 6, *dyrchauawd* 'raised' YCM 44. 16, *galwawd* 'called' 51. 28, *managawd* 'declared' ChSDR 74. 926, *sauawd* 'stood' YCM 61. 4.

(4) *-wys*, *-ws*. This is the most common ending in MW (the more important exceptions are those verbs listed above and in *b*, *c* below). In most earlier prose texts it predominates over *-awd* (§ 133 *d*), but becomes less frequent later. For example, in BD (early thirteenth century) it is by far the most common ending (occurring mostly in the form *-ws*), while in LlA (late fourteenth century) it is very rare; see B xvii. 258–61; for YBH see pp. cxxv–cxxvi. In the ModW period it survives only (in the form *-ws*) in the spoken language of Glamorgan and Gwent, and some adjoining areas.

Examples, *-wys*: *pechuis* 'sinned' BBC 41. 14, *guiscvis* 'wore' 43. 16, *kyrchvys* 'made for' BD 56. 25, *gallvys* 'was able' 23. 11, *mynnwys* 'desired' 19. 20, *diffygywys* 'failed' PKM 8. 24; *-ws*: *bendigus* 'blessed' BBC 36. 1, *kyrchvs* 'made for' BD 134. 16, *trigvs* 'dwelt' 25. 12, *gallws* 'was able' 12. 11, *mynnvs* 'desired' 19. 24.

N. 1. In early poetry examples are found of the 3. sing. pres. endings *-it* and *-yt* (§ 129 *d* 1, 2) added to *s*-preterites: *delyess-id* 'held' HGCr 24. 35, *keress-yt* 'loved' 38. 171, *rodyss-it* 'gave' 62. 33, *kenytess-id* 'conquered' LlHen 26. 15, *medress-id* 'ruled' 26. 21, *pryness-id* 'bought' 10. 19, *llochess-id* 'harboured' (rhyming with *-yt*) 173. 27, *pregethyss-it* 'preached', *yscoryss-it* 'she begot' (both rhyming with *-yt*) BT 54. 12, *kewssit* 'got' 29. 16, *riues-it* 'reckoned' CA 32. 810, *disgyns-it* 'attacked' 17. 418, *llithyess-it* 'fed' 49. 1245.

N. 2. With the above forms cf. Gaul. *legasit* 'he placed' (see GOI 417).

(*b*) The *t*-preterite. In some verbs the 3. sing. contains *-t*. This *t* which originated in the 3. sing. became part of the root,

and consequently spread to other forms of the preterite. The following verbs have *t*-preterites in MW:

kymryt 'take': *kymerth*, *kymyrth* BD 21. 19, 12. 30 (*-rth* <* *-rt-*).

diffryt 'defend': *differth* BT 29. 24, *diffyrth* R 1159. 16, also *differwys* R 1191. 22.

mag-u 'rear': *maeth* CA 15. 366, CLlH 29. 18c, GDG 287. 5.

For *gwnaeth*, *aeth*, *doeth*, see § 143 n. 1.

amwyn 'contend' (stem *amwc*, 1. sing. pres. indic. *amyg-af*): *amwyth* BT 57. 8 (*-wyth* < * *-ukt-*), also *amuc* CA 29. 712, 3. pl. *amucsant* 28. 698, 3. sing. plup. *amucsei* R 1044. 19, 21.

dyrein 'come, rise, lead' (root **reg-*, 3. sing. pres. indic. *dyre*): *dyreith* LlHen 20. 24, *dyrreith* BT 54. 24.

can-u 'sing': *cant* CA 1, also *canawd* R 1292. 11, sing. 1. *keint* CA 37. 912, *keint-um* LlHen 40. 15, also *keneis* BT 80. 7, 2. *ceuntost* HGCr 6. 31.

gwan-u 'pierce': *gvant* BD 4. 3, sing. 1. *gweint* LlHen 17. 30.

N. There are early examples of *-yt* added to *t*-preterites (cf. *a* n. 1 above): *eith-yt* 'he went' HGCr 77. 17, *gwneith-yt* 'he made' BT 24. 19.

(*c*) The suffixless preterite.

(1) Alternation of the root vowel. (*a*) *e* Pres. / *aw* (< **ā*) Pret.: *dywed-af* 'I say, speak': *dywawt*, *dywat* (see WG 338), *dywot*, *dwot* B ix. 48. 25; *go(r)diwed-af* 'I overtake': *go(r)diwawd* (also *gordiwedawd* BR 4. 19); *gwared-af* 'I deliver': *gwarawt*. This formation is confined to the 3. sing.; the other forms are re-formations based on the regular verb: *dywed-eis* 'I said', *gordiwedassant* 'they overtook' BR 10. 3, &c. In ModW it has been completely abandoned in the literary language, but in the spoken language *dŵad* 'he said' (< *dywad*) still survives. (*b*) *w* Pres. / *u* [ü] (< **ou*) Pret.: *dyg-af* 'I bring' (stem *dwc*): *duc*, sing. 1. *dug-um*, 2. *dug-ost*, pl. 1. *dug-am*, *dug-om* YCM 163. 8, 3. *dug-ant* BD 58. 3, also *ducsant* 13. 20, *dug-assant* RB 3. 2–3 (by analogy with the formation of the regular verb), cf. plup. sing. 3. *ducsei* RM 242. 17, *dug-assey* BD 4. 10; *amuc* (see *b* above); *goruc* (§ 141).

(2) Reduplicated forms. (*a*) *kigleu* 'he heard' (stem *cleu* < **klou̯*), verbal noun *cly-bot*, *klyw-et*. Sing. 1. *kigleu* WM 144. 12–13, *kiglef* 470. 18. The other forms are re-formations based on

the regular verb: sing. 2. *clyw-eist*, pl. 1. *clyw-ssam*, 2. *clyw-ssawch*, *clyw-yssawch* LlA 116. 26, 3. *clyw-ssant*, *clyw-ssont* PKM 24. 9; (*b*) *adwaen* 'he knows', *atwen*, with pres. meaning (see § 158, also L & P 297).

(*d*) *-awd*, *-od* (see *a* 4 above). It commonly occurs in MW, and in ModW it has almost completely superseded all the other endings. Already in late MW it had largely superseded *-wys*, and was the most common ending with all verbs, except those dealt with in *a* 1, 2, 3, *b*, *c* above. It appears that this stage had been reached by the end of the fourteenth century; but the whole subject requires further investigation (see B xvii. 261).

Examples, *-awd*: *hebryghaud* 'accompanied' PKM 4. 1, *kerdaud* 'went' 6. 25, *kymhellaud* 'spurred' 12. 5, *atebavd* 'answered' BD 85. 14, *kylchynawd* 'encircled' BDe 7. 9, *govynnawd* 'asked' 7. 15; *-od*: *lladod* 'killed' YCM 148. 18, *disgynnod* 'dismounted' 156. 17, *gwarchaeod* 'besieged' B x. 56. 12.

N. *-awd* represents a development in Welsh itself, and is not attested in either Cornish or Breton. It has been explained as originating in analogical formations of the 3. sing. of some verbs with a suffixless preterite of the type *ĕ* / *aw* (< *ā*). Thus *go(r)diwedawd* 'he overtook' is an analogical formation based on the stem in the sing. 1. *go(r)diwed-eis*, 2. *go(r)diwed-eist*, &c. *go(r)diwedawd* ousted the original *go(r)diwawd* (*c* 1 *a* above), and the *-awd* was taken for an ending. Its use then spread to other verbs; see L & P 300.

§ 134. Pl. (*a*) There is much vacillation between *-a-* and *-y-* before *-ss-*; the tendency is for *-a-* to replace *-y-*: *kylyssant*, *torryssant*, *dywedyssam*, *collyssam*, *treulyssant*, *edrychyssant*, *kerdassant*, *kerdyssant*, *kymeryssant* WM 52. 3, 4, 61. 21, 72. 8, 63. 32–33, 64. 28–29, 69. 11, 72. 12, 86. 6–7 (early fourteenth century) = *kilyassant*, *torrassant*, *dywedassam*, *collassam*, *treulassant*, *edrychyssant*, *kerddassant*, *kerdassant*, *kymerassant* RM 36. 19–20, 44. 1, 52. 2, 46. 1, 46. 20, 50. 2, 52. 5, 62. 22 (late fourteenth century).

The vowel is often dropped after *-l-*, *-r-*, *-aw-*, *-yw-*, *-ew-*, *-eu-*: *gvelsant* 'they saw' BD 143. 14, *kymerssant* 'they took' 47. 8 (also *kymeryssant*, *kymerassant*, see above), *ymadawssam* 'we left' Hg MSS ii. 292, 32–33, *clywssawch* 'you heard' (also *clywyssawch*,

see § 133 *c* 2 *a*), *llewssant* 'they ate' BDe 22. 6, *dechreussam* 'we began' BD 173. 5 (also *dechreuassant* 55. 27); after *-g-* in *ducsant*, besides *dugassant* § 133 *c* 1 *b*, also *amucsant* § 133 *b*.

(*b*) *-om* and *-ont* are often found in the 1. and 3. pl., especially in WBRh: *gwelsom* 'we saw' PKM 39. 21, *eistedyssont* 'they sat' 13. 22. Instances of *-och* in the 2 pl. are rare: *doethoch* 'ye came' WM 161. 20, but *doethawch* RM 228. 16. *-om*, *-och*, *-ant* are the usual endings in Mod. literary W.

§ 135. Impersonal. (*a*) Forms in *-t* (≡ *d*), corresponding to the 3. sing. forms in *-s* (§ 133 *a*). The following endings are found:

-at: *caffat* 'was had' RM 141. 8 (§ 161), *gwelat* 'were seen' PKM 40. 6, *artuad* 'was blackened' BBC 23. 1–2, *briwat* 'was crushed' CLlH 5. 30^{c}.

-et: *anuonet* 'was sent', *collet* 'was lost', *dodet* 'was set', *rodet* 'was given'; also *gwelet* 'was seen' BD 41. 24, *ganet* 'was born', and early *riued* 'was reckoned' MA 256^{a}17, *llated* 'was killed' 160^{b}29.

-it: *edewit* 'were left' PKM 38. 27, *perit* 'was caused' 77. 2, *deliit* 'was caught' BD 153. 11, *gelwit* 'was called' 42. 27. It is not always easy to distinguish between the impers. pret. in *-it* and the impers. imperf. (§ 127).

-wyt, *-wt*. *-wyt*: *brathwyt* 'were wounded' BD 18. 22, *byrvyt* 'was driven' 34. 12, *cladwyt* 'was buried' 21. 16; *-wt*: *urdvt* 'was ordained' BD 24. 10, *byryvt* 79. 29, *cladvt* 30. 23. This ending spread at the expense of the others, and has become general in ModW.

-pwyt. It is usually attached to the pret. stem: *aethpvyt* 'there was a going' BD 10. 25, *deuthpwyt* 'there was a coming' WM 141. 29–30 (*doethpvt* BD 139. 17), *gunaethpvyt* 'was made' BD 44. 11, *gorucpwyt* 'was done' WM 452. 19, *ducpwyt* 'were brought' PKM 20. 4, *clywyspwyt* 'was heard' BDe 21. 12 (*clywspwyt* R 1155. 31, also *clywyt* BD 39. 8), *dechreuspwyt* 'was begun' SG 291. 5 (but *dechreuwyt* WM 47. 4, *dechreuit* RM 32. 30). It is added to the pres. stem in the following forms: *dalpwyt* 'was caught' RB 388. 3 (also *deliit*, see above, *delit* R 1227. 25, *dellit* RB 176. 10), *kynnicpwyt* 'was offered' RB 398. 9 (but *kynigwyt* WM 168. 5, *kynnigywyt* RM 234. 10), *gatpvyt* 'was left' BD 41. 6 (also *gattat* CLlH 34. 11^{a}), *dywetpvyt* 'was said' BD 21. 1, *dywetpvt* 88. 28

(also *dywespwyt* WM p. 211. 33, *dywedwyt* LlA 115. 4 = *dywetpwyt* BDe 17. 18–19), *kanbvyt* 'was sounded' BD 9. 27, *talpwyt* 'was accorded' Hg MSS ii. 233. 29, *cladpwyt* 'were buried' 262. 34 (also *cladwyt*, see above under *-wyt*).

(*b*) There are forms where the consonant (originally *t*) has been added to a consonantal stem in *-d-* at an early period, giving *-s* in Welsh: *llas* (cf. Ir. *-slass*) < **slad-to-* 'was killed' WM 503. 2, 5 (but *lladwyt* 503. 4), *gwys* (cf. Ir. *-fess*) < **u̯id-to-* 'is known' LlB 44. 25.

N. The above forms, like the corresponding Ir. forms, are based on the IE. verbal adjectives in *-to-*, *-tā-*; see GOI 437.

(*c*) In early poetry there occur a few pl. passive forms, in which *-eint* has been added to the usual passive (or impersonal) form: OW *diconetent* (*-ent* = *-eint*) 'have been made up' Comp. MW *perideint* '? were marshalled' CA 33. 834, *gelwideint* 'were called' 42. 1060 (or for *gwelideint* 'were seen', cf. *gwelydeint* 43. 1083), *colledeint* 'have been lost' CLlH 5. 28^{c}, *llesseint* 'have been killed' CLlH 40. 57^{c}, BBC 63. 4, HGCr 44. 26, also *lledesseint* 'have been killed' CLlH 5. 28^{b} (probably influenced by the form of the 3. pl. plup.), *lledessynt*: *a chet lledessynt wy ladassan* 'and though they were slain, they (also) slew' CA 14. 361.

§ 136. PLUPERFECT. (*a*) Both *-a-* and *-y-* are found before *-ss-* (cf. the pl. pret. forms § 134): *carassei* (*caru* 'love') LlHen 127. 10, *caryssei* BD 27. 13; *diaghassei* (*diangc* 'escape') BD 67. 8, *diaghyssei* 38. 30; *gallassey* (*gallu* 'be able') BD 9. 10, *gallyssei* 130. 14; *parassei* (*peri* 'cause') BD 90. 22, *paryssei* 69. 25. The vowel is sometimes dropped after *-l-*, *-r-*, *-aw-*, *-yw-*, *-ew-*, *-eu-*: *guelsei* 'had seen' BD 116. 29, *kevssynt* 'they had got' 49. 21, *klyvssei* 'had heard' 69. 11, *llewssei* 'had consumed' CLlH 37. 34^{b}; after *-g-* in *ducsei*, besides *dugassei* § 133 *c* 1 *b*, also *amucsei* § 133 *b*.

(*b*) Impersonal. The impersonal or passive of some verbs is formed by adding *-oed* to a pret. pass. form: *archad-oed* 'had been requested' BD 79. 10 (*archyd-oed* 133. 22, but *erchessit* 79. 16), *dywedad-oed* 'had been spoken of' 79. 3, *ganad-oed* 'had been born' 79. 20 (*ganyd-oed* 72. 16), *lladyd-oed* 'had been killed' 16. 29 (but *lladessit* 125. 10, *lladyssyt* 32. 20), *magad-oed* 'had been

reared' 153. 4 (but *magyssyt* 86. 21, *megyssyt* 91. 14, *megessyt* 61. 8), *adawad-oed* 'had been promised' HGrC 122. 18, *barnad-oed* 'had been adjudged' Hg MSS ii. 270. 39.

N. The following forms appear to serve as 3. sing. active: *annvonadoed*: *Hvnnv a annvonadoed yna ar yr amperavdyr* 'It was he whom he then (had) sent to the Emperor' B ix. 225. 4 (= *anuonassei* Llan 27, see B ix. 230); *dysgydoed*: *coniuraciwn . . . a ddysgydoed kyn no hynny* 'a charm which she had learnt before then' YBH 16. 1044–6 (see note, p. cxxix). Cf. also *dawedadoedit* 'had been told' Hg MSS ii. 269. 7, with *-it* (≡ *id*) added to *dawedadoed* to form the passive.

Subjunctive

§ 137. Subjunctive forms are characterized by *-h-*, which forms part of the ending added to the stem. This *h* coalesces with a preceding consonant, causing provection. Pres. *nottwyf* (*nod-i* 'note'), *dycko* (*dwg* 'brings'), *dywetto* (*dywed-yd* 'say'), *eistetho* (*eisted* 'sit'), *gwrtheppo* (*gwrtheb* 'answer'). Imperf. *dottit* (*dod-i* 'place, put') PKM 15. 5. After vowels and sonants the post-tonic *h* disappears, but it is written in the early period: *dygoganher* (*dygogan* 'foretell') AP 1. 13, *clywho* (*clyw-et* 'hear') LlB 121. 11. In ModW it has completely disappeared, and provection is rare.

N. The *h* comes from primitive *s*, and it represents (in part) an old formation whereby *s* was added to the root to form the subj. stem (for the *s-* subj. in Ir., see GOI 387–95). There are a few forms in MW in which primitive *-s-* was added to a consonantal root: *gwares* (= Ir. *fo-ress*, **μo-ret-s-ti*) 'he may succour' HGCr 83. 76, *ryres* (**ro-ret-s-ti*) 'may run' B ii. 10. 5, *duch* (**deuk-s-ti*) 'may bring' HGCr 3. 9 (*dyduch* 83. 92), *gwnech* (**μreg-s-ti*) 'may do' BT 37. 18, see L & P 287.

§ 138. PRESENT. (*a*) Sing. 1. The following endings are also attested: *-oef*: *talloef* 'I may pay' ZCP xx. 54. 23; *-wef*: *talwef* 'may I pay' HGCr 66. 31; *-of*: *gwiscof* 'I may equip' PKM 81. 8, *delof* 'I shall come' YBH 29. 1814, *bof* 'I may be' 30. 1899, *gouynnof* 'I may ask' Hg MSS ii. 260. 13.

(*b*) Sing. 2. *-wyr*, deriving from an old deponent. It occurs in a few early poetic forms; these have an optative meaning (see L & P 306–7): *a-n bwyr gwar* 'mayest thou be gentle to us' BT 7. 5, *a-m rothwyr dy volawt* 'allow me to praise thee' (lit. 'mayest thou give me thy praise') 3. 25, *edrychuir-de varanres mor* 'look thou

upon the fury of the sea' BBC 106. 6, *amwarandawyr* 'hearken thou' B ii. 121. 37.

(*c*) Sing. 3. The following endings are also attested: *-oe*: *creddoe* 'may believe' BBC 53. 15; *-wy*: *dirchafuy* 'shall rise' BBC 59. 13–14, *guledichuy* 'shall rule' 59. 16, *gwelhvy* 'may see' 74. 2, *achupvy* 'may seize' 75. 10, *nottvy* 'may specify' 76. 7, *arbettwy* 'shall spare' AP 4. 116, *dalwy* '? may hold' CA 20. 482, *rodwy* 'may give' R 1030. 8, *donnwy* 'may endow' LlHen 31. 26, *trefnwy* 'may arrange' HGCr 31. 155, *crettwy* 'may trust' WM 475. 31.

(*d*) Pl. 3. The following endings are also attested: *-oent*: *deuedoent*, *deuetoent* 'they may say' ZCP xx. 64. 11, 33, *talhoent* 'they may pay' AL i. 228. 10, *deloent* 'they may come' DB 81; *-wynt*: *kaffwynt* 'they may find' R 1054. 24, *dychyrchwynt* 'they will make for' AP 4. 113, *atchwelwynt* 'they will return' 6. 177, *drychafwynt* 'they will arise' 6. 178, *Na cheisswynt* 'Let them not seek' 7. 193, *mynhwynt* 'they may desire' LlB 16. 29.

(*e*) Impers. *-atter*: *traeth-atter* (§ 131 *a*).

§ 139. IMPERFECT. Impers. There are a few examples of *-(h)et*: *cladhet* 'were buried' WM 469. 7, *gofynnet* 'might be asked' p. 220. 25 (= *gouynnit* 440. 5).

Imperative

§ 140. (*a*) Sing. 2. Like the 3. sing. pres. indic. it consists of the bare stem, but with no affection; forms in *-(h)a* (§ 129 *c*): *plycca* 'fold thou' RM 97. 11, *oetta* 'delay' R 1254. 21 (also *oeda* 1285. 34), *llunnya* 'draw up' PKM 18. 6, *kerda* 'proceed' 69. 2.

(*b*) Sing. 3. There are examples of *-(h)it*: *elhid* (*el-*, *mynet* 'go') BBC 101. 15, *rothid* (*roð-i* 'give') CLlH 29. 24^{c}, *gwrthottit* (*gwrthod* 'repel') AP 2. 41, *bernit* (*barn-u* 'judge') HGCr 31. 153, *seuit* (*seu-yll* 'stand') 36. 134, *kedwid* (*cadw* 'keep') 89. 178, *gwrthledit* (*gwrthlad* 'ward off') LlA 26. 22, *torrid* (*torr-i* 'break') GDG 173. 43, *amdiffynnit* (*amdiffyn* 'defend') SG 261. 26, *madeuit* (*madeu* 'forgive') YBH 44. 2848.

IRREGULAR VERBS

§ 141. Gwneithur, Gwneuthur 'do, make'.

Indicative Mood

	Present		Imperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*gwnaf, gwneif* (§ 128 *a*)	*gwnawn*	*gwnawn*	*gwnaem*
2.	*gwney, guneit* (§ 128 *b*)	*gwnewch*	*gwnaut*	*gwnaewch*
3.	*gwna, gwnelit* (§ 129 *d* 1)	*gwnaant* AP 3. 80	*gunaei* BD 50. 19	*gwneynt* BR 1. 21
	gunahaud (§ 129 *d* 3)	*gwnahawnt* (§ 130 *b* 2)	*gwneei* CA 11. 273	
	gwneyd (§ 129 *d* 4)	*gwnant*	*gwnai* (§ 7 n.)	
	Impers. *gwneir*		*gwneit*	

	Preterite i		Preterite ii	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*gwreith* CA 44. 1102	*gwnaetham*	*gorugum*	*gorugam*
	gwneithum LlHen 316. 9			
	gwneuthum			
2.	*gwneuthost* B ix. 331. 1	*gwnaethawch*	*gorugost*	*gorugawch*
	gwnaethost			
3.	*gwnaeth*	*gwnaethant*	*goruc*	*gorugant*
	guanaid CA 31. 783			
	gwneithyt (§ 133 *b* n.)			
	Impers. *gwnaethpwyt* (§ 135 *a*)		*gorucpwyt*	

Perfect		Pluperfect	
Sing.		Sing.	Pl.
1. *gwneddwyf* GDG 146. 9		*gwnathoedwn*	
2. *gwneddwyd* ib. 245. 45		*gwnaethoedut*	
		gwnathoedut	
3. *gwneddyw* ib. 217. 37		*gwnaethoed* LlB 33. 22	*gwnaethoedyn*
		gwnathoed PKM 52. 34	*gwnathoedynt*
		gwnadoed	
		Impers. *gwnathoydit* YBH 16. 1018	
		gwnaethyssit ib. 28. 1748	

Subjunctive Mood

Present		Imperfect	
Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1. *gwnel(h)wyf*		*gwnel(h)wn*	
2. *gwnel(h)ych*	*gwnel(h)och*	*gwnelut* BD 75. 12	
3. *gwnel*	*gwnel(h)ont*	*gwnel(h)ei*	*gwnel(h)ynt*
gwnech (§ 137 n.)	*gwnelwynt* LlB 113. 28		
gwnaho AP 4. 100	*gwnahont* BBC 61. 15		
Impers. *gwnel(h)er*		*gwnel(h)it*	

Imperative Mood

Sing.	Pl.
1.	*gwnawn*
2. *gwna*	*gwnewch*
3. *gwnaet*	*gwnaent*
Impers. *gwnel(h)er*	

N. The above verb in some of its forms has been influenced by the root **ag-*, though it is only partly a compound of *ag-*. The root originally contained *-r-*, cf. Bret. *groaff*, Corn. *guraf* (see L & P 337), OW *guragun* 'let us make' St. Chad, *gwreith* 'I made' CA 44. 1102, also *gwreith* 'deed', *guereit* CA 31. 771, and *go-r-uc* 'he did'. It is likely that *n* replaced *r*

through some analogical influence (probably that of a verb cognate with Ir. *gni-* 'to do'; see L & P 370–1).

The earliest known form of the verbal noun is *gwneithur* (? < **gwreithur*, by dissimilation), later *gwneuthur* (§ 4); in late MW the form *gwneuthud* (IGE² 191. 7) occurs, ModW *gwneud*.

The subj. stem *gwnel-* is based on *el-* (*mynet* § 142).

For *go-r-uc*, cf. *d-uc*, *am-uc* (§ 133 *b*, *c*); see L & P 346.

For the forms *gorwyf*, *goryw*, *goreu*, &c., 'I have made', &c., see § 155 n. 3.

§ 142. Mynet 'go'.

Indicative Mood

	Present		Imperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*af*	*awn*	*awn*	*aem*
2.	*ey*	*ewch*	*aut*	
3.	*aa* CLlH 22. 7[b], *a* *agit*, *hegit* *elit*, *eyt* *egid*, see § 129 *d* 1, 2, 4	*aant*, *ant*	*aei* (§ 7 n.)	*eynt*, *aent*
	Impers. *eir*		*eit*	

	Preterite		Perfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*eithum* LlHen 3. 21 *euthum*	*aetham*	*athwyf* *ethwyf*	*ethym*
2.	*aethost*	*aethawch*	*athwyt*	
3.	*aeth* *eithyt* (§ 133 *b* n.)	*aethant* *aethont*	*ethyw* *edyw* RM 103.13	*ethynt*
	Impers. *aethpwyt* (§ 135 *a*)			

Pluperfect

	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*athoedwn*	
3.	*athoed* *adoed* BD 137. 10	*athoedynt*

Subjunctive Mood

	Present		Imperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*el(h)wyf*	*el(h)om*	*el(h)wn*	*elem, elym* WM 644. 28
2.	*el(h)ych*	*el(h)och*	*el(h)ut*	
3.	*el*	*el(h)wynt*	*el(h)ei*	*el(h)ynt*
	aho RM 140. 16	*eloent* BD 111. 20		
		el(h)ont; *ahont* AP 5. 142; *aon* HGCr 8. 72		

Impers. *el(h)er*

Imperative Mood

	Sing.	Pl.
1.		*awn*
2.	*dos*	*ewch*
3.	*aet*	*aent*
	el(h)id (§ 140 *b*)	

§ 143. Dyuot 'come'.

Indicative Mood

Present

	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*deuaf, doaf*	*deuwn, down*
2.	*deuy, dewy* WM 425. 16	*deuwch, dowch*
	doy, doit (§ 128 *b*)	
3.	*daw*	*deuant, doant*
	do BT 38. 17	*dawant* (see DB 125)

Impers. *deuir, doir, dewir* (see DB 125)

Consuetudinal Present and Future

	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*dybytaf* LlHen 22. 6	
2.	*dyuydyd* ib. 296. 5.	
3.	*dybyd* R 577. 11	*dybydant* BT 26. 12–13
	dyuyd CLlH 35. 21^{c}	
	dypi WM 478. 11	
	dybi RM 119. 10; *dyui* HGCr 92. 56	
	deubyd BT 64. 8; *deupi* BBC 61. 13; *deubi* BT 3. 9	

	Imperfect		Consuetudinal Past	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*deuwn, down*	*doem*		
2.	*deuut, dout*			
3.	*deuei, doei*	*deuynt* BD 145. 25	*dybydei*	*dybydyn*
	doi	*doyn* ib. 38. 26	CA 6. 144	BT 41. 3
	dawei	*deueint* LlA 97. 23		
	(see DB 125)	*doent* YBH 51. 3301		

	Preterite i		Preterite ii	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*deuthum*	*deutham*		
	deuthym	*doetham*		
	LlA 128. 8			
	doethum			
	douthum			
	BBC 22. 13			
2.	*deuthost*	*doethawch*	*dyuuost*	
	doethost	*doethoch*	WM 458. 11	
3.	*deuth, doeth*	*deuthant* BBC 46. 6	*dybu*	*dyuuant*
		deuthan (§ 130 *b* n. 2)	R 1145. 23	WM 488. 13
		doethant RM 18. 2	*dyfu*	
		doethont WM 27. 28	BBC 40. 2	

Impers. *deuthpwyt, doethpwyt* (§ 135 *a*)

	Perfect		Pluperfect	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*dothwyf*	*dodym*	*dathoedwn*	
	dodwyf			
2.	*dothwyt*	*dodywch*		
	dodwyt			
3.	*doethyw*	*dodynt*	*doethoed*	*doethoedynt*
	dothyw	*dethynt*	*dothoed*	*dothoedynt*
	dodyw		*dathoed*	*dathoedynt*
	dedyw			*doethesynt*
				B iv. 195. 34

Subjunctive Mood

	Present i		Present ii	
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*del(h)wyf*		*dybwyf* R 1183. 20	
	delof (§ 138 *a*)			
2.	*del(h)ych*			
3.	*del*	*del(h)ont*	*dyppo* CLlH 27. 7	*dyffont*
		del(h)oent	*dybo* R 1183. 21	AP 5. 132
		del(h)wynt	*dyffo* LlHen. 74. 15	
		deuhont	*dyuo* B iv. 128. 228	
		BT 3. 8	*deupo* CA 9. 225	
	Impers. *del(h)er*		*dyffer* WM 483. 2	

	Imperfect i		Imperfect ii
	Sing.	Pl.	Sing.
1.	*del(h)wn*		*dyffwn* MA 249^{b}51
2.	*del(h)ut*	*delewch* RM 137. 21	
3.	*del(h)ei* *deuhei* WM 256. 3	*del(h)ynt*	*dyffei* AP 1. 24

Imperative Mood

	Sing.	Pl.
1.		*down*
2.	*dyfydd* GDG 341. 35	*dowch*
	dabre BBC 101. 13	*dewch*
	debre GDG 310. 64	
	degle ib. 156. 46	
	dyret PKM 15. 3	
3.	*deu(h)et*,	*deuent*
	doet	*doent*
	del(h)et	

N. 1. The forms *gwnaeth*, *aeth*, *doeth* are examples of the *t*-preterite, § 133 *b* (*aeth* < **ag-t-*, *doeth* < **dōkt-* < **do-ag-t-*; the root is **ag'-*, cf. OW *agit*, Lat. *agō*). The 1. sing. is characterized by affection, derived from *-t-ō* (> *-t-ū* > *-t-ǖ* > *-t-ī*), e.g. *gwreith* (§ 141), also *im-t-eith* 'I went' HGCr 7. 42, cf. *keint* 'I sang', *gweint* 'I pierced' (§ 133 *b*). Later the endings of the suffixless preterite (cf. *bu-um*, *dug-um*) were added to these forms, thus **gwreith-um*, *gwneith-um*, *gwneuthum*; *eith-um*, *euthum* (§ 4).

N. 2. The subj. *el* < **el-ā-t*, cf. Gr. ἐλαύνω.

N. 3. *gwnedwyf, gwnathoedwn*, &c., *athwyf*, &c., *dothwyf*, &c., were formed by adding the pres. and imperf. forms of *bot* to the pret. stem. They had become rare by the late MW period: *dothwyf* WM 459. 18 = *deuthum* RM 105. 21.

N. 4. *dybyd, deubyd*, &c., consist of *dy-*, *deu-* (containing the root **ag'*-), and forms of *bot*. They are found in the earlier texts, and are sometimes confused with the more regular formations, e.g. the impers. pres. subj. *dyffer* WM 483. 2; in RM 123. 13 the form is *deler*.

N. 5. In addition to the forms in the conjugation of *dyuot* given above, forms with an additional prefix *dy-* are attested in the early period: Indic. pres. sing. 3. *dydaw* AP 4. 107, *dydo* R 1055. 23, pl. 3. *dydeuant* R 1183. 19; fut. i. impers. *dydeuhawr* BT 77. 23; ii. sing. 3. *dydybyd* BT 42. 20–21; imperf. sing. 3. *dydeuei* Cymmr xvii. 140. 26; pret. sing. 3. *dy doeth* LlHen 306. 1; perf. sing. 3. *dydotyw* LlHen 264. 9. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *dydel* LlHen 264. 11, *dydeuho* BT 29. 9, pl. 3. *dydelwynt* R 1177. 26–27.

N. 6. *dos* 'go!'. It is also found with the meaning 'come!': *Dos yma . . . y gyscu* 'Come here to sleep' RM 176. 12. Similarly Bret. *deuz*, Corn. *dues*; see further L & P 335–6.

N. 7. *dyret* 'come' is a compound of **ret-* (*redec* 'run', cf. Ir. *rethid* 'runs'); *dabre, debre* are probably compounds of **reg-* 'rise', see L & P 389.

§ 144. **Bot** 'to be'.

Indicative Mood

Present

Sing.	Pl.
1. *wyf, oef* BBC 50. 2	*ym*
2. *wyt*	*ywch*
3. *yw, (y) mae, (y) taw, oes*	*ynt, (y) maent, y maen* BD 66. 16

Impers. *ys*

Consuetudinal Present and Future

Sing.	Pl.
1. *bydaf, bytif* (§ 128 *a*)	*bydwn*
2. *bydy*	*bydwch*
3. *byd, bit* R 1030. 3	*bydant, bidan* (§ 130 n. 2)
bi BT 12. 20	*bydawnt* (§ 130 *b* 2)
bydhawt (§ 129 *d* 3)	*bwyant* BT 44. 10
biawt R 581. 14	*bint* 64. 22

Imperfect

Sing.	Pl.
1. *oedwn*	*oedem*
2. *oedut*	*oedewch*
3. *oed*	*oedynt*, *oedein* R 1197. 32

Impers. *oedit*

Consuetudinal Past

Sing.	Pl.
1. *bydwn*	*bydem*
2. *bydut*	*bydewch*
3. *bydei*, *buei* CLlH 36. 29[b]	*bydynt*, *bydyn* (§ 130 n. 2)
bydat, *bwyat* (§ 132 *b* 2)	*buyint* BBC 96. 2
	bwyn (read *bwyyn*) CLlH 5. 26[a]

Impers. *bydit*

Preterite

Sing.	Pl.
1. *buum*, *bum*	*buam*, *buom*
2. *buost*	*buawch*
3. *bu*	*buant*, *buont*

Impers. *buwyt*

Pluperfect

Sing.	Pl.
1. *buasswn*	
2. *buassut*	
3. *buassei*, *byssei*	*buassynt*, *buessynt*

Subjunctive Mood

Present

Sing.	Pl.
1. *bwyf*, *bof* (§ 138 *a*)	*bom*
2. *bych*, *bwyr* (§ 138 *b*)	*boch*
3. *bo*, *boet* R 1031. 26	*bont*, *bon*
OW *boi*, *boit*	*boent*, *bwynt*

Also *bydwyf*, *bythwyf*, &c.

Impers. *byther*

Imperfect

	Sing.	Pl.
1.	*bewn*	*beym*
2.	*beut, byhut* BT 12. 10 *behut* FfBO 35. 18	
3.	*bei, pei* BT 65 11.	*beynt*

Also *bydwn, bythwn*, &c.
Impers. *bythit*

Imperative Mood

	Sing.	Pl.
1.		*bydwn*
2.	*byd*	*bydwch*
3.	*bit, boet* BT 44. 10 *poet* AP 2. 43	*bint* MA 375[a]21 *boent, bwynt*

N. 1. The above forms derive originally from two different roots: **es* (pres. and imperf. indic.), cf. Lat. *est*, and **bheu* (the forms in *b*-), cf. Lat. *fui*. The stem *byd*- comes from **biu̯*- < **bhwiu̯e*-; *bu* (Ir. -*bo*) < **bou*'- < **bhou̯e*-; *bo* < **bā*- < **bhwā*-.

N. 2. The prefix *yd*-, *ytt*- occasionally occurs with the forms of the pres. and imperf.: pres.: *ydwyf, yttwyf*; *ydiw, yttiw*, &c., OW *hittoi*; imperf.: *yttoedwn*; *ydoed*, &c.

§ 145. Syntax of the verb *Bot*

As a **substantive verb,** usually denoting existence: *yr wyf* 'I am, I exist'. It may be modified by an adverb: *kyt bwyf i yno hyt ympenn y ulwydyn* 'though I be there till the end of the year' PKM 3. 15.

It commonly serves as an auxiliary verb with the verbal noun in a periphrastic construction. The verbal noun is preceded by *yn* / *y* or *wedy*, according as to whether durative or completed action is expressed (§§119 *a*, 120 *a*, 121 *b*, 122 *a*). The usual order is verb 'to be' + *yn* / *wedy* + verbal noun; the verbal noun may, however, come first, in which case *yn* / *y* is usually dropped: *Medylyaw yd wyf . . . yr hynn ny medylyut ti amdanaf i* 'I am thinking that which thou wouldst not think concerning me' PKM 86. 10–11; *yn* / *y* is occasionally found in this position: *Yn hela yd oedwn yn Iwerdon dydgueith* 'I was hunting in Ireland one day' PKM 35. 11.

As **copula.** Here it serves merely to link a nominal predicate

with its subject, and to denote person, number, tense, and mood. The predicate may be a noun or an adjective. Noun: *Brenhin corunawc wyf i* 'A crowned king am I' PKM 2. 23, *Arch didraha yw honno* 'A modest request is that' 16. 17. It may be a definite noun or pronoun: *Arawn urenhin Annwuyn wyf i* 'Arawn king of Annwn am I' PKM 2. 26, *honno oed tryded prif rieni yn yr ynys hon* 'she was one of the three matriarchs in this island' 30–31, *Miui yw Llwyt uab Kil Coet* 'I am Llwyd son of Cil Coed' 64. 5–6. Adjective: *Hen wyf fi* 'Old am I' CLlH 21. 3[a], *Parawt wyf i* 'Ready am I' B v. 215. 18, *diuwyn oed pob un iwrthi hi* 'each one was unlovely compared with it' PKM 46. 15.

N. 1. Occasionally the predicate is preceded by *ys*: *ys dewr a was wyti* 'a brave lad art thou' YBH 8. 488. But this use of *ys* is not common in MW, and has been entirely abandoned in ModW.

When the noun or adjective comes after the copula, *yn* / *y* may be used with it: *Pwyll, Pendeuic Dyuet, a oed yn arglwyd ar seith cantref Dyuet* 'Pwyll, prince of Dyfed, was lord over the seven cantrefs of Dyfed' PKM 1. 1, *yd oed yn gyn hyspysset ganthunt y gyniuer collet a gollyssynt eiryoet* 'they were as conscious of every loss they had ever sustained' 47. 14, *ac y maent yn barawt* 'and they are ready' 87. 20–21. Very often, however, the nominal predicate is found in this position without *yn* / *y*: *Bendigeiduran uab Llyr a oed urenhin coronawc ar yr ynys hon* 'Bendigeidfran son of Llŷr was crowned king over this island' PKM 29. 1, *Math uab Mathonwy oed arglwyd ar Wyned* 'Math son of Mathonwy was lord over Gwynedd' 67. 1, *y bu barawt* 'it was ready' 87. 7–8.

N. 2. There is generally no formal distinction between the substantive verb and the copula in Welsh.

N. 3. In the early period the order copula + predicate + subject was common in independent, affirmative sentences: *ys dyhed a beth gadu dan wynt a glaw y kyfryw dyn a dywedy di* 'a shameful thing it is to leave in wind and rain a man such as thou tellest of' WM 458. 19–20, *Oed melynach y fenn no blodeu y banadyl. Oed gwynnach y chnawd no distrych y donn* 'Yellower was her head than the flower of the broom, whiter was her flesh than the foam of the wave' 476. 1–4. When the subject is a personal pronoun, a personal form of the copula is used, as in the following examples: *Wyf keuyngrwm, wyf trwm, wyf truan* 'I am bent of back, I am heavy, I am wretched' CLlH 9. 3[c], *wyf claf heno* 'I am sick tonight' 24. 13[c].

Later this type was largely superseded in MW prose by the order predicate + copula + subject, and also copula + subject (or subject + copula) + predicate; see Watkins and MacCana, B xviii. 1–25.

N. 4. When there is no specific reference to time, the nominal predicate may occur without the copula. Sentences thus constituted are commonly termed pure nominal sentences. Examples are found in early poetry, and the construction is common in gnomes and proverbs: *Llym awel; llum brin. Anhaut caffael clid* 'Keen is the breeze, bare is the hill. It is difficult to find shelter' CLlH 27. 1^{a}, *Gwedw pwyll heb anmyned* 'Reason without patience is of little avail' (lit. 'a widow') B ii. 32. 10.

The usual order, as in the examples quoted above, is predicate + subject; but it appears that the subject could come first when it happened to be a personal pronoun: *Hi hen; eleni y ganet* 'Old is she; this year was she born' CLlH 10. 14^{c}. It may have been the rule for the initial consonant of the predicate to be lenited in such cases: *Mi ereint uab erbin* 'I am Gereint fab Erbin' WM 399. 27–28. The whole subject requires further investigation; see T. J. Morgan, TC 284–5.

A construction without the verb 'to be' occurs also in salutations, thus: *Gwyn dy vyt Vargret* 'Blessed art thou, Margaret!' B ix. 332. 37, *Tagneved yuch vrodyr* 'Peace be unto you, brethren!' x. 31. 2; in expressions of emotion, such as exclamations: *Oy a Duw, . . ., guae ui uy mot yn achaws y'r wydwic honn o wyr Ynys y Kedyrn; a meuyl ymi, . . ., ony cheissaf i waret rac hynn* 'Alas, God, woe is me that I should be the cause of this heap of the men of Ynys y Cedyrn, and shame on me, if I seek no deliverance from it!' PKM 44. 14–17.

When the meaning is negative, the negative particle in the form *nyt* is placed before the predicate: *Nyt reit iti hynny* 'It is not necessary for you (to say) that' WM 453. 36–37, *nyt dec ac nyt digrif genhym dy welet yn ymgribyaw a gwrach* 'it is neither seemly nor pleasant for us to see thee scuffling with a hag' 506. 11–12.

§ 146. The Mixed Order. When a part of the sentence other than the verb is to be emphasized, this is placed at the beginning of the sentence, preceded by a form of the copula and followed by a relative clause. Originally the copula agreed with the verb of the clause in mood and tense: *ys mi a'e heirch* 'it is I who seek her' WM 479. 29, *ys drwc a chwedyl yssyd genhyt* 'a sorry tale hast thou' YBH 46. 2999–3000, *bydhawt ragot ti gyntaf yd agorawr y porth* 'for thee shall the gate be opened first' WM 456. 34, *bu yr drwc y'r paganyeit yd adnabuant hwy dy lewder di eiryoet* 'it was for ill to the pagans that they ever knew thy prowess' YCM 108. 6, *Bit chuero y talhaur in y diwet | Syberuid a maurwrid a maret* 'Bitterly shall pride, haughtiness and pomp be paid for in the end' HGCr

4. 21–28, *Oed maelgun a uelun in imuan* 'It was Maelgwn that I could see fighting' YMTh 57. 5, *A phoet euo a'th danuono drachevyn* 'And may it be he who shall send thee back again' SG 15. 15–16.

When the sentence is negative, the negative particle comes before the copula: *Ny bu hir y buant yny doethont y Arberth* 'Not long were they before they came to Arberth' PKM 25. 9, *Ny bu iavn na da y gvnaethauch a'r gviryon* 'Not justly nor rightly did ye deal with the innocent one' B xiv. 263. 1; in a subordinate clause: *ni wn na bo yno y caffo* 'I know not but that it was there he may have found it' PKM 35. 4.

The present *ys* spread at the expense of the other forms, and was used in cases where the verb of the following clause did not belong to the present: *Ys glut a beth yd ymdidanyssam ni* 'Continually have we conversed together' PKM 7. 16–17, *ys da a gedymdeith a golleisti* 'a good comrade hast thou lost' 56. 27, *ys llaw gyffes y medrwys y Lleu ef* 'with a deft hand has the fair one hit it' 80. 22, *ys aflwydyannus y daruu y myui* 'unsuccessfully has it turned out for me' SG 288. 19.

Eventually the copula was dropped before the emphasized word or phrase: *Kimri a oruit* '(it shall be) the Welsh that shall conquer' BBC 59. 4, *Mi a'e heirch* '(it is) I who ask for her' WM 479. 24, *Mi yd wyt yn y geissaw* '(it is) I whom thou art seeking' 138. 21, *Duw hollgyuoethauc a adola hi* 'Almighty God does she worship' B ix. 326. 34, *Hwyrach y mynnwn i efo yna no chynt* 'Less eager was I then to have him than before' WM 135. 17. When the sentence is negative, the emphasized word or phrase is preceded by *nyt*, thus: *nyt teilygdawt uy anryded a'm etteil am hynny* 'it is not the degree of my dignity that prevents me concerning that' PKM 2. 20, *Nyt tidi a gredaf* 'It is not thou that I will believe' WM 440. 17, *Nyt byth . . . y perhey di* 'Not for ever wilt thou last' PKM 19. 25–26. This is the construction found in ModW; see CFG 99–104.

§ 147. Ys. It is used as follows:

(*a*) In the mixed order, § 146.

(*b*) In the periphrastic construction with a verbal noun (§ 145), preceded by the particle *yd*; the meaning is impersonal or passive:

Yd ys yn lluydaw yn an ol 'There is a marching of hosts after us' PKM 71. 13, *Ac etwa yd ys yn cadw o'r enw hwnnw hanner hwch, hanner hob* 'And still there is kept of that name, *hanner hwch, hanner hob*' 68. 24.

(*c*) It occurs in the form *yssit* 'there is': *Yssit yn y boly hwnn amryw ulawt* 'There are in this bag various kinds of flour' PKM 43. 5 (suggested emendations, see pp. 203–4), *Kyt keffych hynny, yssit ny cheffych* 'Though thou get that, there is that thou wilt not get' WM 480. 19, *Oi a wr, yssit le idaw y gwynaw y neb yssyd yma* 'Alas, man, there is cause for him who is here to lament' 492. 35. Pl. *yssydynt*: *whedleu porth genhyt? Yssydynt genhyf* 'Hast thou news from the gate? I have' (lit. 'they are with me') WM 487. 1–2.

N. *-it* may represent a petrified infixed pronoun 3. sing. masc. (or neut.), cf. Ir. *iss-id*; see GOI 269, also cf. *d* below.

(*d*) The forms *yssym, yssyn* occur in early poetry. They contain *ys* + syllabic forms of the infixed pronoun 1. sing. and pl., cf. Ir. *iss-um écen* 'it is a necessity for me, I must' (*ym, yn* may also be explained as personal forms 1. sing. and pl. of the preposition *y* 'to'); see IEW 102, L & P 321, HGCr 213. The meaning is 'there is to me, I have': *yssym eur ac aryant* 'I have gold and silver' LlHen 287. 25, *Essym arglwyt* 'I have a lord' 159. 18 (cf. *Esid ym arglwyt* 'I have a lord' LlHen 159. 22, consisting of *esid* = *yssid* 'there is' + *ym* 'to me'; cf. also *yssy yni vetyc* 'we have a physician' 12. 11), *Llyw yssyn* 'A leader have we' 217. 1.

(*e*) In adverbial expressions with nouns denoting a period of time: *ys guers yd wyf yn keissaw a olchei vyg cledyf* 'For some time I have been seeking one who should polish my sword' WM 487. 8, *A hynny ny ordifnassei hi ys blwydyn* 'And she had not been used to that for a year' (lit. 'it is a year') PKM 7. 7–8, *ediuar yw genhyf na chroget ys llawer dyd* 'I am sorry that he was not hanged for many a day past' (i.e. 'a long time ago') YBH 19. 1233–4. Later *yr* (§ 246) came to be used with it: *A hynny nys gordyfynassei hi yr ys blwydyn* RM 6. 26 (= PKM 7. 7–8 above), *gwr a gladyssit . . . yr ys pymtheng mlyned* 'a man who had been buried for fifteen years' BDe 2. 20–21, *Mi a deuthum yma yr ys pell o amser* 'I came here a long time ago' WM 491. 27–28, *mi a vum y'th geissyaw di yr ys talym* 'I have been seeking thee for a (good) while' SG 406.

30. In the literary language *yr ys* (> *ers*) ultimately superseded *ys*; but the latter survived into early ModW and is still used alone in the spoken language; see B xv. 204–5.

There is at least one instance of *oed* 'was' used in this construction: *ar dothoed oed blwydyn kyn no hynny y lys Arthur* 'who had come a year (lit. 'it was a year') before that to Arthur's court' WM 123. 2.

Yssyd (§ 66), *Sef* (§ 55*f*), *Kanys* (§ 261 *b* 1), *Os, ossit* (§ 272 *b* 1).

§ 148. The constructions of the different forms of the 3. sing. and pl. pres. indic. may be summarized as follows:

(*a*) **Yw, ynt.** They follow the predicate and precede the subject, thus: *iawn yw* [*y*] *gymryt* 'it is right to receive him' PKM 6. 10, *Beth yw hynny* 'What is that?' 20. 16, *Mab y dynnyon mwyn yw* 'He is the son of gentle folk' 23. 9–10, *hynny yw uym penyt* 'that is my penance' 25. 14, *Y deu lygat ef . . . yw y dwy lynn* 'The two lakes are his two eyes' 40. 13–14, *Bychein ynt wynteu* 'Small are they' 68. 20.

They are the forms used for the 3. sing. and pl. after the negative, subordinate conjunctions such as *pan* 'when', *ot* 'if', and the interrogative particle *a*, in cases where the subject is a definite noun or pronoun: *nyt ynt iach* 'they are not well', *ot ydiw yg karchar* 'if he is in prison' RM 179. 19, *a yw ef yno?* 'is he there?'

N. Occasionally *ynt* serves as the pl. of *ys*: *Eglwysseu Bassa ynt ffaeth heno* 'The Churches of Bassa, they are in ruins tonight' CLlH 39. 46[a]. Cf. *Stauell Gyndylan ys tywyll heno* 'The hall of Cynddylan, it is dark tonight' 35. 18[a].

(*b*) **(Y) mae, (y) maent.** (1) They come at the beginning of a sentence or clause; (*y*) *mae*: *mae ymma Matholwch brenhin Iwerdon* 'Matholwch king of Ireland is here' PKM 30. 14; (*y*) *maent* 71. 23–24, see § 182 *a*. (2) *Mae* is used at the beginning of an interrogative sentence with the meaning 'where is?': *Mae yr yniuer y buom ni doe ac echtoe ym penn yr orssed* 'Where is the company we were yesterday and the day before at the top of the mound?' PKM 11. 17–18, *A wraged . . . mae y mab* 'Women, where is the boy?' 20. 24, *mae yr ebawl a differeist ti y noss y keueist y mab?* where is the colt thou didst save the night thou didst find the boy?' 23. 25. (3) (*Y*) *mae* functions as copula at the beginning

of a noun clause with the meaning '(that) it is': *Angel yr Arglwyd a dywawt y mi mae o vreid yd a vn o gant o'r lle hwnn y deyrnas nef* 'The angel of the Lord told me that hardly one in a hundred shall go from this place to the kingdom of heaven' BDe 6. 23, *a thi a wybydy y mae gwac uocsach yw y teu di* 'and thou shalt know that thine is a vain boast' Hg MSS ii. 12. 15; it is used even when the verb of the clause denotes past time: *myui a wnn mae idaw ef y rodes Duw y gras* 'I know that it was (lit. 'is') to him that God gave the grace' BDe 14. 14. **(Y) taw** is also found with this meaning, but examples of its use are rare in MW: *mi a gredwn ac a dywedwn y taw ti oed Bown* 'I would believe and say that thou wert Bown' YBH 24. 1541–2, *medylyeit a wnaeth taw hir y buassei yn llywyaw y vrenhinyaeth* 'he thought that for long had he been ruling his kingdom' 59. 3789–90.

N. *Taw* is still common in the spoken language of South Wales. The form is cognate with Ir. *-tá* (< **sthā*, Lat. *stā-re*).

(*c*) **Oes.** This form is used with an indefinite noun or pronoun as subject in negative, interrogative, and conditional sentences: *Nit oes yndi nep ni'th adnappo* 'There is no one in it that will not know thee' PKM 4. 3, *a oes porthawr* 'is there a porter?' WM 456. 1–2.

There are a few instances in MW where *oes* has a definite noun or pronoun as subject: *nyt oes briawt yr enwev hynny arnunt yn y nef* 'those names are not proper to them in heaven' LlA 6. 24, *nit oes y'th uedyant di hynny* 'those things are not at thy command' PKM 14. 25, *hyd pan dywettych ti nat oes hi yn y byt* 'till thou shalt say that she exists not in the world' WM 470. 34. OW *Oraur ni hois ir loc guac hinnith in pagina regulari* 'Since that empty space does not occur in the Pagina Regularis' Comp.

§ 149. Bo, pei. These are used with superlative adjectives in an adverbial clause to denote degree; a superlative adjective occurs also in the principal clause. The construction is that of the mixed order (§ 146). *Bo, po*: *bo mynychaf yd edrychych, diwyttaf y gwneir* 'the oftener thou dost inspect, the more diligently shall the work be done' B ii. 14. 14–15; also *at vo* (see § 150): *at vo mwyaf y dysger wy yn wahanredawl, mwyaf oll y kyffroant oc eu chwenychu* 'the more they are taught in detail, all the more do they incite a

person to seek them' B vii. 377. 17. *Pei*: *A fei mwyaf uei y urys ef, pellaf uydei hitheu e wrthaw ef* 'And the greater was his speed, the farther was she from him' PKM 9. 22, *A phei vwyaf yd edrychei hi arnaw ef, mwyaf yd ennynnei hitheu o'e garyat ef* 'And the more she looked at him, the more was she inflamed by love of him' SG 272. 5–6.

N. In ModW *bo* (usually in the form *po*) has become general, and has completely ousted *pei* in this construction; see CFG 194. Already in late MW *po* is found in cases where the verb of the clause is in the imperfect and where *pei* would have been used earlier: *po mwyhaf a dyckit yno o dylwyth, mwyhaf uydei o anturyeu* 'the greater the retinue that would be brought there, the more there would be of adventures' SG 175. 5–6.

COMPOUNDS OF **Bot**

§ 150. Aduot 'happen, be'. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *adwyf* MA 158[a]20; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 1. *atuydaf* LlHen 227. 12, 3. *atuyd* BT 11. 2, *atvi* AP 4. 115. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *atuo*; imperf. sing. 3. *aduei* LlHen 129. 25.

§ 151. Arganuot 'perceive'. Indic. consuet. pres., fut. pl. 3. *argenuydant* YBH 28. 1771; pret. sing. 1. *arganvum*, 3. *arganvu*, pl. 3. *arganvuant*. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *arganffo* R 1225. 2.

§ 152. Canuot 'perceive'. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *cannhwyf* R 1187. 32, 3. *kennhyw* LlHen 255. 11; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 3. *kenuyd* R 1251. 13; imperf. sing. 3. *kanhoed* RM 46. 18; pret. sing. 3. *kanvu* R 1143. 6. Subj. pres. sing. 2. *kenffych* R 1233. 3.

§ 153. Kyuaruot 'meet'. Indic. pres., with perfect meaning, sing. 3. *kyueryw* PKM 32. 25; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 3. *kyueruyd*, pl. 1. *kyuaruydwn*, 3. *kyuaruydant*; imperf., with pluperfect meaning, sing. 3. *kyuaroed* BD 29. 27; consuet. past sing. 3. *kyuaruydei*, pl. 3. *kyferuydyn* AP 2. 54; pret. sing. 1. *kyuaruum* WM 481. 5–6, 3. *kyuaruu*, pl. 3. *kyuaruuant*; plup. sing. 3. *kyuaruuassei*. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *kyuarffo*; imperf. sing. 1. *kyuarffwn*, 3. *kyuarffei*.

§ 154. Daruot. Indic. pres., with perfect meaning, sing. 3. *deryw*, *derw*, pl. 3. *derynt*; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 3. *deruyd*, *derui* LlHen 216. 26, pl. 3. *daruydant*; imperf., with pluperfect

meaning, sing. 3. *daroed*; consuet. past sing. 3. *daruydei*; pret. sing. 3. *darvu*, *daru* (§ 10), pl. 1. *darvuam*, 3. *darvuant*, impers. *darvuwyt*. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *darffo*; imperf. sing. 3. *darffei*. Imper. sing. 3. *derffit*, *deruit*, *deruhid* CLlH 28. 11c.

N. It has the following meanings: (*a*) 'to waste away, perish, finish': *Yg coed keliton y daruuan* 'In Coed Celyddon they perished' YMTh 58. 36; (*b*) 'to happen', with *y* 'to': *Pa daruu . . . y Gradawc uab Bran . . . ?* 'What happened to Cradawg son of Brân?' PKM 45. 27, *Pa beth . . . a deryw y titheu* 'What has befallen thee?' WM 442. 23–24. Very often the grammatical subject is a verbal noun, which is preceded by *y* + noun / pronoun: *A chan derw yt dywedyt y geir a dywedeist* 'And because thou hast spoken the word thou hast' (lit. 'to speak has happened to thee') PKM 14. 18, *neur deryw y'r maccwy llad llawer o'th lu* 'the squire has killed many of thy host' WM 148. 4, *Guedy daruot y'r seithwyr . . . cladu penn Bendigeiduran* 'After the seven men had buried the head of Bendigeidfran' PKM 49. 1. In such cases *daruot* serves as an auxiliary verb; it is used thus in ModW: *clywais ddarfod iddo fynd* 'I heard that he went'. The 3. sing. pret. *dar(f)u* is common: *Darfu iddo fynd* 'It happened that he went, he went'. See WG 351, L & P 328–9.

§ 155. Goruot. Indic. pres. sing. 2. *gorwytt* LlHen 277. 3; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 1. *goruydaf*, 2. *goruydy*, 3. *goruyd*, pl. 1. *goruydwn*, impers. *goruydir*; consuet. past sing. 3. *goruydei*, pl. 3. *goruydynt*; pret. sing. 1. *goruum*, 3. *goruu*, pl. 1. *goruuam*, 2. *goruuawch*, *goruuoch*, 3. *goruuant*, impers. *goruuwyt*; plup. sing. 3. *goruuassei*. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *goruydwyf*, 3. *gorpo*, *gorffo*, pl. 1. *gorffom*, impers. *gorffer*; imperf. sing. 3. *gorffei*.

N. 1. The meaning is 'to conquer, overcome'; usually with the preposition *ar*: *a ffar ym oruot ar uy gelyn* 'and enable me to overcome my enemy' B x. 54. 37. As with *daruot* a verbal noun often serves as grammatical subject: *y goruu ar wyr y wlat gwneuthur gwrogaeth udunt* 'the men of the country were compelled to do them homage' SG 33. 13, *ef a oruu ar peredur syrthyaw y'r llawr y ar y uarch* 'Peredur was forced to fall off his horse to the ground' 37. 38; see further B xv. 7. Later *ar* was superseded in this construction by *y* 'to'; see B xvi. 84.

Instances occur in MW of a direct object used with this verb: *Par di ym . . . y oruot ef* 'Enable me to overcome him' B x. 54. 17, *gwedy y oruot ef* 'after he was overcome' Hg MSS ii. 120. 38, *abreid vyd im y oruot* 'scarcely will I overcome him' WM 131. 30, *nys goruydwn byth* 'I would never overcome him' 131. 31.

N. 2. A few early forms with the prefix *dy-* are found: Indic. pres. sing. 3. *dy-m-gorwy* 'overcomes me' LlHen 24. 16; fut. sing. 3. *digorbit* BBC

52. 14, *dyworpi* R 585. 18, pl. 3. *dyorfun* AP 1. 12; pret. sing. 3. *dygorfu* AP 5. 125.

N. 3. The forms *gorwyf* (1. sing.), and *goryw, goreu, guoreu* (3. sing.) are found, with the meaning 'I have made, he has made', &c. (cf. 2. sing. pres. *gorwytt* above). They seem to consist of *gor-* + *wyf, yw* / *eu* (cf. *pi-eu* § 88), and to be forms of *goruot* with the semantic development 'overcome > succeed > accomplish > do, make'. This development would be helped by the partial formal resemblance of these forms to *goruc*, &c., § 141, see G 565, GDG 512. (*Goreu* has been explained as based on **ag'-*, < **upo-pro-āg'e*; see VKG ii. 545.)

Examples: *gwiw y gorwyf* 'seemly have I done' GDG 242. 21, *ac a goryw pawb diskynnu vrth y porth ar yr yskynuaen nys goruc ef* 'and what every man did, to dismount at the gate on the horse-block, he did not do' WM 458. 33–35, *neus goreu o gadeu gewilid* 'he made shame of armies' CA 5. 98, also *guoreu* ib. 48. 1211; with a verbal noun (cf. the construction with *goruc, gwnaeth* § 180 *b* 3): *Cadw a orwyf i'm ceudawd* / *Cariad* 'I have kept in my bosom love' GDG 238. 5.

§ 156. Hanuot 'to be from'. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *(h)andwyf, hanwyf, henwyf* RM 2. 25, 2. *hanwyt, henwyt*, 3. *hanyw, henyw, andwy* CLlH 8. 45^{b}, pl. 1. *handym, hanym, henym*, 3. *henynt*, impers. *handid*; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 2. *henbydy*, 3. *hanbyd, henbyd*; imperf. sing. 2. *handoedut*, 3. *handoed, hanoed*, pl. 3. *hannoedynt*; consuet. past sing. 3. *hanbydei*; pret. sing. 3. *hanvv* WM 625. 3. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *hanbwyf*, 2. *hanpych, henpych, hanbych*, 3. *hanffo*, pl. 3. *hanfwynt*; imperf. sing. 3. *hanffei*. Imper. sing. 3. *hanvit*.

N. The verbal noun also occurs in the form *hanu*, but examples are rare in MW; see L & P 330.

Hanuot consists of *han(-d-)* (cf. § 63 *a* n. 2) + *bot*. See VKG ii. 443–4, WG 352–3; otherwise Loth, RC xxxi. 501–2.

It often occurs with the same meaning as *bot*; *o* 'of, from' is used with it: *ny henbydy well di o uot yn drwc wrthyf i* 'thou wilt not fare (lit. 'be') the better for being bad to me' PKM 81. 3, *Henpych gwell, Yspadaden Penkawr* 'Greeting to thee (lit. 'mayest thou fare the better'), Ysbaddaden Bencawr' WM 477. 7; *henffych well* is common as an expression of greeting = 'hail', OW *anbiic guel* Ox 2. *handid* = *ys* 'is': *handit tristlavn vy mryt* 'sorrowful is my mind' CA 28. 705, *handid muy vy llauuridet* 'greater is my grief' HGCr 5. 6.

§ 157. Gwybot 'to know'. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *gwnn*, 2. *gwydost, gwdost*, 3. *gwyr*, pl. 1. *gwdam, -om*, 2. *gwydawch, gwdawch, -och*,

3. *gwydant, gwdant*, impers. *gwys* § 135 *b*; imperf. sing. 1. *gwydwn, gwydywn*, 2. *gwydut, gwydyut*, 3. *gwydat, gwydyat* § 132 *b* 2, *gwydyei*, pl. 1. *gwydem, gwydyem*, 2. *gwydewch*, 3. *gwydynt*, impers. *gwydit*; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 1. *gwybydaf*, 2. *gwybydy*, 3. *gwybyd, gwybi*, pl. 1. *gwybydwn*, 2. *gwybydwch*, 3. *gwybydant*, impers. *gwybydir*; consuet. past sing. 2. *gwybydut*, 3. *gwybydei*; pret. sing. 1. *gwybuum*, 2. *gwybuost*, 3. *gwybu*, pl. 3. *gwybuant*, impers. *gwybuwyt*; plup. pl. 3. *gwybuyssynt*, impers. *gwybuassit*. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *gwypwyf*, 2. *gwypych*, 3. *gwypwy, gwypo*, pl. 1. *gwypom*, 2. *gwypoch*, 3. *gwypwynt, gwypont*, impers. *gwyper*; imperf. sing. 1. *gwypwn*, 2. *gwyput*, 3. *gwypei*, pl. 3. *gwypynt*. Imper. sing. 2. *gwybyd*, 3. *gwypet, gwybydet*, pl. 1. *gwybydwn*, 2. *gwybydwch*, 3. *gwybydent*, impers. *gwybyder*.

§ 158. Adnabot 'to know, recognize'. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *adwaen, adwen, atwen*, 2. *atwaenost*, 3. *adwaen, adwen, atwen*, pl. 1. *adwaenam, -wn*, 2. *adwaenawch, etweynwch*, 3. *atwaenant*; imperf. sing. 1. *atwaenwn*, 2. *atwaenut*, 3. *atwaenat* (§ 132 *b* 2), pl. 1. *adwaenem*, 3. *atwaenynt*, impers. *etweinit*; consuet. pres., fut. sing. 1. *adnabydaf, etnebydaf*, 2. *adnabydy*, 3. *adnebyd, ednebyd*, pl. 1. *adnabydwn*, 3. *adnabydant*, impers. *adnabydir*; consuet. past sing. 3. *adnabydei*, pl. 1. *adnabydem*; pret. sing. 1. *adnabuum, adnabum*, 3. *adnabu*, pl. 1. *adnabuam*, 3. *adnabuant*. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *adnapwyf*, 2. *adneppych*, 3. *adnappo*, pl. 1. *adnappom*, 3. *adnappoent, adnappont*; imperf. sing. 3. *adnapei*, impers. *adnepit*. Imper. sing. 2. *adnebyd, ednebyd*, pl. 2. *adnebydwch, ednebydwch*.

N. The verbs *gwybot* and *adnabot* are compounds of the verb 'to be' with another verbal stem (similarly *cly-bot* § 133 *c* 2 (*a*), *didar-bot* § 162, also *deu-byd* § 143 n. 4).

gwybot consists of *gwyđ* (< **u̯eid-*) + *bot*. The 3. sing. pres. *gwyr* represents an old deponent, cf. Ir. *-fitir* < **u̯id-ri*, and see L & P 310.

adnabot. The stem *ad-na-* < **ati-g'na-*, cf. Ir. *ad-gnin*, vn. *aithgne*; with *adwaen* cf. Ir. *ad-gén* (*-gén* < **gegn-*, reduplicated pret. with pres. meaning); see WG 356, L & P 297.

MISCELLANEOUS VERBS

§ 159. Adaw 'to leave': *bot Matholwch yn adaw y llys* 'that Matholwch was leaving the court' PKM 32. 18. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *adawaf, eidawaf* PKM 15. 23, 3. *edeu, edy*, impers. *edewir*; imperf. sing. 3. *adawei*, pl. 3. *edewynt*, impers. *edewit*; pret. sing. 1. *edeweis*, 3. *edewis*, impers. *edewit* BD 84. 3; plup. sing. 1. *adawsswn*, 3. *adawssei*, impers. *edewssyt* BD 149. 26. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *adawo*, pl. 3. *adawhwynt* BT 42. 21, impers. *adawher*; imperf. sing. 3. *adawhei*. Imper. sing. 2. *adaw*, 3. *adawet*.

Also forms with *g-*: *gadaw* BDe 4. 7, *gedeweist* SG 45. 13, *gedewis* BDe 2. 18, *gadawssei* 22. 10.

§ 160. Amkawd 'answered, said', found only in *Kulhwch ac Olwen* (WM): *Amkawd y wrach, 'Nyd oes plant itaw'. Amkawd y urenhines, 'Gwae uinheu uyn dyuot ar anuab'* 'Quoth the crone: "He has no children." Quoth the queen: "Woe is me that I should have come to a childless man!"' WM 453. 32–35; pl. 3. *amkeudant* (ms. *amkeudawt*) WM 473. 1–2, 477. 6, &c. See WG 378, L & P 297.

§ 161. Caffael, Caffel, Cahel, Cael 'to get, receive'; with stems *caff-, cah-, ca-*. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *kaffaf, cahaf, caf*, 2. *keffy, kehy, key*, 3. *keiff, caffawd* LlHen 104. 21, *keffid* 104. 17, pl. 1. *caffwn, cawn*, 2. *ceffwch, cewch*, 3. *caffant, kahant, cant*, impers. *keffir, keir, cephitor* (§ 131 *a*), *caffawr* R 584. 39; imperf. sing. 1. *caffwn, cawn*, 3. *caffei, kaei* YBH 15. 996, *cai* 22. 1413, pl. 3. *keffynt, kehynt* PKM 85. 20; pret. sing. 1. *keveis*, 2. *keveist*, 3. *kavas, kewssit* BT 29. 16, pl. 1. *kawssam, -om*, 2. *kawssawch*, 3. *kawssant, -ont*, impers. *caffat, kahat, kat* R 1194. 3; plup. sing. 1. *kawsswn*, also *cawssoedwn* FfBO 32. 10, 2. *cawssoedut* SG 247. 3, 3. *cawssoed* 303. 32, *kawssoedei* YBH 51. 3296, *cawssoedyat* SG 30. 37, *-at* Hg MSS ii. 224. 37 (for *-(i)at* see § 132 *b* 2), pl. 3. *kawssoedynt* SG 11. 5, impers. *cawssoedit* RB 387. 16, *kaffadoed* Hg MSS ii. 265. 34. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *caffwyf*, 2. *keffych*, 3. *caffo, caho* LlA 150. 10, *kaffwy* BT 29. 2, pl. 3. *kaffoent, kaffont, kaffwynt* R 1054. 24, *caont* LlA 48. 9; imperf. sing. 1. *caffwn, cahwn, cawn*, &c.

N. *kav-* is derived from Brit. **kab-*, a variant of **ghabh-* (> *gaf-ael, -el* 'to take hold', also 'a hold'), cf. Ir. *ga(i)b-id* 'takes'. But see B ii. 291, where it is suggested that *cael* < **k(o)-ag-lo-*, and especially ZCP xxiv. 229–33, where it is shown that the various Welsh forms derive from a plurality of stems: **ghabh-*, **kap-*, **kagh-*.

§ 162. Dawr, Tawr 'it matters', 3. sing.: imperf. *dorei, torei*; fut. *dorbi* BBC 60. 8; with *di-*: pres. *didawr*; imperf. *didorei, didoryat* (§ 132 *b* 2). Subj. pres. *didarpo* YBH 47. 3037 (= *didorpo* RBH); verbal noun *didarbot* RB 225. 4, *didorbot* BD 179. 3. It is used with the negative and a 'dative' infixed pronoun with the meaning 'I do not care, it matters not to me': *Ny'm tawr* CLlH 41. 65^{c}, *ny'm tawr o honunt* YBH 67. 4334–5, *ny'm torei* PKM 62. 14. A verbal noun may serve as grammatical subject: *Ny'm tawr i uynet* 'I mind not if I go' WM 437. 24, *Ny'm dorei syrthyaw . . . nef* 'I would not mind were heaven to fall' R 1208. 22. For *pathawr* see § 83 n. 1.

From a fairly early period the stem *didor-* was inflected for all persons with the meaning 'to care, be concerned'; the prepositions *o, y wrth* are used with these personal forms: *didorych o'th was* 'care thou for thy servant' HGCr 104. 61, *dieithyr na didoreis i dim y wrthunt* 'except that I was not concerned with them at all' FfBO 53. 23, *ny didorynt wy py damwein y dygwydynt yndaw* 'they did not care into what mishap they should fall' RB 216. 24–25 (= *ny didoryat y Brytannyeit* BD 172. 24, see note p. 273, where the editor explains *y Brytannyeit* as object, but it is probably better explained as subject).

§ 163. Deirydeit 'to pertain, be related', with *y* 'to': *ny wydat Bown y deirydeit idaw* 'Bown did not know that he was related to him' YBH 34. 2123–4; it most commonly occurs in the form of the 3. sing. pres. indic. *deiryt, -it*: *A deirit ytti y brenin Arthur* 'Is the king Arthur related to thee?' SG 352. 23; 3. sing. imperf. *deirydei*: *yr unbennes yr honn ny deirydei ytt o dim* 'the lady, who did not pertain to thee at all' SG 105. 39.

§ 164. Dichawn, Digawn (cf. *digawn* 'enough' § 113, see WG 375; for *-ch-* / *-g-* cf. § 65 n. 1).

(*a*) 'can, is able', 3. sing.; with an infixed pronoun or, more commonly, a verbal noun as object: *Kanys dichawn Dewi nys*

dichonwyf 'Since Dewi can do what I can not' HGCr 46. 79, *Ny digaun vn o'r swydogyonn llys rodi naud* 'Not one of the officers of the court can give protection' LlB 6. 9, *ny dichaun brenhin dwyn breint brawdwr swydawc* 'the king cannot take away the privilege of an officiating judge' 16. 2, *llawer damwein a digawn bot* 'many a chance may befall (be)' PKM 19. 28; later *dichon*, also *dichyn*, see G 328.

(*b*) From the early period we find also personal forms based on *digon-*, sometimes *dichon-*, with the meaning 'do, make, cause'. Verbal noun *digoni* HGCr 22. 6. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *digonaf* BT 8. 18, 2. *digonit* (§ 128 *b*), 3. *digawn* HGCr 40. 11, impers. *digonir* BT 41. 15; imperf. sing. 3. *digonei* BD 173. 18, pl. 3. *digonynt* BT 51. 20, impers. *digonyt* LlHen 227. 10; pret. sing. 1. *digoneis* HGCr 22. 7, 3. OW *dicones* (§ 133 *a* 2), MW *dichones* R 1191. 22–23, *digones* CLlH 13. 17^{c}, pl. 1. *digonsam* HGCr 52. 288, 2. *digonsawch* 13. 72, 3. *digonsant* AP 5. 143, impers. *digoned* HGCr 1. 21, *digonat* BT 25. 21, passive pl. OW *diconetent* (§ 135 *c*); plup. sing. 3. *digonsei* BT 24. 5. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *digonwyf* BT 30. 1–2, 3. *digonho* WM 480. 13, *digonwy* HGCr 31. 160, pl. 1. *digonhom* 4. 1, impers. *digon(h)er*; imperf. sing. 3. *digonhei* BBC 96. 8, impers. *digonet* BT 51. 26.

§ 165. Dlyu, Dylyu. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *dylyaf*, 2. *dylyy*, 3. *dyly*, pl. 1. *dylywn*, 2. *dylywch*, 3. *dylyant*, impers. *dylyir*; imperf. sing. 1. *dylywn*, 2. *dylyut*, 3. *dylyei*, *dylyi* (§ 132 *b* 1), pl. 3. *dylyynt*, impers. *dylyit*; pret. sing. 3. *dylyawd* LlA 16. 21; plup. sing. 3. *dylyassei* SG 267. 6. Subj. pres. sing. 1. *dylywyf*, 2. *dyly-(h)ych*, 3. *dyly(h)o*, pl. 3. *dylyont*, impers. *dylyer*; imperf. sing. 1. *dylywn*, 2. *dylyhut*, 3. *dylyei*, pl. 1. *dyly(h)em*, 2. *dylyych*, 3. *dylyynt*, impers. *dylyit*.

N. With the stem *d(y)ly-*, cf. Ir. *dlig-im* 'I am entitled'; see L & P 358, also § 16 *b*.

This verb is commonly employed in MW. It means (*a*) 'to be entitled to, to deserve': *Ef a dyly callon pob llwdyn o'r a ladher yn y llys* 'He is entitled to the heart of every animal which shall be slaughtered at the court' LlB 14. 13. The prepositions *y gan* and *y* are used to denote the person from whom a thing is claimed: *pedeir keinhawc a dyly y gan y perchen* 'he is entitled to four pence from the owner' LlB 92. 18, *ef a dely*

y'r brenyn talburd o uoruyl 'he is entitled to a throwboard of whale bone from the king' ZCP xx. 39. 14. (*b*) Duty, debt, obligation, 'to be obliged to, owe, ought'; a verbal noun usually serves as object: *gwybydwch pwy a dylyo bot yn wyr ymi* 'discover who ought to be my vassals' PKM 6. 7, *y rann a dylyei uot am y hwyneb o wisc y phenn* 'the part of her head-dress which should be over her face' 12. 11, *ef a dylyassei y roi mywn cadwyn* 'he ought to have put it in a chain' SG 267. 6, *kannys ef a dyly gwassannaethu y'r llys ac edrych ar y gegin* 'because it is his duty to serve the court and to superintend the kitchen' LlB 9. 23–24. The preposition *y* 'to' denotes the person to whom a thing is due: *myn vy ffyd a dylyaf ynneu y'r Arglwydes Veir* 'by my faith which I owe to the Lady Mary' YCM 87. 5–6, *ef a dely medhecynyat rad y'r a uo en e llys* 'it is his duty to render free medical treatment to those that are at the court' ZCP xx. 41. 25.

In ModW the verb is used only in the imperf. and plup. (*dylwn*, &c., *dylaswn*, &c.), with the meanings 'ought, should', and with a verbal noun as object: *fe ddylai wybod* 'he ought to know'.

§ 166. Gad-u, -ael, -el 'to leave, let, allow'. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *gadaf*, 2. *gedy*, 3. *gat*, pl. 1. *gadwn*, 2. *gedwch*, 3. *gadan* BD 45. 21; imperf. sing. 2. *gadut*, 3. *gadei*; pret. sing. 3. *gadwys*, impers. *gatpwyt*, *gattat* (§ 135 *a*); plup. sing. 3. *gadassei*. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *gato*, pl. 1. *gatom*, impers. *gatter*; imperf. pl. 2. *gattewch* BD 82. 17. Imper. sing. 2. *gat*. Cf. *(g)adaw* § 159.

§ 167. Geni 'to be born', used almost entirely in the impers. passive. Indic. pres. *genir*; imperf. *genit*; pret. *ganet*; plup. *ganyssit*, *ganadoed*, *ganydoed* (§ 136 *b*). Subj. pres. *ganer*; imperf. *genit*.

In MW examples of personal active forms are found: *minheu a eneis er hwnn a wnaeth pop peth* 'I gave birth to him who made everything' B x. 28. 14, *er honn a eneist eglurder tragywydaul oleuat* 'thou who gavest birth to the brilliance of eternal light' x. 24. 2, *namyn, megys na enis neb euo, na enis ynteu neb* 'except that, as no one begat him, he begat no one' YCM 28. 27, *pa dat yr ganassei ef* 'what father had begotten him' BD 101. 18.

§ 168. Genni 'to be contained': *pan welas Efnissyen y calaned heb enni yn un lle o wyr Ynys y Kedyrn* 'when Efnisien saw the dead bodies, without room being found anywhere for the men of Ynys y Cedyrn' PKM 44. 13. The formations of this verb were much confused; the following forms are attested: Indic. pres. sing. 1.

gannaf, 2. *genny*, 3. *gein* R 1055. 26. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *ganho* PKM 41. 28; imperf. sing. 3. *ganhei* 42. 4, pl. 3. *genhynt* MA 658[a]55. The 3. sing. pres. *gein* became *geing* (see § 9 n.), and *-ng-* spread to other forms: *Ni enghis ef y mywn ty eiryoet* 'He was never contained within a house' PKM 41. 26, *Ny angassei Vendigeituran eiryoet ymywn ty* 'Bendigeidfran had never been contained within a house' 31. 12. *g-* was lost, and a new form of the verbal noun created, *eingaw*: *nyt eyngassei Vendigeituran eiryoet mywn ty* RM 28. 11 (= PKM 31. 12 above). This change was, doubtless, facilitated by the influence of another verb, *eng(h)i* 'to come out, escape'; see B xi. 128–9.

§ 169. Gwedu. (*a*) A denominative from *gwed* 'yoke', see L & P 362 (cf. *hywed-u* 'to break in, train (a colt)' PKM 23. 28); 'to submit (to the yoke), do homage', with *y* 'to': *Byt yn geugant itti yt wedant wrth dy ewyllis* 'The world certainly, to thee do they submit according to thy will' BT 58. 21, *Ac y gwedwys idaw pawb o wyr Ruuein* 'And all the men of Rome did him homage' RM 91. 20–21.

(*b*) A denominative from *gwed* 'appearance' (< **u̯id-ā*); 'becomes, befits', mostly in the 3. sing., usually with *y*, occasionally with *wrth*, *ar*: *llyna . . . beth ny wedha* 'that is a thing which is unseemly' WM 134. 31, *pawb gwedy hynny ual y gwedei udunt* 'all thereafter as was proper for them' 447. 35–36, *kanys da yawn y gweda wrthyt* 'for very well does it become thee' B x. 56. 26, *goreu y gueda arnaw Pryderi uab Pwyll Penn Annwn* 'that best becomes him, Pryderi son of Pwyll Penn Annwn' PKM 26. 12. The grammatical subject is often a verbal noun: *o'r a weda y wraged eu marchogaeth* '(of those) that are suitable for women to ride' WM 388. 33–34, *cany wedei y gristonogyon kedymdeithocau a phaganyeit* 'for it was not fitting for Christians to associate with pagans' BD 96. 21.

Personal forms of the verb are also found. These forms contain both the logical and the grammatical subject, and no preposition is required with the verb: *ny wedaf vi yn orderch ytt ti* 'I am not suited (to be) thy lover' LlA 122. 15 (instead of *ny weda ymi uot . . .*). This construction is rare.

§ 170. Hebyr, Heby, Heb 'said'; commonly used in reporting conversation: *'Arglwyd,' heb hi, 'pa gyfranc uu hynny?'* *'Llyma oll,' heb y Teirnon'* "Lord," said she, "what tale was that?" "Here it is, the whole of it," said Teyrnon' PKM 23. 6–7, *'Nyt oes neb,' heb y pawb, 'ny bo diheu gantaw hynny'* '"There is none," said every one, "who is not sure of it"' 26. 8, *'Dywed ti dy chwetleu,' heb yr Arthur. 'Dywedaf, arglwyd,' heb yr ef'* '"Tell thy tidings," said Arthur. "I will, lord," said he' WM 386. 30–32.

N. *Hebyr* is used before vowels, *heby* before consonants; *yr* / *y* is not the definite article: *heb(y)r* < **seqᵘ-re* (deponent), *heb* < **seqᵘ*, Ir. *sech-*; see WG 377, L & P 394.

The verbal noun *heb-u* 'to speak' is found, R 1440. 15. *heb* also occurs in *atteb* (*ad* + *heb*), *gwrtheb* (*gwrth* + *heb* 'answer', *goheb(u)* 'refuse, speak', ModW 'correspond', also *diha(e)reb* 'proverb' (< *di-ar-heb*).

§ 171. Hwde 'take', used in the imper. 2. sing. only: *Hwde vodrwy yn arwyd at y porthawr* 'Take a ring as a token to the porter' WM 168. 30–31. *Hwdy*: *hwdy ditheu ef* 'take thou it' YCM 47. 22.

§ 172. Med 'says'; imperf. sing. 3. *medei*, pl. 3. *medynt*: *med Horas* 'says Horace' LlA 44. 12, *med yr ystoria* 'says the account' 129. 13, *'Blawt,' medei y Gwydel'* '"Flour," said the Irishman' PKM 42. 23, *'Broch,' medynt wynteu'* '"A badger," said they' 17. 8.

Med is commonly used in citing authors, or in quoting expressions of opinion, often in reply to questions. It may originally have meant 'judges, thinks', cf. *međwl* 'thought'; see WG 378.

§ 173. Moes 'give', imper. 2. sing.: *Moes uy march* 'Give me my horse' PKM 11. 26, *moes imi y gorulwch* 'give me the goblet' WM 164. 30; 2. pl. *moesswch*: *Moesswch attaf i . . . awch cledyfeu* 'Give me your swords' 249. 6–7.

§ 174. Rengi (bod); the stem is *ranc*, see B i. 6, L & P 375 (cf. *Da yw y gueith a ranc bod yw genhyf* 'The work is good, and I am content with it' WM 488. 24–25). Indic. pres. sing. 3. *reinc* RM 127. 10, *rang* MA 182ᵇ43, *ranga* 368ᵇ37; imperf. sing. 3.

ranghei RM 128. 1; pret. sing. 3. *ranghawdd* MA 371^{b}19. Subj. pres. sing. 3. *rangho* B vii. 371. 27, *ragwy* MA 143^{a}14. The form *ryngu* is later; so also are forms based on it, *ryngaf*, &c., pret. sing. 3. *ryngws* B ix. 337. 17.

The verb occurs with *bod* 'will, favour, pleasure' as object; *rengi bod* means 'to please', originally 'to reach (satisfy) the pleasure of'. The person 'pleased' may be expressed by a noun or a possessive pronoun depending on *bod*: *yr rengi bod duw* 'to please God' R 1277. 22–23, *a reinc dy uod di hynny* 'does that content thee?' WM 487. 26; it may also be expressed by the preposition *y* 'to': *pan rangho bod idaw* 'when it may please him' B vii. 371. 27, *a pheth a rangk bod ytti* 'and what pleaseth thee?' SG 186. 12–13. A verbal noun may serve as grammatical subject, preceded by *y* + noun / pronoun: *y ryngws bod e baup onadunt bvrw er Idew yu losgi* 'it pleased all of them to throw the Jew to be burned' B ix. 146. 1, *y ryngvs bod e'r goruchelaf . . . etvryt eneit e manach* 'it pleased the Most High to restore the soul of the monk' x. 23. 9–10. A further development is represented by the following example where the grammatical subject is expressed by a personal form of the verb: *hvnn yv vy mab yn yr hvnn y ryngeis vy mod* 'this is my Son in whom I was pleased' B xiv. 267. 29.

§ 175. Rodi, Roi 'to give, put'; forms are found with and without *-d-* (§ 11). Indic. pres. sing. 2. *rody*, *roy*, 3. *ryd*, *dyry* (with *dy-*). Subj. pres. sing. 3. *rotho*, *rodo*, *ro*. Imper. sing. 2. *ro*, *dyro* (with *dy-*) BD 137. 18, *doro* WM 478. 3. As well as the pret. *rodeis*, *rodeist*, *rodes*, &c., we find the forms *roessum*, *roessost*, *roes* (*-um*, *-ost* added to stem *roes*, cf. *bu-um*, *bu-ost*, *bu* § 144), impers. *rodet*, *roespwyt* § 135 *a*. In the plup., in addition to the regular formations, we also find the following forms: sing. 2. *roessut*, 3. *roessei*, *roessoed*, *rassoed*, pl. 3. *roessoedynt*, *rassoedynt*.

§ 176. Tycia 'avails'; forms with *-k-* / *-c-* and *-g-* are found, see PKM 123. It is found only in the 3. sing., and a verbal noun usually serves as grammatical subject; the noun expressing the person whom it avails is governed by the preposition *y*: *ny thykya y pedestric yn y byt e hymlit hi* 'it avails no one in the world

to follow her on foot' PKM 9. 25–26, *A phan welas na thygyei idaw y hymlit* 'And when he saw that it was idle for him to follow her' 9. 23–24, *Kyny thyccyo gofyn tir o'r mod kyntaf nac o'r eil* 'Though the suit for land may not succeed by the first means or the second' LlB 78. 26. *Hyn* or *hynny* (§ 92) may serve as subject: *A hynny ny thygywys idaw* 'But that availed him not' PKM 11. 2. Verbal noun *tygyaw* PKM 11. 6.

§ 177. Ymdeith 'to travel, go' (Ir. *imthecht*). Indic. pres. sing. 1. *ymdaaf* WM 477. 50, 3. *ymda* 493. 34, AP 4. 112 (*gorymda* CLlH 38. 39[a]), pl. 1. *ymdawn*, 2. *ymdewch* WM 477. 9; pret. sing. 1. *imteith*, *ymdeith* (§ 143 n. 1), *ymdeeis* ChSDR 72. 851, 3. *ymdaeth*, *ymdavys* B ix. 225. 29, 226. 34.

THE VERBAL NOUN

Morphology

§ 178. The verbal noun is formed in one of the following ways:

(*a*) The bare stem with no ending: *achub* 'seize' (also *achubeit* BD 149. 4), *adaw* 'leave', *aḋaw* 'promise', *adrawd* 'tell, relate', *cadw* 'keep' (also *kedwi* HGCr 9. 44), *dal(y)* 'hold' (also *deli* HGCr 10. 55), *dihol* 'expel' BD 30. 7, *dosparth* 'order, arrange' 193. 25, *ffo* 'flee', *galw* 'call', *llad* 'kill'.

Stems in *-(h)a* (§ 129 *c*): *bwyta* 'eat', *chuedleuha* 'talk' BD 89. 2, *gwreica* 'take a wife'.

(*b*) *-u* added to the stem; stems containing *-a-*, *-ae-*, *-e-*, *-y-*: *barnu* 'judge', *gallu* 'be able' (also *gallel* SG 92. 16), *aruaethu* 'intend', *caeu* 'close' PKM 16. 29, *credu* 'believe', *kychwynnu* 'rise' BR 7. 20, *kyrchu* 'make for'; denominative stems in *-(h)a* (§ 129 *c*): *achuanecau* 'add' BD 205. 9, *atnewydhau* 'renew', *amlhau* 'increase', *barhau* 'become angry' BD 38. 22, *blinhau* 'become tired' 97. 5, *buchedocau* 'live', *coffau* 'remember', *culhau* 'become thin' YBH 18. 1156, *gwrhau* 'do homage' 32. 2038, *mynychau* 'visit' BD 23. 2, *ovynhau* 'fear' 8. 8, *tywyllau* 'darken' 116. 17 (*tywyllu* 170. 11); denominative stems in *-ych*: *bredychu* 'betray' BD 9. 6, *kleuychu* 'fall sick' 97. 21, *chwenychv* 'desire' LlA 13. 25, *guledychu* 'rule' BD 21. 7.

(*c*) *-aw* added to the stem; stems in *-i̯*: *diffygyaw* 'fail', *diwreidyaw* 'uproot', *keissyaw* 'seek', *cudyaw* 'hide', *peidyaw* 'cease'; stems containing *-i-*: *blingaw* 'skin', *blynav* 'tire' BD 8. 4, *briwaw* 'break', *dewissaw* 'choose', *gwisgaw* 'dress', *iraw* 'smear'; stems containing *-u-*: *damunaw* 'desire', *duunav* 'unite' BD 42. 12, *messuraw* 'measure', *symudaw* 'move, change', *urdaw* 'ordain'; stems containing *-eu-*: *blodeuaw* 'blossom'; stems containing *-wy-*: *canhorthwyaw* 'assist', *kwynaw* 'complain', *dygwydaw* 'fall', *gofwyaw* 'visit', *twyllaw* 'deceive'; also *gogyuadav* 'threaten' BD 8. 32, *lluydav* 'marshal' 6. 9, *pebyllav* 'encamp' 52. 7.

(*d*) *-i* added to the stem (OW *-im* = *-if*, see § 10); stems containing *-o-* / *-oe-*: *adoli* 'worship', *agori* 'open' BD 48. 4, *beichogi* 'conceive', *coði* 'offend' BD 45. 12, *colli* 'lose', *kyuodi* 'raise, rise', *sorri* 'sulk', *torri* 'break', *ymgroessi* 'cross oneself', *ymgyfogi* 'fight' WM 236. 20; stems in *-w*: *kedwi* 'keep' (see *a* above), *enwi* 'name', *merwi* 'die' BD 142. 24; some stems containing *-a-*, which is then affected to *-e-*: *defni* 'drop' LlA 23. 17, *deli* 'hold' (see *a* above), *erchi* 'request' (OW *erchim*), *menegi* 'declare' (stem *manac*), *peri* 'cause'.

§ 179. There are other formations which are not so common. The following endings are attested:

-ach: *cyuedach* 'carouse' PKM 13. 24.

-aeth: *marchogaeth* 'ride' (also *marchocau*. Indic. pres. sing. 1. *marchockaaf*, 3. *marchocca* BD 115. 12; pret. sing. 3. *marchocaawd* YBH 52. 3378), *gwassanaeth* 'serve' (later *gwassanaethu*).

-ael, *-el*: *caffael*, &c., 'get, receive' (§ 161), *gauael* 'hold' PKM 7. 28, *ymauael*, *ymauel* 'catch, seize' RM 142. 1, 2, *dyrchauael* 'raise' YCM 35. 10 (*dyrchafel* BD 13. 27, *drychafel* ChO 2. 11, also *drychaf* WM 124. 29), *gadael* 'leave', *gallel* 'be able' (also *gallu* § 178 *b*).

-ec: *ehedec* 'fly', *redec* 'run'.

-t (≡ *d*), *-et*: *kerdet* 'go, walk', *klywet* 'hear', *gwelet* 'see', *yfet* 'drink', *talet* 'pay' AP 4. 103 (rare, usually *talu*); *-et* became part of the stem in *danwaret* 'imitate' (*anwaredut* WM p. 287. 2) and *ymdiret* 'trust'. *-wyt*: *catwyt* 'keep' HGCr 74. 4 (also *cadw*, *kedwi* § 178 *a*), *kyscwyt* 'sleep' BT 27. 25 (also *cysgu*), *dywedwyt* 'say' LlB 121. 10 (also *dywed-yt*, *-ut*). *-yt*, *-ut*: *kymryt*, *-ut* 'take' § 2

(*kymer-af*), *diffryt* 'defend' (*differ-af*), *eturyt* 'restore' (*atuer-af*), *gochlyt*, *goglyt* 'avoid' YCM 60. 15, also *gochel* (*gochel-af*), *diengyt* 'escape' LlA 72. 17 (also *diangk* R 1424. 19, *diang* PKM 44. 22), *dywedyt*, *-ut* 'say' § 2, *ymchoelyt* 'turn' PKM 7. 7, *ymchwelut* 'return' BD 65. 20. *-it*: *dilit* 'follow', *dilyt* PKM 31. 13, 15 (*dilyn-af*), *erlit* 'chase, persecute' (*erlyn-ynt* BD 168. 26, but also *erlid-vys* 61. 18; ModW *erlid* 'persecute', *erlyn* 'prosecute'), *ymlit* 'chase' (*ymlyn-ant* BD 104. 13). *-at*: *adeilat* 'build', *gwylat* 'watch' PKM 59. 27, *chwibanat* 'whistle' YCM 73. 9. *-eit*, stems in *-i̯*: *crybwyllyeit* 'mention' CA 9. 214, *eruynnyeit* 'implore' LlA 125. 23, *medylyeit* 'think', *synnyeit* 'look, attend, consider', *tybyeit* 'suppose', *yscylueit* 'snatch' BD 15. 28, *ystyryeit* 'consider', *erbynnyeit* 'receive' BD 28. 9, also *erbyn* 30. 11; *-aw* is also added to these stems. *-eit* is added to one *-w̥* stem: *ysgytweit* 'shake' RB 58. 21, also *ysgytwaw* LlA 166. 28.

-n, *-wyn*: *adolwyn* 'beseech', also *adolwc* YBH 51. 3307, *amwyn* 'defend', *dwyn* 'bring, bear' (**duk-n*), *gorllwyn* 'watch', *diwyn* 'trim' WM 454. 32 (stems in *-wg-* / *-yg-*, *dwyn*: *dyg-af*, *dyg-y*, *dwc* 'I bring', &c.). *-ein*: *arwein* 'bear, lead' (Indic. pres. sing. 3. *arwed* BD 114. 29, pl. 3. *arwed-ant* 110. 3; pret. sing. 3. *arwed-awd* B xiv. 269. 36), *kywein* 'bear, carry' (Imper. sing. 2. *cywed* B ii. 14. 4), *darllein* 'read' (Indic. pres. sing. 1. *darlle-af*, 3. *derlly* CLlH 27. 32[b]), also *darlle-aw* HGCr 13. 79, *dwyrein* 'rise' (Indic. pres. sing. 3. *dwyre* BT 60. 8), also *dwyrau* DB 71 (Indic. pres. sing. 3. *dvyrhaa* BD 107. 13), *olrein* 'trace' (Indic. pret. sing. 3. *olre-wys* WM 469. 21). *-fa*(*n*): *kwynvan* 'lament' LlA 154. 21, *griduan* 'groan' 154. 22, *gridua* RM 132. 18–19; with affected vowel, *-ofein*: *kwyn-ouein* 'lamenting' SG 343. 3, *wyl-ouein* 'weeping' BDe 20. 22, but more commonly *kwynaw*, *wylaw*, also *-ein* in *llevein* 'cry' (Indic. pres. sing. 3. *llef-ha* BD 110. 6), *germein* 'shout' (*garm* 'a shout', Ir. *gairm*), *llemein* 'leap' (*llam* 'a leap', Ir. *léimm*); by analogy with *germein*, *diaspedein* 'shout' (*diaspat* 'a shout' PKM 77. 15: Indic. pres. sing. 2. *diasbedy* WM 613. 20, pl. 3. *diaspedant* RM 125. 19; imperf. sing. 3. *diaspedei* ChSDR 63. 582. Subj. pres. sing. 2. *diaspettych* WM 457. 17; see ChSDR 99).

-s: *aros* 'wait' (Indic. pres. sing. 1. *arho-af*, 3. *erhy*), *go*(*r*)*diwes* 'overtake' (Indic. pres. sing. 1. *go*(*r*)*diwed-af*).

Note also the following verbal nouns, which have formations peculiar to themselves:

chwerthin 'laugh' (Indic. pres. sing. 1. *chwarđ-af*).

eredic 'plough' BBC 44. 6, *erti* (≡ *erđi*) 55. 1 (stem *arđ-*: Subj. pres. sing. 3. *artho* LlB 80. 11. < *arđ* + *ho*).

gweini 'serve' (stem *gweinyđ-*: Indic. pres. sing. 1. *gweinyđ-af*, also *gweiniu* § 128 *a*, 3. *gweinyd* R 1238. 21, *gweinyda* 1254. 4; see L & P 371).

gwneuthur 'do, make' § 141 n.

lludyas 'hinder' BD 49. 15 (stem *llud-*: Indic. imperf. sing. 3. *lludyei* BD 206. 12; pret. sing. 3. *lludywys* PKM 86. 1).

sefyll 'stand' (Indic. pres. sing. 1. *saf-af*).

Syntax

§ 180. The verbal noun possesses the attributes of both noun and verb. Fundamentally its constructions are those of the noun, but it may in certain cases function instead of a finite verb, and frequently forms part of a verbal predicate.

Its syntax is best described according to its uses (*a*) as noun, and (*b*) as verb, or as part of a verbal predicate.

(*a*) (1) It may take the article: *yr hela* 'the hunting' PKM 1. 9–10.

(2) It may be qualified by an adjective: *y gossot kyntaf* 'the first attack' PKM 5. 20, *kerdet araf gwastat* 'a slow even pace' 9. 15.

(3) A possessive pronoun may be used with it: *o'e geissaw* 'to seek him', *eu caru* 'to love them'.

(4) An adjectival form of the interrogative may occur with it: *a pha gerdet yssyd arnat ti?* 'and where art thou going?' (lit. 'what going is there on thee?') PKM 12. 13, *Pa ymouyn bynnac* 'Whatever questioning' 13. 13.

(5) It may be governed by a preposition: *trwy hela* 'by hunting'.

(6) It may serve as subject or as object: *da yw gennyf dy welet ti* 'glad am I to see thee' PKM 12. 15, *ef a uyn ymrwymaw Ynys y Kedeirn ac Iwerdon y gyt* 'he wishes to bind together Ynys y Cedyrn and Ireland' 30. 21.

(7) It may depend on a noun, as in the following expressions: *corn canu* 'sounding horn, hunting horn' PKM 15. 14, *gwisc hela*

'hunting garb' 4. 10, *kic hela* 'game meat' 52. 15, *gwyr ymlad* 'fighting men' 40. 15, *korn ymolchi* 'horn (sounded) for washing' WM 234. 11, *y wreic wrthot* Lat. *'femina repudiata'* LlB 66. 2. In early poetry it is used with the force of a present participle, thus: *Gwledic gwlad oruod* 'A ruler, governing a country' HGCr 21. 3, *Culuit Argluit new . . . gueng(u)lad vad veidroli* 'God, Lord of heaven (who dost) rule a good holy land' 9. 41–42; see L & P 316.

(*b*) (1) It may be modified by an adverb: *reit yw in gerdet yn bryssur* 'we must travel with speed' PKM 71. 1.

(2) Preceded by *yn*, *wedy*, &c., it is used in the periphrastic construction with the verb 'to be'; see §§ 119 *a*, 120 *a*, 121 *b*, 122 *a*, 145.

(3) In MW it is frequently employed as object of one of the forms of *gwneuthur* 'to do' in the abnormal order (§ 199). This is most common in narrative, where the verb is usually in the preterite; the forms are *goruc*, &c., and *gwnaeth*, &c. (§ 141). In the majority of cases the combination verbal noun + *a* + *goruc* / *gwnaeth* is equivalent in meaning to a personal form of the verb represented by the verbal noun: *mynet a oruc Padric y Iwerdon* 'Patrick went to Ireland' BDe 2. 21, *ryuedu a oruc paub* 'every one wondered' B ix. 145. 30, *medylyaw a wnaeth yn hir* 'she meditated for long' PKM 7. 10. A series of verbal nouns may occur in this construction, and all of them may precede the finite verb, thus: *Sewyll ac arhos a oruc y uorwyn* 'The maiden stayed and waited' PKM 12. 10, *Bwyta a chyuedach ac ymdidan a wnaethont* 'They ate and caroused and conversed' 13. 24–25. As a rule, however, the second verbal noun (and the third, &c.) follows the finite verb: *kerdet a oruc parth a'r egluys gyssygredic a digwydav e draet er escop* 'he proceeded to the holy church and fell at the feet of the bishop' B ix. 148. 16–17, *ymgeissaw a oruc a'e gedymdeithon a'e vrodoryon maeth, ac ymgyghor ac wynt* 'he sought out his comrades and foster-brothers and took counsel of them' BR 1. 9–10, *edrych a wnaeth Manauydan ar y dref yn Llundein . . . a dodi ucheneit vawr, a chymryt diruawr alar a hiraeth yndaw* 'Manawydan looked upon the town in London and heaved a great sigh and felt much grief and longing within him' PKM 49. 3–6.

(4) The verbal noun is often used instead of a finite verb. (*a*) In a series of co-ordinate statements, with a finite verb preceding: *Riuedi mawr o sswydwyr a gyuodassant y uynyd, a dechreu llenwi y got* 'A large number of attendants arose and began to fill the bag' PKM 16. 19, *y dygyuores uyg kyuoeth am ym pen . . . a rodi dewis im, ae uyg kyuoeth, ae wynt* 'my people rose against me and gave me the choice, my dominions or them' 36. 2–4, *y syrthyawd y blew oll . . . a thorri y croen y amdanei, a syrthyaw y holl berued y'r llawr* 'all its hair fell, and the skin was rent from around it, and all its entrails fell to the ground' BDe 12. 11–12, *llawen uu y uorwyn wrthaw a chyfarch gwell idaw* 'the maiden welcomed him and greeted him' RM 196. 7. (*b*) With no finite verb preceding: *kymryt gwrogaeth y gwyr a dechreu guereskynn y wlat* 'he received the homage of the men and began to subdue the land' PKM 6. 12, *dechreu cadarnhau kedymdeithas y ryngthunt, ac anuon o pob un y gilid meirch a milgwn* 'they began to strengthen the friendship between them, and each sent the other horses and greyhounds' 8. 18–19, *Dyuot y crydyon, a chymryt kynghor* 'The shoemakers came and took counsel' 54. 23.

N. 1. Occasionally the verbal noun denotes obligation: *dyuot brennhin morcannhuc y gundy teliau yn lann taf* 'The king of Morgannwg must come to the chapter house of Teilo in Llandaf' LL. 120. 26, *Tir gwlyb, gadel rycheu dwfyn y adel y dwfyr y redec ohonaw ymeith* 'Marsh land, deep furrows should be left to allow the water to run away from it' B ii. 13. 9.

N. 2. In early poetry there are examples where the verbal noun has the meaning of the preterite passive, apparently with an affective element: *Marth ym pa vro | llad vn mab Marro* 'A wonder is it to me in what land the only son of Marro was killed!' CA 1. 20, *Yn Aber Lleu llad Uryen* 'In Aber Lleu Urien was killed!' CLIH 15. 30[c]. But cf. § 182 *a*.

§ 181. The subject of the verbal noun (see EC v. 51–81). Various constructions are employed to denote the subject.

(*a*) It may come after the verbal noun governed by the preposition *o* 'of': *a'e datkanu oll o Pwyll* 'and Pwyll related the whole of it' PKM 8. 13, *am lad o honaf uu hun uy mab* 'because I myself killed my son' 25. 14. This is the most common construction in MW.

(*b*) It may come immediately after the verbal noun without a preposition; this is the usual construction when the verb is intransitive: *Kynn dyuot cwbyl o'r oet* 'Before the end of the time came'

PKM 20. 3, *Dyuot Caswallawn am eu penn, a llad y chwegwyr* 'Caswallawn fell upon them and killed the six men' 46. 2. When the subject is a personal pronoun, a possessive pronoun is used with the verbal noun: *guedy y dyuot y gynted y neuad* 'after he had come to the high hall' PKM 16. 8; with the verbal noun governed by *yn*, in certain cases, as follows: *en e orwed* '(in his) lying' B ix. 146. 26, *yn eu seuyll* '(in their) standing' v. 212. 1, also *o*: *o'e orwed* B vii. 371. 35, *o'e seuyll* x. 26. 37.

(*c*) It may come after the verbal noun, governed by the preposition *y* 'to': *Diwarnawd yn hyly y'r brenhin* 'One day as the king was hunting' WM 453. 8–9, *Emystynnu idaw ynteu yn y peir* 'He stretched himself out in the cauldron' PKM 44. 19, *ymellwng idaw ynteu* 'he let himself down' 90. 8, *Canu englyn idaw ynteu yna* 'He sang an englyn then' 90. 9, *Ysgynnu y Bown ar y march* 'Bown mounted the horse' YBH 9. 557, *Yna agori y safyn y'r llew* 'Then the lion opened its mouth' 31. 1296–7. This construction was abandoned early, and, with the exception of YBH, its use in MW is rare; see YBH clxxi–clxxii.

(*d*) In a subordinate clause it may come before the verbal noun, governed by the preposition *y* 'to': *hyt nas gwypei duw y vn o honunt ell pedwar allu mynet o'r lle* 'so that God knew not how one of the four of them could go from the place' WM 506. 16–18, *ny thebygaf i y un o hyn uynet ar dy geuyn di* 'I do not think any one of these will go upon thy back' PKM 25. 16, *ryuedu o Owein y'r mackwy gyuarch gwell idaw* 'Owein marvelled that the squire greeted him' BR 12. 14, *A thebygu y'r brenhin cadw y edewit wrthaw* 'And thought that the king would keep his promise to him' RB 278. 10–11, *ef a dywawt wrthunt idaw anuon Antenor yn gennat y Roec* 'he told them that he had sent Antenor as a messenger to Greece' 6. 23, *ar yr hwnn y dywedant wy y Adaf gwynaw Abel y vab gant mlyned* 'on which they say that Adam mourned for Abel his son a hundred years' FfBO 44. 25. Examples of this construction are rare in MW, but in ModW it became the most common construction in subordinate noun and adverbial clauses, in which past time is expressed; see EC v. 78, CFG 48.

N. Another construction is also attested. In this the subject precedes the verbal noun, which is governed by the preposition *y* 'to'. It is found in

Irish and Cornish (see L & P 315), but examples of its use in Welsh are very rare: *dadyl dieu agheu y eu treidu* '(It is) a certain fact that death visited them' CA 3. 73 (see B xiii. 188–9). Cf. *Pwy bynhac a uo gwell gantaw arall y dadleu drostaw yn llys noc ehunan* 'Whoever may prefer to have another to plead for him in court rather than himself' LlB 45. 19.

§ 182. The verbal noun as passive. The verbal noun has no passive or impersonal form. The following constructions are employed when a passive meaning is required:

(*a*) The verbal noun may be used with passive or impersonal meaning. It is used thus in cases where it is employed instead of a finite verb, where it is the object of a verb, the subject of *daruot* (§ 154), or governed by a preposition. Examples: *Dyuot a'r esgidyeu idi* 'The shoes were brought to her' ('there was a coming with the shoes to her') PKM 80. 4, *brathu Bendigeiduran yn y troet* 'Bendigeidfran was wounded in the foot' 44. 23, *Gwedy hynny yd erchis gwneuthur tri llyfyr kyfreith* 'After that he ordered three lawbooks to be compiled' LlB 1. 25, *wedy daruot torri pob un* 'after each one had been broken off' PKM 59. 12–13, *gwedy gossot y vorwynn rac y vronn ef* 'after the maiden had been brought before him' B ix. 326. 37, *gwedy rannu y vwng o boptu y vynwgyl* 'with its mane parted on both sides of its neck' BR 11. 12, *llyma uab bychan yn y gorn, guedy troi llenn o bali yn y gylch* 'lo, an infant boy in swaddling-clothes, with a sheet of brocaded silk wrapped around him' PKM 22. 26, *Maent guedy gwneuthur creu udunt yn y cantref arall issot* 'A sty has been made for them in the other cantref below' 71. 23–24, *kyn uy rodi y wr arall* 'before I am given to another man' 13. 3, *a chorn yn llaw bop vn onadunt, yn y daly yn agos o'e eneu* 'and a horn in the hand of each one of them, being held close to his lips' B v. 211. 25, *yr hwnn y mae y gorff yn y galis yn y sathru o sarassinyeit* 'whose body is in Galicia trodden on by Saracens' Hg MSS ii. 21. 23.

(*b*) When the verbal noun occurs with a finite verb, the impersonal form of the latter is used: *Kyweiryaw y neuad a wnaethpwyt* 'The hall was made ready' PKM 13. 20–21, *y neb a dylyer y kymryt y ganthaw* 'any who should be taken from him' 18. 5, *a chelu y damwein hwnnw ny allwyt* 'that hap could not be concealed' 21. 10.

(*c*) In the periphrastic construction with *bot* (§ 180 *b* 2), the impersonal forms of *bot* are used (for *ys* see § 147 *b*): *a'm rodi y wr o'm hanwod yd ydys* 'and I am being given to a man against my will' PKM 12. 23–24, *yn dechreu treulaw y wled yd oedit* 'they were (lit. 'it was') beginning to hold the feast' 25. 20, *yd oedit yn dygyuori y wlat* 'the country was being mustered' 71. 19; with *bot*: *y dywedut idaw uot yn llad y vrein* 'to tell him that his ravens were being slain' BR 18. 20.

(*d*) The verbal noun is made to serve as the object of the verb *cael* 'get, receive'; with the verbal noun there occurs a possessive pronoun which refers back to the subject of *cael*: *ni a gawn yn goganu gan yr unben* 'we shall be defamed by the chieftain' (lit. 'we shall get our defaming') PKM 84. 26, *Drwy ba fford y kauas ef y broui* 'By what means was he tried?' LlA 12. 20. This construction, which is rare in MW, became very common in the Mod. period.

§ 183. Negative of the verbal noun. The negative particle *ny*, *na* cannot be used with a verbal noun; the following constructions are employed when a negative meaning is required:

(*a*) A finite verb preceded by the negative particle is employed instead of a verbal noun: *Or damweinha y'r maer na allo daly ty* 'If it should happen that a *maer* be unable to maintain a house' LlB 48. 15, *diheu oed ganthunt na welsynt eiryoet llongeu gyweirach eu hansawd noc wy* 'they were certain that they had never seen ships in fairer trim than they' PKM 30. 1, *y erchi idav nat ymyrrei yn y gwirion hvnnv* 'to ask him not to interfere with that innocent one' B xiv. 258. 35. A verbal noun would have been employed in such sentences had they been affirmative. An affirmative and a negative predicate may occur together, the one expressed by a verbal noun, the other by a negative + finite verb: *am welet y cledyf yn llad y wyr ac na wydat pwy a'e lladei* 'because he saw the sword slaying his men but knew not who slew them' PKM 46. 4, *dewis di ae kerdet ae na cherdych* 'choose thou, whether thou go or go not' BR 8. 26.

(*b*) The preposition *heb* 'without' may be used with the verbal noun: *kyuarth a rodei y'r cwn, heb gilyaw yrdhunt* 'he would stand

at bay against the dogs, and not retreat before them' PKM 55. 18, *A chymrawu a oruc Chyarlymaen . . . ac heb allv seuyll yn y kynnwryf hwnnw* 'And Charlemagne became terrified, and was not able to stand in that commotion' B v. 211. 37.

(*c*) When the verbal noun is the object of a finite verb, the latter may be negatived: *Cany welas ef tygyaw idaw e hymlit* 'Since he saw that it did not avail him to follow her' PKM 11. 6. Examples of this construction are very rare.

(*d*) *Peidyaw.* In ModW *peidio* 'to cease, leave off' with *a*(*g*) is commonly used with a verbal noun to express a negative meaning (see CFG 60–63). In MW, however, its use as a mere negative is not common; when it does occur with the verbal noun, the meanings 'stop, cease, leave off' are usually present, e.g. *na pheit a dyscu* 'do not leave off learning' B ii. 25. 11. But already in MW there are examples where the verb seems to have been almost entirely stripped of these meanings and reduced to a simple negative: *Peit bellach a dyvedut am vy morwyndaut i* 'Do not any longer speak of my virginity' B ix. 331. 8, *beth a wnelei ae ymchuelut ae peidyaw* 'what he should do, return or not' RC xxxiii. 211. 20–21, *pei peitwn i, ti a vydut uudugavl* 'were I not (to do it), thou wouldst be victorious' BD 51. 3.

N. *Peit* comes from Lat. *patior*, and in a few examples it is found with the meaning 'suffer, endure': *Djrieit ny haudbeit hedwch* 'The wicked one does not readily suffer peace' B iv. 6. 195, *ny feit neb dwuyr a than yn gystal ac ef* 'no one will endure water and fire as well as he' WM 465. 7–8. The most common meaning in MW is 'stop, cease': *nachaf y llu yn arafhau a'r kynnwryf yn peidaw* 'lo, the host settling down and the commotion ceasing' BR 11. 2; with *a*(*c*): *ny pheidvys yr amheravdyr a'e darpar* 'the emperor did not give up his intention' BD 64. 26, *peidyav a wnaeth a'r abertheu yd oed yn y wneuthur* 'he broke off the sacrifices he was making' 66. 31, *Peiduch ac ef ac na wneuch drvc idav* 'Leave him alone and do him no harm' B xiv. 260. 26.

VERBAL ADJECTIVES

§ 184. Verbal adjectives are usually formed by the addition of certain endings to the stem. The most common endings are *-edic*, *-adwy*:

-edic. It usually has the force of a past participle passive:

darpar-edic 'prepared' PKM 16. 2, *bendic-etic* 'blessed' LL 121. 5, *emelldic-etic* 'accursed' 121. 3, *car-edic* 'loved' PKM 27. 18 (later 'kind'). Occasionally it has the force of an active or middle: *tro-edic* 'revolving' SG 327. 39, *cyphro-edic* 'moving' BY 4. 26.

-adwy. It has the force of a future participle passive or gerundive: *cred-adwy* 'to be believed, credible', *mol-adwy* 'to be praised, praiseworthy' BT 71. 23.

Examples occur of other endings which are not so common:

-ediw, a variant of *-adwy*: *mol-ediw* CLlH 18. 47[b], *tel-ediw* (stem *tal-*) 'of full value, handsome' PKM 22. 14 (see note, pp. 148–9).

-at: *digar-ad* 'not loved, rejected' BBC 86. 5, *cay-at* 'closed' PKM 46. 23.

-(h)awt: *gwyr-haud* 'bent' BBC 89. 8, *llewych-awt* 'shining' BT 9. 15.

-eit: *honn-eit* 'known' YCM 22. 13.

The bare stem may serve as a verbal adjective in some cases: *llynn tawd* 'melting pool' WM 232. 36 (*tod-i* 'to melt').

PRE-VERBAL PARTICLES

Affirmative

§ 185. Ry (Ir. *ro*). This particle was commonly employed in the early period, but is less frequent in late MW; in many cases it has little force beyond that of a simple affirmative particle. Originally it occurred before a simple verb and before the second element of a compound verb: OW *di-r-gatisse* gl. *concesserat* (MW *dyad-u* < *dy* + *gad-u*, see § 166). It was not used with the negative, the interrogative *a*, or the relative *a*. From an early period, however, the original practice was abandoned, and in the MW period examples occur of its use with each one of these. After certain forms ending in a vowel the contraction *-r* is often found: *neu-r* (§ 188), *ny-r*, *no-r* (see *a* below), *gwedy-r* (§ 186), *py-r* (§ 83 n. 2), also after the particle *y*: *y-r* (§ 187). See RC xxix. 9–67, xxx. 22–36, xxxi. 23–48, 333–49, *Ériu* ii. 60–61, 215–20.

N. 1. OW *rit*: *rit pucsaun mi* 'I should have desired', *rit ercis* 'he has required', see B vi. 218, L & P 256; *rit* < *ri* + *it* (? pre-verbal particle, § 190 n.).

N. 2. There is ample evidence to show that the particle had little force

in late MW. Note the following examples: *ri guanaid* CA l. 783 = *a wnaeth* l. 775 (see p. 264), *peth ryued ry weleis* RM 194. 5 = *a weleis i* WM 118. 5, *os y uwrw ry deryw* WM 125. 4, but *os y lad a deryw* 125. 7. See also BD xlix, where it is shown how its use greatly declined during the fourteenth century.

The following are its main uses:

(*a*) It gives a perfect meaning to the verb; this is the most common use. With the preterite: *coet ry welsom ar y weilgi* 'a forest have we seen upon the deep' PKM 39. 21, *uy llysuam ry dygvys im na chaffwyf wreic byth* 'my stepmother has sworn on me that I shall never get a wife' WM 454. 25–26, *Pawb ry gauas y gyuarws* 'Every one has obtained his boon' 470. 27 (= *a gauas* RM 113. 20), *dy glot ry gigleu ympob gwlat* 'I have heard of thy fame in every country' 144. 12–13. With the negative: *ny ry giglef i eirmoet y uorwyn a dywedy di* 'I have never heard of the maiden thou tellest of' WM 470. 18–19. *nor* (< *no* 'than' + *ry*): *ny duc neb kyrch waeth no'r dugum ymma* 'no one has made a worse expedition than I have made here' PKM 32. 24–25.

N. The preterite can have a perfect meaning without *ry* (§ 121 *b*), but with *ry* it never denotes a simple past; see L & P 256.

With the pluperfect: *Gwallocau a oruc yr athro . . . y ryn ry adawsei y'r urenhines* 'The preceptor neglected that which he had promised the queen' WM 453. 5–8 (= *a adawssei* RM 101. 5), *beth a uuassei y arglwydiaeth ef arnunt hwy y ulwydyn honno y wrth ry uuassei kynn no hynny* 'what his rule over them had been that year, compared with what it had been before that' PKM 8. 5–7.

With the present subjunctive (§ 124 n.): *kyt ry wnelych di sarhaedeu llawer a cholledeu* 'though thou mayest have wrought many outrages and losses' RM 99. 1–2, *kanys ry gaffo o arall* 'though he may not have got it from another' WM 453. 39. *nyr*: *ny byd vn dalen ar y pren nyr darffo y'r kawat y dwyn* 'there will not be one leaf on the tree which the shower will not have taken' ChCC 53. 31–32.

With the imperfect: *mynet a oruc serch y uorwyn ym pob aelawt itaw kyn nys ry welhei eiroet* 'love of the maiden entered into every limb of him, although he had never seen her' WM 454. 20–22

(= *yr nas gwelsei* RM 102. 5), *pei mi ry wascut uelly ny oruydei ar arall uyth rodi serch im* 'had it been I that thou had squeezed in this way, there were no need for another to love me ever' WM 474. 30–33.

(*b*) There are examples where *ry* appears to denote customary or repeated action: *ry duc oe lovlen glas lavnawr* 'he was wont to bear blue blades with his gauntlet' CA 38. 960, *ban ry reint brein ar crev* 'when ravens were wont to croak over gore' BBC 100. 1. A consuetudinal perfect present meaning may be expressed (with the pres.): *Ti a nodyd a ry geryd o pop karchar* 'Thou dost protect whom thou hast loved from every prison' BT 53. 9; see further L & P 256–7.

(*c*) Possibility, with the present indicative: *Ry seiw gur ar vn conin* 'A man can stand on a single stalk' CLlH 27. 1^{c}. Also futurity, although it is not always easy to distinguish between possibility and futurity: *O'th ryledir* 'If thou wilt be killed' CLlH 1. 4^{b}, but cf. *O diengyd* 'If thou wilt escape' CLlH 1. 4^{a}.

(*d*) Optative, expressing a wish; with the present subjunctive: *ry phrinom-ne di gerenhit* 'may we deserve thy friendship' BBC 88. 15; very rarely with the imperative: *y kam ry wnaetham na ry noetha* 'the wrong we have done do not expose' R 1285. 38.

§ 186. It is found with the verbal noun: *paub onadunt wynteu a daallassant ry lad ohonav ef e brenhin creulavn* 'all of them understood that he had slain the cruel king' B ix. 336. 28, *Mi a gyffessaf ry bechu ohonaf* 'I confess that I have sinned' viii. 139. 9, *y tybyassant ry lad Kei* 'they thought that Kei had been slain' WM 141. 23–24, *am ry estwng o Hu idaw* 'because Hu had submitted to him' B v. 219. 38, *am ry wylltaw gwas kystal a Pheredur o lys Arthur* 'for having driven such a fine lad as Peredur from Arthur's court' WM 132. 28, *yd oed kawat o eira gwedy ry odi y nos gynt, a gwalch wyllt gwedy ry lad hwyat* 'a fall of snow had come down the night before, and a wild she-hawk had killed a duck' 140. 16–19; *gwedyr* (§ 185): *bot yr iarll a'e holl allu gwedyr disgynnu wrth y ty* 'that the earl and all his power have beset the house' WM 136. 8–9.

The prefixed personal pronoun representing the object of the verbal noun is not always formally expressed: *Acy dywavt hitheu ry*

garu ef eryot 'And she said that she had always loved him' BD 27. 2. It may also remain unexpressed when it represents the subject of the verbal noun: *coffau a wnaeth Pandrasus ry fo ehunan* 'Pandrasus remembered that he himself had fled' BD 7. 12, *Canys dywedut vrthi a wnaeth ry dyuot ef yn lledrat o'r castell* 'For he told her that he had come by stealth from the castle' 138. 22. But in some examples we find the pronoun indicated: *guedy y ry darystvng ynn* 'after having been subjected to us' BD 76. 27, *guedy eu ry lad* 'after they had been killed' 125. 19.

§ 187. Yr (Y). This form is a variant of *ry* (cf. *drychafel | dyr-*, see § 179, also *y-r* § 185, but see RC xxxi. 349–56), and examples of it occur from a fairly early period: *Yma y mae brenhin Iwerdon, ac yr gyscwys gan Vranwen dy chwaer* 'The king of Ireland is here and has slept with Branwen thy sister' PKM 31. 25, *Seith cantref Dyuet yr edewit y mi* 'The seven cantrefs of Dyfed have been left to me' 49. 17–18, *mal yr daroed* 'as had happened' BD 28. 27.

y: *y'r neuad y gyrchwys y diarchenu* 'to the hall he came to pull off his boots' PKM 4. 7–8. This is not to be identified with *y(d)* (§ 190), which is followed by the radical.

With a verbal noun: *guedy clybot yn Ruuein yr oresgyn o Caravn enys Prydein* 'after it was heard in Rome that Carawn had subdued the island of Britain' BD 66. 17; with omission of the pronoun representing the object of the verbal noun (cf. *ry*, see § 186 above): *Llyma vi yn guelet y dreic coch wedy yr vwrw y dan vyn traet* 'Here am I seeing the red dragon cast under my feet' B ix. 330. 24.

For the use of *ry | yr* in a relative clause, see § 65 n. 2.

N. The use of *yr* as a simple affirmative particle spread at the expense of *y(d)* (§ 190), as is attested in some late MW texts. Note the following examples: *ef a dybygei . . . yr ymordiwedei a hi* 'he thought that he would overtake her' PKM 11. 1, *o pa le yr oed yn dyuot* 'whence he was coming' ChO 8. 8, *Odyna yr adeilyawd eglwys yng Gwent* 'Then he built a church in Gwent' BDe 6. 12. In some texts (e.g. BDe, towards the middle of the fourteenth century) it is almost as common as *yd*; in the Mod. period it has superseded it.

§ 188. Neu(t) (Ir. *no, nu*). The original meaning may have been 'now', but it is mostly used in MW as a simple affirmative

particle: *neut yttiw dros amser itt kymryt dy vwyt* 'it is past time for thee to take thy meat' RM 85. 12, *neu cheint* 'I have sung' BT 19. 1, *neut athoed hi heibaw* 'she had gone past' PKM 9. 20, *Neus rodes y uelly, Arglwydes, yg gwyd gwyrda* 'He has so given it, lady, in the presence of nobles' 14. 7.

It occurs before a nominal predicate in the form *neut*: *neut teruynedic angheu y mi* 'my death is accomplished' (lit. 'death is accomplished for me') PKM 6. 4, *Pwy bynnac ohonunt a torrer y naud, neut sarhaet idaw* 'Whichever of them shall have his protection violated, it is *sarhad* (the fine for insult) to him' LlB 8. 19; before a noun denoting a period of time: *Na weleis . . . neut seith mlyned, un dyn yma* 'I have not seen for seven years any person here' (lit. 'it is now seven years', similarly Corn. *nansyw*, see B xv. 204–6) PKM 61. 25.

It occurs with *ry*: *Neu ry orvuost e gur o Nazareth* 'Thou hast conquered, O man of Nazareth' B ix. 336. 36; *neur*: *neur golles y mab* 'the boy is lost' PKM 20. 12, *Neur gauas ef enw* 'He has got a name' 80. 23; often found with *deryw, daroed*, when they serve as auxiliaries (§ 154 n.): *neur deryw udunt gwerescyn a diffeithaw y kyfoeth* 'they have overrun and laid waste the dominion' WM 139. 13–14, *neur deryw y'r maccwy llad llawer o'th lu* 'the squire has slain many of thy host' 148. 4, *erbyn echwyd neur daroed idaw llad trayan y llu* 'by evening he had killed a third of the host' 148. 1.

N. 1. In early poetry *neu(t)* may be found before a negative sentence, where it apparently serves to heighten the force of the negative: *Neu nyt atwen* 'I know not' BT 12. 24, *Neut nat mi eu kyuadas* 'I am certainly not suited to them' CLlH 10. 15[c].

N. 2. *Neu y*. Note the following example: *Neu ym kylchenavd i kvnn llawer* 'Many hounds have surrounded me' B ix. 328. 33. Here *ym* may be explained as a syllabic form of the infixed pronoun; see § 59.

§ 189. Hu(t). See RC xxxi. 331–2, CLlH 131, B viii. 237–9. It occurs in early poetry and usually has the meaning 'as, so, thus': *Heit heb uodrydaf hu byd* 'A swarm without a queen bee is so' CLlH 15. 32[c], *hud wyf uart* 'as I am a bard' LlHen 98. 30. The form *ym* of the 1. sing. of the infixed pronoun is found with it before the verb: *Bart Llywelyn hael hud ym gelwir* 'The bard of generous Llywelyn am I thus called' LlHen 125. 11,

hud im gelwir e guin mab nud 'thus am I called Gwyn fab Nudd' BBC 98. 7–8. It is found with the negative: *Ni hu wyf lawen o lawer achaws* 'I am thus not happy from many a cause' MA 246ª38.

§ 190. Y(d) (*y* before a consonant, *yd* [əd] before a vowel). It is the most common form of the simple affirmative particle in MW (see also § 187 n.).

It is found before the verb at the beginning of a sentence: *Y rodet y march y'r mab, ac y deuth hi at'y guastrodyon* 'The horse was given to the boy, and she came to the ostlers' PKM 24. 4–5, *Y kymereis inheu wyntwy arnaf, yu gossymdeithaw* 'I took them to me to maintain them' 35. 23, *E dodeis inheu ar gynghor uy gwlat beth a wneit amdanunt* 'I referred to the council of my country what should be done concerning them' 36. 4, *yd af i yn agel y gyt ac wynt* 'I will go as an angel along with them' WM 118. 27, *y kyuodes y marchawc enteu a thynnu cledyf arall yn erbyn Gereint* 'the knight too arose and drew another sword against Gereint' 398. 15–16, *Ac y dyuu Glewlwyt y'r neuad* 'And Glewlwyd came into the hall' 457. 21; with an adverb or adverbial expression preceding: *yna y dywawt y mackwy wrth Owein* 'then the squire said to Owein' BR 12. 21, *Ar Ryt Vorlas y llas Gwen* 'At Rhyd Forlas Gwen was killed' CLlH 4. 22ᶜ, *A thrannoeth y talwyt y ueirych idaw* 'And on the morrow his horses were made over to him' PKM 34. 23.

It also occurs before a verb to introduce a subordinate clause, (*a*) an improper relative clause (§§ 68–72), (*b*) a noun clause: *gwybydwch chwi y daw kennadeu yma auory* 'know ye that messengers will come here tomorrow' BDe 15. 3, *ac adaw idaw . . . yd aei y'r Yspaen y ymlad a'r paganyeit* 'and (he) promised him that he would go to Spain to fight with the pagans' B v. 209. 15–16.

N. *yt*. Earlier a particle *yt* [əd] is used before a consonant; it is followed by lenition: *Yd weles e Guendoleu* 'I have seen Gwendoleu' BBC 53. 16, *Gwen wrth Lawen yd wylwys neithwyr* 'Gwen by Llawen watched last night' CLlH 3. 15ª, *Yn Aber Cuawc yt ganant gogeu* 'In Aber Cuawg the cuckoos sing' 23. 5ª, *Tec yd gan ir adaren* 'Sweetly does the bird sing' 30. 1ª, *am y deu ymwystlaw hynny yt vyd y dosparth ar awdurdaut llythyraul* 'it is concerning these two mutual pledgings that there

will be settlement by written authority' LlB 18. 19. See further J. Baudiš, RC 1. 388–405.

§ 191. Ef. This is the form of the personal pronoun 3. sing. masc. employed as particle; it occurs not only before the 3. sing., but before the 1. sing. and impers. forms as well: *Ef dyfu dreic llu* 'The dragon of the host came' R 1419. 11, *Ef gwneif beird byt yn llawen* 'I will make the bards of the world merry' BT 63. 22, *Ef molir pawb wrth y weith* 'Everybody is praised according to his work' R 1056. 32; *ef a*: *Ef a doeth makwyueit a gueisson ieueinc y diarchenu* 'There came squires and chamberlains to pull off his boots' PKM 4. 8, *ef a doeth taraneu a mellt* 'there came peals of thunder and lightning' BDe 4. 9; later in early ModW *ef* (*a*), *efe* (*a*), *fe* (*a*), *fo* (*a*), *e*, *a*; cf. WG 427, WS 184–7, L & P 145.

It is sometimes used with the negative: *Nyt ef caraf amryssonyat* 'I love not a wrangler' BT 8. 3, *Nid ew rotir new i'r neb nvy keis* 'Heaven shall not be given to him who seeks it not' HGCr 42. 75, *nyt ef enir pawb yn doeth* 'Everybody is not born wise' R 1056. 24; *ef a*: *nyt ef a geiff pawb a uynn* 'everybody does not get what he wants' R 1028. 43.

With *kyt* 'although': *kyt ef mynasswn* 'though I should have desired' BT 65. 17–18.

N. Other forms of the personal pronoun may occur before the verb, thus: *A mi disgoganav e* 'And I predict' BBC 48. 5, *ti disgynnvt* 'thou wouldst attack' CA 9. 224; later *mi a*, *ti a*, &c.

With the negative: *Nyt mi wyf kerd uut* 'I am not mute of song' BT 31–32; with *neu*: *Neu vi erthycheis* 'I groaned' BT 62. 5.

§ 192. A. It is used in early poetry to support an infixed pronoun (§§ 58, 61). Later it is regularly employed in the abnormal order where the verb is preceded by the subject or object: *Pwyll ynteu a doeth y Dyuet. A'r ulwydyn honno a dreulwys pawb o honunt hyt oet y wled* 'Pwyll also came to Dyfed. And each one of them spent that year until the time set for the feast' PKM 15. 27–29; also where the object (or subject) of a verbal noun precedes: *a'th esgyrnn a baraf y losci* 'and I will cause thy bones to be burned' B ix. 327. 28.

N. In the early period the particles *ry* / *yr* are also employed in these positions: *A thri meib yr uuassei y Ortheyrn kyn no hynny* 'And there had

been three sons to Gortheyrn before then' BD 95. 28–29, *Digawn ry dodet ymman* 'Sufficient has been put herein' PKM 15. 11, *A'r temhyl honno ry wnathoed Lyr yn anryded y'r duw a elwit yna Biffrontis Jani* 'And that temple had Llyr built in honour of the god who was then called Bifrons Ianus' BD 30. 25.

§ 193. As, Ys, rare, and found mostly in early poetry (see B ii. 284, G 44, CA 123, 133–4). It is used like *y(d)*, *yt* (§ 190): *Duw Sadwrn ys aeth, ys eithyt ym med* 'On Saturday he went, he went to the grave' HGCr 77. 17, *ac aduyd ys kymeraf gynghor am ych kennadwri chwi* 'maybe I shall take counsel concerning your message' PKM 41. 15–16.

It often occurs with the pres. subj. when it expresses wish or desire: *as bwyf yn adef* 'may I be home' HGCr 22. 29, *Yn oleu ys bo vy Annwylyt | Ar nef* 'Bright may my Beloved be in heaven' 78. 40.

N. The *'s* would appear to be in origin the infixed pronoun 3. sing. (or pl.); cf. § 58.

Negative

§ 194. Ny(t) (ModW *ni(d)*; *ni(t)* occasionally in MW also, e.g. PKM 36. 6, see WG 15), **Na(t).** In a principal clause the form is *ny(t)*, in a subordinate clause *ny(t)* or *na(t)*. Before a verb the form is *ny*, *na* before a consonant, *nyt*, *nat* before a vowel; before a noun, &c., it is invariably *nyt*, *nat*.

(*a*) In a principal clause. (1) At the beginning of a sentence: *Ny welei ef y twrwf rac tywyllet y nos* 'He could not see the commotion as the night was so black' PKM 22. 23, *Ny chymerwn ninheu y gan y tayogeu hynny* 'We will not take that from the churls' 53. 28. (2) In the abnormal order, where the verb is preceded by the subject, object, object (or subject) of a verbal noun, adverb or adverbial expression: *neb ny dieghis odyna namyn ef a'e wreic* 'no one escaped thence save him and his wife' PKM 36. 21, *y rei emelldigedic ny chaffant vy nhyrnas i* 'the accursed ones shall not obtain my kingdom' B ii. 27. 23, *Y Tat ny wnnaethpuyt truy neb* 'The Father was not made through anyone' v. 199. 1 (also *nys* < *ny* + *'s* the infixed pronoun: *kygreir vyth nys erchynt* 'a truce they never asked for (it)' CLlH 7. 40c), *y pedyt ny ellit eu*

reoli o ymsaethu 'the men on foot could not be restrained from shooting at each other' PKM 72. 24, *O hynny hyt trannoeth, ny dywot ef wrthi hi un geir* 'From then till the morning he did not speak a word to her' 5. 1–2.

(*b*) In a noun clause; the form is always *na*(*t*): *mi a orchymynnaf yt nat avlonydych bellach ar vy mynach i* 'I command thee that thou disturb not my monk henceforth' B x. 28. 7, *yn ouyn ni yw, na byd it etiued o'r wreic yssyd gennyt* 'our fear is that there will be to thee no offspring of the wife thou hast' PKM 19. 23–24, *ac yn gwybot nat ef bioed y da* 'and knowing that it was not he who owned the goods' B ii. 16. 21.

N. *Na* with the preterite may express a wish with reference to the past, thus: *Och Gindilic, na buost gureic!* 'Alas Cynddilig, that thou wert not a woman!' (i.e. 'would that thou hadst been a woman!') CLIH 28. 9[c].

(*c*) In a relative clause (§§ 64–78).

(*d*) In an adverbial clause: *cany*(*t*), *canys ny*(*t*) § 261, *kyn ny*(*t*) § 262, *hyt na*(*t*) § 269, *ony*(*t*) § 272, *pryt na*(*t*) § 275.

§ 195. Na(c), *na* before a consonant, *nac* before a vowel. It is used (*a*) with the imperative, (*b*) in answers.

(*a*) *nac ewch* 'go ye not' PKM 25. 12–13, *na dos* 'go thou not' RM 204. 6; it causes lenition of *b*- and *m*- (contrast *ny*(*t*), *na*(*t*) § 65 n. 1): *na vit hir dy ynvyt gyghor* 'let not thy mad deliberation take long' B v. 216. 33.

(*b*) See § 197 *b*.

Interrogative

§ 196. A. Direct question: *a uyd llawn dy got ti uyth* 'will thy bag ever be full?' PKM 16. 21, *a oes ohonawchi a adnappo y uarchoges?* 'is there any among you who knows the horsewoman?' 9. 17. Indirect question: *ac yn gofyn y Idawc a gaffei ran o'r dynyon bychein hynny gantaw* 'and asking Iddawg if he might have a share of those little fellows from him' BR 5. 29. *a . . . ae* 'whether . . . or': *Ef a dyly . . . ystyryaw a hanffo o'e blwyf ef ae na hanffo* 'He ought to consider whether he hails from his parish or not' B vii. 371. 2–3.

Ae 'is it?', before nouns, &c. Direct question: *Ae ti a eirch uy merch?* 'Is it thou that seekest my daughter?' WM 479. 29, *Arglwyd, ae o'th gennyat ti y mae gweisson bychein yr amherawdyr a'e uackwyeit . . . yn blinaw dy vrein?* 'Lord, is it with thy leave that the emperor's bachelors and his squires are molesting thy ravens?' BR 12. 22–24. Indirect question: *gouynnwch idi ae ryd* 'ask her whether she is free' B ix. 326. 14, *gofyn a oruc Owein ay bydawl a'y gwnaei* 'Owein asked whether it was any one of this world who was making it' WM 255. 22–23.

ae . . . ae occurs in an interrogative sentence with the meaning 'whether / either . . . or': *y vybot beth a vynnyt, ae ryuel ae hedvch* 'to ascertain what was wanted, whether war or peace' BD 15. 19, *A werthy di hwnnw . . . ay yr eur ay yr aryant?* 'Wilt thou sell it either for gold or for silver?' B ix. 48. 1, *ny wydyat hitheu beth a wnaei . . . ae dywedut hynny ae tewi* 'she for her part knew not what she should do, whether to tell that or keep silent' RM 270. 27–28, *a uynny di . . . ae diawt ae dim* 'dost thou desire drink or anything?' 276. 7. In simple affirmative sentences also *ae . . . ae* occurs with the meaning 'either . . . or': *guedy y caffei ae dinassoed ae kestyll* 'after he would have captured either cities or castles' BD 46. 15, *a thebic yw genhyfi na doeth y wrthunt heb lad ae rei onadunt ae cwbyl* 'and I think it likely that he came not from them without having slain either some of them or all' WM p. 221. 38–39. For *y neill . . . ae . . . ae*, see § 96 *a*.

N. 1. *ae* probably consists of *a* and a form of the verb 'to be', 3. sing. pres. indic., see L & P 320.

O(t) (§ 272), rare. Indirect question: *nyt reit govyn na ryuedu ot oedynt lawen y nos honno neu ot yttoedynt yn anrydedu Gwalchmei* 'it is not necessary to ask or wonder whether they were joyful that night, or whether they were honouring Gwalchmei' SG 210. 6–8.

Pony(t), Pany(t) (before nouns, &c., always *ponyt / panyt*, cf. *nyt* § 194) *'nonne?'*, used to introduce a question which expects an affirmative answer: *Ponyt oed da iti . . . peri y hywedu, a'y rodi y'r mab* 'Would it not be well for thee to have him broken in and given to the boy?' PKM 23. 27–28, *Pony allaf i gyscu yma?* 'Can I not sleep here?' WM 139. 8–9, *Ponyt llygoden . . . a welaf i y'th law di?* 'Is it not a mouse I see in thy hand?' PKM 63. 12, *Pany*

chredwch chwi y Duw dynyadon ynvyt? 'Will you not believe in God, ye foolish men?' R 1418. 8, *pany wnei di yr hynn a ercheis i?* 'wilt thou not do what I have asked?' SG 107. 1, *pany wely di y mab Iessu yn gwneuthur gweith dyw Satwrnn?* 'dost thou not see thy son Jesus doing work on Saturday?' Hg MSS ii. 229. 28.

Ae ny '*nonne?*', as *pony(t)* above, late and rare in MW: *Ae ny allaf inheu y gael ef amgenach?* 'Can I not have it otherwise?' SG 186. 16, *ae ny wdost di amgenach no hynny?* 'dost thou not know anything other than that?' 200. 28, *Ae ny wdost di amgen no hynny?* 297–8.

N. 2. In ModW the form corresponding to MW *pony*, &c. (and *ae ny*), is *oni(d)*, cf. OW *anit*: *anit arber bit* gl. *num vescitur* Juv.

§ 197. In answers to questions introduced by an interrogative particle, the verb or noun, &c., which follows the particle is repeated. In cases where the verb of the question is in the 2. pers., the 1. pers. is, of course, employed in the answer.

(*a*) Affirmative answers.

(1) *a*: '*A dywedy di ynni pwy dy lyssenw?*' '*Dywedaf*' '"Wilt thou tell us what thy nickname is?" "I will"' BR 4. 26, '*Arglwydes,*' *heb ef,* '*a dywedy di ymi dim o'th negesseu?*' '*Dywedaf, y rof a Duw,*' *heb hi*' "Lady," said he, "wilt thou tell me anything of thine errands?" "I will, between me and God," said she' PKM 12. 18–19, '*A welewch chwi dim namyn hynny?*' '*Gwelem, Arglwyd,*' *heb wy* '"Could ye see aught but that?" "We could, Lord," said they' 39. 22–23, '*A was,*' *heb ef,* '*a doeth dy hwch di heno y mywn?*' '*Doeth,*' *heb ynteu* '"Fellow," said he, "has thy sow come in tonight?" "She has," said he' 88–89, '*A eillwyt itti, wr?*' '*Eillwyt,*' *heb ynteu* '"Hast thou had thy shave, man?" "I have," said he' WM 506. 34–35.

When the verb of the interrogative sentence is in the preterite or pluperfect tense, the form *do* may be used to express the answer, thus: '*A ymwelas ef a thi?*' *heb hi.* '*Do,*' *heb ef*' '"Did he encounter thee?" said she. "Yes," said he' WM 404. 28, '*A unben,*' *heb ef,* '*a leweisti dy ginneaw?*' '*Do,*' *heb ynteu* '"Chieftain," said he, "hast thou eaten thy dinner?" "I have," he said' 427. 12–14.

(2) *ae*: '*Ae amser ynni vynet y'r byrdeu?*' '*Amser, arglwyd,*' *heb yr Owein* '"Is it time for us to go to the tables?" "It is, lord,"

said Owein' WM 234. 8–10, *'Ay uelly y mynny di, Arglwyd?' heb yr Heueyd. 'Uelly, y rof a Duw,' heb y Pwyll* '"Is it thus thou dost wish, Lord?" asked Hefeydd. "Thus, between me and God," said Pwyll' PKM 19. 8–10.

The answer may be expressed by *ie* (*ief, ieu*): *'Ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti?' 'Je, myn vyg cret,' heb y Gwalchmei* '"Art thou Arthur's man?" "Aye, by my faith," said Gwalchmei' WM 168. 24–25, *'Ae tydi,' heb y marchawc wrth y bennaf onadunt, 'bieu y gadeir?' 'Ie, arglwyd,' heb hitheu* '"Is it thou," said the knight to the chief of them, "that ownest the chair?" "Yes, lord," said she' SG 265. 38–39, *A gouyn a wnaeth ef y'r gwr . . . ae offeiryat oed ef. 'Ieu, arglwyd,' heb ynteu* 'And he asked the man whether he was a priest. "Yes, lord," said he' 33. 2.

N. *Ie* (*ief, ieu*) is employed to denote agreement in cases where a question or a condition is implied: *'mi a gychwynnaf, gan dy gannyat, parth a Dyuet auore.' 'Ie,' heb Heueyd, 'Duw a rwydhao ragot'* '"I will set out, with thy permission, for Dyfed to-morrow." "Aye," said Hefeydd, "God speed thee"' PKM 19. 5–6.

(*b*) Negative answers. *Na*(*c*) is placed before the repeated verb or noun, &c.

(1) *a*: *'A uyn ef dyuot y'r tir?' 'Na uynn, Arglwyd'* '"Does he wish to come to land?" "He does not, lord"' PKM 30. 16, *'A wyr,' heb y Pwyll, 'a oes ohonawchi a adnappo y uarchoges?' 'Nac oes, Arglwyd,' heb wynt* '"Men," said Pwyll, "is there any among you who knows the rider?" "There is not, lord," said they' 9. 17–18, *'Dywet,' heb ef, 'a ry fu ef genhyt ti?' 'Na ry fu, myn vyg cret,' heb hi* '"Say," said he, "has he had to do with thee?" "He has not, by my faith," said she' WM 121. 20–21, *a gyfaruu a thydi yr Amherawdyr Arthur?' 'Na chyfaruu,' heb ef* '"Did the Emperor Arthur meet thee?" "He did not," said he' SG 176. 27–28. *Na*(*c*) also occurs before the verb in answer to a question introduced by an interrogative pronoun: *'Py wattwar a wnewch chwi amdanaf i?' 'Na wnawn, arglwydes, vn gwattwar amdanat'* '"What mockery do you make of me?" "We do not make, lady, any mockery of thee"' RM 87. 27–28, *'Pa barth . . . y tybygy di y uynet ef?' 'Na vn'* '"What direction dost thou think that he went?" "I do not know"' WM 431. 22–24, *'A phaham y gouynhy di, Arglwyd?' heb ef. 'Na*

weleis,' heb ef, 'neut seith mlyned, un dyn yma' '"And why dost thou ask, lord?" said he. "(Because) I did not see," said he, "for seven years any person here"' PKM 61. 24–26.

When the verb of the interrogative sentence is in the preterite or pluperfect tense, *nađo* may be used in the answer: *'a vwyteeist di dim hediw?' 'Na do,' heb ynteu* '"Hast thou eaten anything today?" "No," said he' SG 69. 9, *'Arglwyd,' heb hi, 'a vriweist di yn drwc?' 'A unbennes,' heb ynteu, 'nađo'* '"Lord," said she, "hast thou been badly hurt?" "Lady," said he, "No"' 370. 19.

(2) *ae*: *'ae guell y gwna neb uy neges i wrthyt ti no mi uu hun?' 'Na well,' heb ynteu* '"will any one do my errand to thee better than I myself?" "Not so," said he' PKM 69. 17, *'Arglwyd, ae drwc genhyt ti,' heb ynteu, 'gofyn it o py le pan deuy titheu?' 'Na drwc'* '"Lord," said he, "would it displease thee to be asked whence thou too comest?" "It would not," said he' WM p. 213. 10–11, *'Ae byw y uerch honno etto?' heb y Galaath. 'Na vyw, arglwyd,' heb ef* '"Is that maiden still alive?" said Galaath. "No, lord," said he' SG 33. 25–26.

The question may contain a personal pronoun after *ae*, thus: *'ae myui a'th uuwryawd di . . . ?' 'Na thi'* '"Was it I who threw thee?" "No"' (lit. 'not thou') RC xxxiii. 193. 15, *gouyn a oruc iti ay hihi a oed yn peri hynny . . . . 'Na ui, myn uyghyffes y Dyw,' heb hi* 'he asked her whether it was she who was causing that. "Not I, by my confession to God," said she' WM 416. 13–17.

The personal pronoun 3. sing. masc. *ef* can be used in the answer in place of the word following *ae*: *'Arglwydes,' heb ef, 'ay kyscu yd wyt ti?' 'Nac ef, Arglwyd,' heb hi* '"Lady," said he, "art thou asleep?" "Not so, lord," said she' PKM 23. 2–3. The use of *nac ef* (ModW *nage*) spread, and it was employed to refer to persons other than the 3. sing. masc., thus: *'Ae myvi a'th vyrryod di y'r llawr?' Ynteu a dywot, 'Nac ef, Arglwyd'* '"Was it I who threw thee down?" He said, "No, lord"' Hg MSS ii. 234. 6–7.

N. *Na(c)* is used before a verb or noun, &c., to signify agreement or disagreement, even when no question precedes (cf. *ie*, n. above). Before a verb: *'A phei mynhut gyuoeth eiryoet, aduyd y caffut ti hwnnw.' 'Na uynhaf, unben,' heb ef* '"And hadst thou ever desired territory, maybe thou mightest have that." "I desire none, chieftain," said he' PKM 50. 2. *Nađo*:

'Mi a debygaf . . . na cheueist na bwyt na diawd.' 'Na do, y rof a Dyw,' heb ef ynteu '"I suppose that thou hadst neither meat nor drink." "No, between me and God," said he' WM 425. 28. Before a noun, &c.: *'[Sei]nt ynt, seint; kamwed yw eu kodi.'. . . 'Na sant hwnn, yn wir,' heb ef* '"They are saints, saints; it is a sin to offend them." "He is not a saint, indeed," said he' FfBO 36. 25–28, *Amkawd Kei, 'Myn llaw uyghyueillt, bei gwnelhit uyg kyghor i, ny thorrit kyfreitheu llys yrdaw.' 'Na wir, Kei wynn'* 'Quoth Kei, "By the hand of my friend, if my counsel were acted upon, the laws of court would not be broken for his sake." "Not so, fair Kei"' WM 458. 23–25, *'mi a gredwn ac a dywedwn y taw ti oed Bown.' 'Na vi,' heb ynteu* '"I would believe and say that thou wert Bown." "No (lit. 'not I')," said he' YBH 24. 1541–3. *Nac ef: 'Arowch vi yma, mi a af y ymwelet a'r pryf.' 'Nac ef, arglwyd,' heb wynt, 'awn y gyt y ymlad a'r pryf'* '"Wait for me here, I will go to encounter the Worm." "Not so, lord," said they, "let us go together to fight the Worm"' WM 161. 13–15, *'Moysswch y llythyr a'm march a'm cledyf im.' 'Nac ef,' heb yr Ermin* '"Hand me the letter and my horse and my sword." "No," said Ermin' YBH 13. 845–6.

THE VERBAL SENTENCE

§ 198. The verb precedes its subject: *Dywawt y cawr* 'The giant said' WM 488. 23–24. The verb usually has before it a pre-verbal particle (§§ 185–93); in a negative sentence the negative particle precedes the verb (§ 194 *a* 1).

The verb is generally in the 3. sing. before a pl. subject, when the latter is a noun (if it is a personal pronoun, the corresponding personal form of the verb is used: *trigyssant wynteu* 'they dwelt' PKM 27. 12): *Yna y doeth y kennadeu* 'Then the messengers came' PKM 79. 27, *A chyt ac y kigleu y marchogyon hynny* 'And as soon as those knights heard' B ix. 326. 30, *Yno y kyuaruu gwyr Llydaw ac ef* 'There the men of Llydaw met with him' WM 503. 30. Examples are occasionally found in MW where the verb is pl. before a pl. or collective subject: *ual y doethant y llygot* 'how the mice came' PKM 60. 25, *yd ymrannassant y gwyr hynny* 'those men took their quarters' BR 2. 3, *y kychwynnyssont y llu mawr hwnnw* 'that great host set out' 9. 8, *Gwelsant niuer Otgar eu meint* 'The host of Odgar saw their might' WM 498. 21. In such cases the subject was lenited in the early period (§ 21 *a*).

§ 199. The Abnormal Order. The following are the most common types of order found in the simple affirmative sentence in

MW prose: (*a*) subject / object / object (or subject) of verbal noun + *a* / *ry* / *yr* + verb (see § 192); (*b*) adverb or adverbial expression + *y*(*d*) / *yt* / *ry* / *yr* + verb (see § 190). These are now termed abnormal, because in ModW they have been almost entirely superseded by the simple order of verb (usually preceded by the particles *fe, mi*) + subject + object (the position of the adverb or adverbial expression is not fixed, but it is most commonly found after the object).

The abnormal order should be distinguished from the mixed order (§ 146), although the second in its final development has generally the same form as the first. Formal divergence is found only when the sentence is negative: in the abnormal order the negative immediately precedes the verb (*y dyn ny doeth* 'the man did not come'), whereas in the mixed order it comes at the beginning of the sentence before the emphasized word or phrase (*nyt y dyn a ðoeth* 'it was not the man who came'). In the abnormal order no special emphasis is intended for the word or phrase which comes at the beginning: a sentence such as *Gwydyon a gerdwys yn y blaen* (PKM 90. 27) means 'Gwydion travelled in the forefront', and not 'It was Gwydion who travelled'.

The verb usually agrees in number with a preceding subject in the abnormal order: *A'r guyrda a doethant y gyt* 'And the nobles came together' PKM 21. 12, *Y marchogyon a wnaethant ual y gorchymynnwys Hu udunt* 'The knights did as Hu commanded them' B v. 216. 11–12, *Kythreulyeit llawer a'm kylchynassant* 'Many demons have surrounded me' x. 54. 9. But examples may be cited where concord is not observed: *A chenadeu a aeth y ouyn idaw* 'And messengers went to ask him' PKM 32. 18–19, *Gwyr Gwyned a ymchweles* 'The men of Gwynedd returned' 73. 22, *Y gwyr a dywawt wrth Arthur* 'The men said to Arthur' WM 489. 27, *Gwyr a aeth Gatraeth gan wawr* 'The men went to Catraeth at dawn' CA 4. 84.

N. In early poetry we find a much greater variety of word order. The following types are attested:

(*a*) Verb + subject + object: *echynghawd deigyr bard ywch y eneu* 'a tear has afflicted the bard above his mouth' R 1205. 2, *Meccid llvwyr llauer kyghor* 'The coward produces many an excuse (counsel)' CLIH 27. 6.

(*b*) Verb + object + subject: *Dygystud deurud dagreu* 'Tears afflict cheeks' CLlH 36. 25[c], *dyfforthynt lynwyssawr gelorawr hir* 'long biers bore bloodstained men' CA 6. 135.

(*c*) Subject + verb (+ object): *byssed brych briwant barr* 'the fingers of the speckled one smash head(s)' CA 24. 611, *Kymry a Saesson kyferuydyn* 'Welsh and Saxons met together' AP 2. 54, *Ac agheu dydau urth gluydet* 'And death will come at the door' HGCr 4. 31, *Duw digawn* 'God effects' 90. 17, *guir deur kymynint a dur* 'brave men hew with steel' BBC 72. 9.

(*d*) Subject + object + verb: *Meiryon eu tretheu dychynnullyn* 'Stewards will collect their taxes' AP 1. 21.

(*e*) Object + verb: *Gwyrtheu goleu gwelhattor* 'Clear wonders will be seen' HGGr 90. 3.

(*f*) Adverb + verb: *Mwy gordyfnassei elwch | Gwyr* 'It has been more accustomed to the rejoicing of men' CLlH 19. 57[b, c], *Drwy vyn tauawt lledesseint* 'Because of my tongue were they killed' 5. 28[b].

§ 200. A noun or pronoun may stand independently at the head of a sentence; the sentence then contains a pronoun or personal form which refers back to it: *Yr aelwyt honn, neus kud dynat* 'This hearth, nettles cover it' CLlH 18. 50[a], *a'm heneit inheu ymadws yw y diot* 'and my life, it is high time to take it away' WM 507. 3–4, *'y wreic honn,' heb ef, 'ym penn pethewnos a mis, y byd beichogi idi'* '"this woman," said he, "at the end of a month and a fortnight she will conceive"' PKM 35. 20–21.

The noun or pronoun at the head of the sentence is often accompanied by a relative clause (§ 78).

PREPOSITIONS

§ 201. A(c) 'with', manner: *gwedy ry wniaw a sidann melyn* 'sewn with yellow silk' BR 5. 23; instrumental: *a'e dwylav ehun kemryt e vab a'e vwrw* 'with his own hands (he) took his son and threw him' B ix. 145. 23; accompaniment: *er escop a gerdws en e blaen a'r arwyd arderchauc hvnnv* 'the bishop went in front with that fine ensign' ix. 337. 10.

With verbs: *ny orffowysassant a'r creulonder hvnnv* 'they did not rest from that cruelty' BD 134. 7, *peidyaw a* § 183 *d, Y neb a gyttyo a gwreic kaeth* 'He who shall have intercourse with a slave woman' LlB 60. 11; verbs which contain the prefixes

ym-, cy(f)-, cyt-: *Pei ymdrechei a chavr* 'If he were to struggle with a giant' BD 15. 9, *yn ymauael a'r ebawl geir y uwng* 'seizing the colt by the mane' PKM 22. 18, *llyma gyweithyd yn kyuaruot ac wynt* 'behold, a troop meeting them' 45. 23, *ene oed baup en kytsynnyav ac ef* 'so that everybody was agreeing with him' B ix. 146. 10–11.

For its use with the equative, see § 43.

§ 202. Ach law 'near, beside' (*llaw* 'hand'): *kyghellawr ach law hwnnw* 'the chancellor beside him' LlB 5. 23–24, *gauaelgi kydenawc ach y law* 'a shaggy mastiff at his side' WM 472. 21.

awch law: *yr eil llech wayw a oed awch y law* 'the second stone spear which was beside him' WM 478. 15.

§ 203. Am 'around, about (at, on)', time: *am hanner nos* 'around midnight' PKM 60. 3–4; place: *am hanner yr auon* 'towards the middle of the river' ChO 13. 19, *a chorn canu am y uynwgyl* 'with a hunting horn round his neck' PKM 2. 5. *Am . . . a(c) . . .* means 'on the other side of . . . from': *Y le a vyd yn y neuad am y tan a'r brenhin* 'His place in the hall is on the opposite side of the fire from the king' LlB 4. 21, *a mynet am y tan ac ef* 'and went to the other side of the fire from him' RM 187. 12 (= *a mynet y orwed y am y tan ac ef* WM 255. 14–15), *hyt pann deuthant am y uagwyr a'r karcharawr* 'until they came to the opposite side of the wall from the prisoner' WM 492. 31.

'instead of, in exchange for, for': *ef a geif march iach am pob un o'r a lygrwyt* 'he shall have a sound horse for each one of those spoiled' PKM 33. 17, *ni wydyat ef uot un keleuyn yno ny bei lygoden am pob un* 'he knew not of one stalk there that there was not a mouse for it' (lit. 'each one') 60. 10–11, *madeuant am e pechaut hvnnv* 'forgiveness for that sin' B ix. 339. 34–35.

'about, concerning': *nyt teilygdawt uy anryded a'm etteil am hynny* 'it is not the degree of my dignity that prevents me in regard to that' PKM 2. 10–11; with verbs denoting think, say, ask, &c., 'about, of': *medylya am rot y ffuruauen* 'think of the wheel of the firmament' (rather 'of fortune', see B ii. 133) B ii. 9. 16, *Am noduaeu y dywetpwyt kyn no hynn* 'Of protections have we spoken hitherto' LlB 8. 24, *ac amovyn ac ef am ansawd Aedan Sant* 'and (he) inquired of him about the condition of Aeddan Sant' BDe 11. 15.

'because of, on account of': *dyn a orffo y rwymaw vn weith am y ynuytrwyd* 'a person whom it has once been necessary to bind on account of his madness' LlB 104. 23; with a verbal noun: *Ac wrth hynny y gwnaethpwyt Dewi Sant yn bennadur . . . ar seint Ynys Prydein, am bregethu ohonaw yn y Sened uawr honno y'r holl bobyl* 'And therefore Dewi Sant was made chief of the Saints of the Island of Britain, because he had preached in that great Synod to all the people' BDe 18. 11–13, *trist eissoes oed am ry lad Turn y nei* 'nevertheless sad was he because Turn his nephew had been killed' BD 19. 3; when the meaning is negative the construction employed is *am na* + verb (see § 183 *a*): *am na vybuum pan aeth* 'because I knew not when he went' WM 389. 22.

It is found in the following composite prepositions:

(*a*) *Am ben* 'on top of, upon, against' (*penn* 'head'): *kyrchu a oruc am ben y castell* 'he set out against the castle' BD 7. 15, *yny del y dwrd hwnnw am benn Hu Gadarn ehun* 'so that that turmoil may fall upon Hu Gadarn himself' B v. 213. 23, *y byryei arffedeit o'r us am penn y tan* 'she would throw a lapful of husks upon the fire' BR 2. 21, *a chyuarthua cwn y llys am penn y godorun* 'and the barking of the dogs of the court in answer to (lit. 'on top of') the uproar' PKM 75. 11.

(*b*) *Amdan / Ymdan* 'on': *gwisc ymdan y gwryanc hwnn* 'put armour on this youth' PKM 82. 24.

(*c*) *Amgylch* 'about, towards' (*cylch* 'circle'): *amgylch hanner dyd* 'towards midday' B ix. 329. 20, *amgylch gwyl Ieuan* 'towards the feast of Ieuan' ii. 15. 2, *amgylch seith ugeinwyr* 'about 140 men' RB 266. 34.

(*d*) *Amlaw* 'in addition to' (*llaw* 'hand'): *amryuaelyon aniueileit amlaw hynny* 'various animals in addition to those' ChO 7. 23; as adverb 'moreover': *Or deruyd amlaw marw dauat o agheu deisyfyt* 'Moreover if a sheep happens to die by a sudden death' B ii. 15. 4–5.

§ 204. Ar 'on, upon', time: *ar dyd kyvuch a hediw* 'on a day as noble as this' SG 1. 22; place: *ar y daear* 'on the earth' B x. 53; distance: *ar deu ergyt saeth y wrth bont y castell yd oed capel* 'at two arrow shots from the castle bridge there was a chapel' SG 337. 6,

a minneu ar dwy villtir y wrthunt 'and I at a distance of two miles from them' B v. 215. 30; 'in front of, facing' (see B xi. 14 f.): *ar gatraeth* 'before Catraeth' CA 32. 814 (= *rac catraeth* 28. 692), *y tu ar Gernyw* 'the side facing Cornwall' PKM 45. 8, *a chledwch a'y wyneb ar Freinc ef* 'and bury it with its face towards France' 45. 1; 'by, beside': *ar Auon Gynnwael gordiwes yr hyd* 'by Cynfael river he overtook the stag' PKM 84. 21, *y mae oet y rof i ac ef, ar y ryt* 'there is a tryst between him and me, at the ford' 3. 17, *parth a chapel a oed ar y ffford* 'towards a chapel that was by the way' SG 147. 18.

It is extensively employed in various expressions which denote manner or condition. The following may be noted: *ar vrys* 'in haste' B x. 25. 24, similarly *ar ffrwst* YCM 55. 4, *ar ffysc* RB 299. 17, *ar vyrder* 'shortly, quickly' B v. 207. 33, *ar hynt* 'straightway, without delay' ChSDR 70. 805, *ar gam* 'wrongly, unjustly' SG 69. 24, *ar var* 'angrily' LlB 11. 3, *ar eir*: *kadarnhaet yr offeirat ar y eir teir gweith* 'let the priest confirm it by his word three times' LlB 35–36, *ar dafawt, ar weithret*: *mynych y dywedut ar dy dafawt y peth nys gwnelut ar dy weithret* 'often wouldst thou speak with thy tongue what thou wouldst not fulfil by thy deed' WM 233. 34–36, *ar llet* 'spread out, extended' SG 43. 13 (see TC 387), *ar un dyrnawt* 'with one blow' B x. 59. 4, *ar gost*: *Dwc ditheu hwyntwy yma y gymryt digawn ar uyghosti* 'Bring thou them hither to have their fill at my charge' WM 428. 9–11, *ar helw* 'in one's name, possession': *y wisc waethaf ar dy helw* 'the worst dress to thy name' WM 417. 22–23, *tra vo y vuch ar y helw* 'whilst the cow shall be in his possession' LlB 89. 26, *ar neilltu, ar untu*, see § 248.

Ar lun, ar eilun, ar ffuryf, ar delw, ar osged, ar vod, ar ansawd, ar weith, ar diwygyat, ar gyffelybrwyd, ar arfer, ar vreint, with the meaning 'in the form, image, manner of, as, like': *Dyw Gwener y goruc ef Adaf ar y lun ehun* 'On Friday he made Adam in his own image' LlA 130. 7, *yr hwn a ffuruawd dyn ar y eilun* 'who formed man in his own image' SG 109. 30, *hwchwitheu dynyon a wnaethpwyt ar ffuryf Duw ehun* 'ye men, who were made in God's own image' Hg MSS ii. 235. 10, *ac a'e llunyawd ar y delw ehun* 'and formed him in his own image' LlA 136. 21, *Tro, ar osged march*

'Troy (which is) in the shape of a horse' DB 43, *goleuni ar uod y groc* Lat. '*lux in modum crucis*' LlA 61. 29, *bychan yw ar uod dryw* Lat. '*paruula ad modum reguli*' ChO 3. 9 (with the meaning 'to the extent of, by', usually with nouns denoting measure or extent: *mwy oed Chyarlymaen no Hu aruod troetued* 'Charlemagne was taller than Hu by a foot' B v. 219. 18, *bot yn hwy dy hoedyl aruod pob offeren vyth a warandewych* 'that thy life is longer with every mass you may ever hear' LlA 151. 6 (= *o aruod* Llan 27. 56); *o arvod*: *kanys mwy a hwy yw ef o aruod troetued no gwr arall o'r byt* 'for he is bigger and taller by a foot than any other man of the world' SG 318. 21; see further B i. 14, ChO 33), *Pryf . . . ar ansawd llygoden* 'A creature in the shape of a mouse' PKM 62. 22 (= *ual llygoden* 62. 5), *ewin pryf yn y law ar weith gorflwch a'e loneit o win* 'a beast's claw in his hand in the shape of a goblet with its fill of wine' WM 164. 35, *ef a wyl ar diwycyat dyn ryw aniueil gobraff y veint* 'he sees in the shape of a man some animal of quite considerable size' YBH 31. 1953–5, *A'r eistedua honno a wnaeth-pwyt ar gyffelybrwyd yr eistedua yr eistedawd Iessu Grist yndi* 'And that seat was made in the likeness of the seat in which Jesus Christ sat' SG 49. 33, *Yr eil unbennes a oed yn marchogaeth ar aruer ysgwier* 'The second lady was riding in the manner of an esquire' 191. 28, *A chyweiraw y pebylleu a'r palleu a wnaethant udunt ar ureint kyweirdeb yneuad* 'And they arranged the pavilions and tents for them in the manner of the setting in a hall' PKM 34. 5.

Ar veđwl, ar vedyr, ar vessur, ar ođeu (RC xliv. 281–3), meaning 'with intent', also occasionally 'as if, under pretence of', usually followed by a verbal noun: *dyuot ar uedwl medi honno* 'he came with intent to reap it' PKM 59. 18, *Kychwyn a oruc Lunet ar uedwl mynet y lys Arthur* 'Luned set out under pretence of going to Arthur's court' WM 243. 19, *yna Galaath a wisgawd y arueu ar uedyr myned ymeith* 'then Galaath donned his arms with the intention of departing' SG 26. 13, *yna tynnu Morglei y gledyf a oruc ar vessur llad y benn* 'then he drew Morglei his sword with the intention of cutting off his head' YBH 52. 3385, *A Membyr eissoes a wnaeth dadleu a'e uravt ar uessur tangneuedu ac ef* 'Membyr, however, arranged a meeting with his brother, under pretence of making peace with him' BD 24. 1, *Ac yna kychuyn a oruc guyr Ruuein*

y emdeith megys ar odeu na delynt trach cheuyn y'r enys hon 'And then the men of Rome took their leave (as) with the intention of not returning to this island' 83. 10 (= *megys ar vedyr* RB 123. 3).

With verbs: *edrych ohonaw ef ar liw yr erchwys* 'he looked at the colour of the pack' PKM 1. 19, *Gwr yssyd . . . yn ryuelu arnaf yn wastat* 'There is a man warring against me continuously' 3. 1, *ymyrru ar digriwwch serchawl a charyat arnei* 'to indulge in loving pleasure and affection towards her' 7. 6, *Yd wyt yn y lle y perthyn arnat llonydu eircheit a cherdoryon* 'Thou art in a position where it is proper for thee to content suitors and minstrels' 17. 21; *dodi ar* 'to name' (lit. 'to place on', with the name as object), also *rodi ar*, *gyrru ar*: *ac y dodet Brutus arnav* 'and he was named Brutus' BD 3. 30, *Ac o hynny y gyrrwyt arnaf ynneu Idawc Cord Brydein* 'And because of that I was named Idawc Cord Brydein' BR 5. 10, *am hynny y roespwyt ar y mab Peredur* 'for that reason the son was named Peredur' SG 187. 23, with *yn enw*: *Dauyd a rodet yn enw arnaw* 'he was named Dafydd' BDe 3. 5. See further B xv. 1–12, xvi. 1–17.

It is commonly used with the verb 'to be' to express a mental or physical condition; the grammatical subject is an abstract noun denoting experience or condition, thus: *nyt oes arnaf un kewilyd* 'I have no shame' SG 277. 3, *or bei eisseu dim arnaw* 'if he were in need of anything' WM 465. 16, *hiraeth yssyd arnaf am Owein* 'there is a longing on me for Owein' 245. 15, *Nyt oes arnaf i ouyn cael kymriw* 'I do not fear to receive a wound' PKM 9. 8, *Py drwc yssyd arnat ti* 'What ails thee?' WM 454. 24–25. See further B xv. 175–83.

There are a few instances of *ar* + verbal noun serving as a present participle: *mynyd mawr gyr llaw y coet, a hwnnw ar gerdet* 'a big mountain close to the forest, and that moving' PKM 39. 24, *ynteu yna a dywawt mae marchawc urdawl ar gerdet oed* 'he then said that he was a knight on his travels (travelling)' SG 108. 21. Cf. also *dos ar dy redec allan* 'go thou out running' WM 458. 11, *yny byd y dart ar y ehedec drwydaw* 'so that the dart goes in flight through him' YCM 103. 1. This usage seems to be confined to verbs expressing motion.

§ 205. In the early period *ar* meaning 'to' is used with verbs of motion. This *ar* is from an older *ad* (cf. OW *ad* Comp); it is usually found before names of persons or people: *y kyrchyssant ar Uath uab Mathonwy* 'they made their way to Math fab Mathonwy' PKM 71. 17, *y doeth ar Arthur* 'he came to Arthur' WM 463. 36, *dos titheu ar Arthur* 'go thou to Arthur' 454. 31–32, *ymchoelut a oruc Kei ar y gedymdeithon drachefyn* 'Kei returned back to his comrades' 247. 27–29. When the preposition governs a personal pronoun, the personal forms *attaf*, *attat*, &c. (§ 207), are always used; later *ar* 'to' was superseded by *at*.

The basic meaning of motion towards may also be seen in certain cases where *ar* is followed by an abstract noun, as follows: *yny gyffroei y rei byv ar irlloned a llit a chyndared* 'so that those that were alive were roused to anger, wrath, and fury' BD 121. 25, *na deuei vyth ar anryded* 'that he would never attain (lit. 'come to') honour' SG 40. 39, *y neb a delei o anryded ar gewilyd* 'he who came from honour to shame' 183. 20, *ac odyno ymchwelut ar ennwired* 'and afterwards (they) return to evil' LlA 28. 13, *dwc vi Arglwyd ar y gret drachevyn* 'bring me back, Lord, to the Faith' SG 63. 2; *dwyn ar gof* (lit. 'bring to mind') is common for 'to remember, remind', see B xvi. 8.

Closely related to the notion of 'moving towards' or 'making for' is the idea of purpose or intention which the preposition conveys in certain cases. Note the following examples: *ac y'th cynghorassant ti ar les dy eneit* 'and they counselled thee for the benefit of thy soul' SG 85. 12, *Ny dichawn neb o gyfreith dilyssu tir yn erbyn y etiuedyon y arall onyt ar eu kyt les* 'No one by law can convey land to another in opposition to his heirs except for their common benefit' LlB 77. 17–18 (*ar lles* / *les* is common in MW with the meaning 'for the benefit of', also *er lles*: *nyt mwy yr lles idaw ef* 'not more for advantage to him' WM 192. 21–22, *Neut atwen nat yr vy lles* 'I recognize that it is not to my advantage' CLlH 13. 17^{b}; see further B iii. 259, xi. 16, CA 220, 293, TC 387), *ar anryded y duw* Lat. *'ad honorem dei'* LlA 3. 4, *yr atkyweiryawd kadell vab gruffud kastell kaeruyrdin ar gedernyt a thegwch y deyrnas ef* 'Cadell ap Gruffudd repaired the castle of Carmarthen, for the strength and splendour of his kingdom' Pen 20. 162^{b}.

With the verbal noun: *y eiryawl y ninneu geyr bronn y gwir Greawdyr, ar gaffel trugared rac llaw* 'to intercede for us before the true Creator that (we) may obtain mercy in time to come' BDe 23. 18–19, *a thi a wediwn ar yt atteb ynni a uyd byw hwnn* 'and thee do we pray that thou answer unto us whether he will live' FfBO 45. 26–27.

N. The various meanings of *ar* in MW suggest that it represents three different prepositions. (*a*) OW *guar, guor*, Ir. *for* < **μor* < **uper*, see GOI 513. (*b*) OW *ar* 'before, for': *ar cimeir* 'opposite' Comp, Ir. *ar*, Gaul. *are*, Gr. *πάρ(α)*, Engl. *for*, see GOI 498, *Celtica* ii. 305–24. (*c*) OW *ad* 'to, at': *ad ir loc guac* 'to the empty space' Comp, Lat. *ad*, Engl. *at*. The meanings of (*a*) became general, and predominate in ModW; the meanings of (*b*) are expressed mostly by *rac* (§ 235), those of (*c*) by *at* (§ 207).

§ 206. *Ar* is found in the following composite prepositions:

(*a*) *Ar ben* 'on top of, on' (*penn* 'head'): *pei safhei ar benn y mynyd mwyaf yn y byd* 'if he stood on top of the highest mountain in the world' WM 466. 27, *ar benn y neill glin y kyuodes* 'he rose up on one knee' PKM 88. 5, also *ar dal y lin*: *Yr amherawdyr yna a ostyngawd ar tal y lin* 'The emperor then went down on his knee' LlA 137. 23.

(*b*) *Ar draws* 'across, over' (*traws* 'cross, direction', see PKM 239–40): *yn kerdet ar traws maes Argygroec* 'going across the plain of Argyngroeg' BR 3. 27, *hyny yttoed y glot gwedy ehedec ar traws y teyrnas* 'until his fame had spread over the kingdom' WM p. 205. 16–17 (= *dros vyneb y dyrnas* 409. 22–23).

(*c*) *Ar drws* 'at the entrance to, in front of' (*drws* 'door, entrance'): *a philer maen yssyd ar drws yr ogof* 'and there is a stone pillar in the entrance to the cave' WM 156. 27–28, *tyget y kyffelyb ar drws y gagell* 'let him swear in like manner at the door of the chancel' LlB 35. 29, *nachaf vorwyn ieuanc yn sefyll ar drws y capel* 'lo, a young maiden standing at the door of the chapel' SG 224. 25–26. Cf. *yn drws* § 245 *d*.

(*d*) *Ar gefyn* 'on the back of, on' (*kefyn* 'back'): *wynt a welynt yn dyfot ymywn morwyn bengrych du ar gefyn mul melyn* 'they could see coming in a black curly-headed maiden on a yellow mule' WM 165. 35–36.

(*e*) *Ar hyt* 'along, throughout' (*hyt* 'length'): *wynt a welynt gwreic . . . yn dyuot ar hyt y prifford* 'they could see a lady coming along the highway' PKM 9. 14, *A phan aeth er ebestyl y bregethu ar hyt e byt* 'And when the Apostles went to preach over all the world' B x. 29. 37.

(*f*) *Ar ol* 'after' (*ol* 'track'): *ysgynnv y'r nef ar y ol ef* 'to ascend unto heaven after Him' LlA 21. 26, *E kennadeu a aethant ar ol Matholwch* 'The messengers went after Matholwch' PKM 33. 26, *ot anuonaf vi ar dy ol, dyret titheu* 'if I send after thee, do thou come' YBH 54. 3502; similarly *yn ol*, see § 245 *q*.

(*g*) *Ar uchaf* 'upon, over' (*uchaf* 'top, summit', superlative of *uch-el* 'high' § 42): *ar uchaf y gwnsallt cledyf eurdwrn gloew trichanawl* 'over his cloak a gold-hilted gleaming triple-grooved sword' BR 17. 30–31, *Yn y dinas hwnnw y mae corff Athanasij ar uchaf y porth yn gorffywys* Lat. '*In hac civitate requiescit corpus Athanasii supra portam civitatis*' FfBO 31. 24.

(*h*) *Ar warthaf* 'on top of, upon' (*gwarthaf* 'top, summit', superlative form, § 41 n. 5): *ac a'e rodaf y seuyll ar y benn ar warthaf y bwrd* 'and I shall put him to stand on his head upon the table' B v. 215. 12–13, *a gobennyd lletwac . . . ar warthaf y llenlliein* 'and a half-empty pillow on top of the sheet' BR 3. 17–18, *y daraw ar warthaf y ben* 'to strike him on his head' YBH 5. 282–3.

§ 207. At 'to'; with verbs of motion, usually motion to a person or people: *E chwedyl a doeth at Uatholwch* 'The tidings came to Matholwch' PKM 32. 7, *Y mab a aeth attaw yn diryon* 'The boy went to him gently' 43. 17, *Ac yno dwyn y gyghorwyr attaw* 'And there his counsellors were brought to him' BR 19. 8–9, *minheu a anuonaf at Arthur* 'I will send to Arthur' WM 148. 29–30. With *neges* 'message', *negessawl* 'messenger': *attat titheu y mae y neges ef* 'it is to thee that his message is' BR 12. 20 (also *wrth*, see § 243), *Eissoes negessawl wyf i y gan Arthur attat* 'Yet I am a messenger to thee from Arthur' WM 143. 11, *agos* 'near': *morwyn a oed agos ataw* 'a maiden that was near to him' B ix. 46.

N. The simple form *at* is comparatively late, and is a re-formation based on the personal forms *attaf*, &c. (§ 63 *a*). Earlier the form of the simple preposition was *ad* > *ar* § 205.

§ 208. Can(t), Gan 'with, by', time: *Coc lauar a gan gan dyd* 'The vocal cuckoo sings by day' CLlH 23. 4[a]; place: *gan ystlys y llongeu* 'by the side of the ships' PKM 40. 8, *gan lann y weilgi* 'along the sea-shore' 79. 12; accompaniment: *A chant neb ny cherdynt* 'And with no one would they wander' CLlH 42. 74[b], *a theyr myl o wyr aruavc gantav* 'and three thousand armed men with him' BD 6. 19; manner or attendant circumstances: *pressvylyav a charthtrevu yn y dyffeyth . . . gan rydyt* 'to dwell and reside in the wilderness in freedom' BD 5. 28–30; condition: *nawd a gehy gan vynet trachgefyn fford y ry uuost* 'quarter thou shalt have, on condition that thou go back the way thou hast been' WM 138. 25–26, *Mi a rodaf nawd it gan hyn* 'I will grant thee quarter on this condition' 399. 13–14; cause: *o digrifhaa y vedwl gan yn chwaryeu ni* 'if his mind is amused by our feats' B v. 218. 22; it denotes the agent: *ni a gawn yn goganu gan yr unben* 'we shall be ill-spoken of by the chieftain' PKM 84. 26.

It is used with a personal name in apposition, thus: *y bradvr twyllvr ysgymun gan Uedravt* 'the accursed traitor (and) deceiver Medrawd' BD 182. 28; see WS 177, TC 125–7.

With verbs: *Or keis dyn ran o tir gan y gereint* 'If a man seeks a share of land from his kindred' LlB 78. 8, *A echwynno gan arall* 'He who borrows from another' B ii. 9. 26, *ti a geffy gan duw gobrwy tragywyd* 'thou shalt get from God an eternal reward' x. 24. 36, *ny phrynit dim gan gryd yn yr holl dref* 'nothing was bought of a shoemaker in the whole town' PKM 54. 20, *pam y diodeuir hynn gan y tayogeu?* 'why is this tolerated from the villeins?' 58. 20.

It is commonly employed in nominal constructions, (*a*) to denote possession: *naw cant oed genhyf inheu* 'nine hundred had I' BT 26. 15–16, *eithyr na byd llyueryd ganthaw* 'save that he will not have the power of speech' PKM 34. 21; (*b*) with certain nouns and adjectives to express some activity or attitude of mind: *cof gan bawp a gar* 'every one remembers what he loves' CLlH 24. 9[c], *da oed gennyf pei ys guelwn* 'I would be glad were I to see it' PKM 9. 9–10, *ef a eill uot yn ediuar gennyf gwneuthur a wneuthum itt* 'I may be sorry for doing that which I have done to thee' 6. 1, *guedy bot yn diheu gantaw ef na chaei chwedleu y wrth Pryderi* 'after he was sure he would get no news of Pryderi' 56. 21–22.

With a verbal noun it forms a participle, which expresses an action simultaneous with that of the main verb and usually forming part of it (contrast *tan* § 237): *amovyn a orugant e reeni ac ef gan e vygythyav pa du ry vuassei* 'his parents, threatening him, inquired of him where he had been' B ix. 145. 19, *llevein a oruc can gwynvan ac erchi canorthwy* 'she cried, moaning and asking for help' ix. 335. 10–11.

§ 209. Ker, Ger, Gyr, Geir, Gar 'near, by', place: *ker tir Tyssilyau* 'by the land of Tysilio' MA 237^{b}21; manner: *yna yd oed dynyon gwedy eu crogi a chadwyneu tan gyr y traet, ereill gyr y dwylaw, ereill gyr y breicheu, ereill gyr eu hysgwydeu* 'there were men hung with chains of fire by their feet, others by their hands, others by their arms, others by their shoulders' Hg MSS ii. 202. 6–8, *yn ymauael a'r ebawl geir y uwng* 'seizing the colt by its mane' PKM 22. 18.

It most commonly occurs in the following combinations:

(*a*) *Ger bronn* 'by, before' (*bronn* 'breast'): *ger bronn e hallavr* 'before her altar' B x. 21, *geyr bronn y gwir Greawdyr* 'before the true Creator' BDe 23. 18, *byrwn yr eskyrn gyr y bron* 'let us throw the bones before her' PKM 20. 19.

(*b*) *Ger llaw* 'by, beside' (*llaw* 'hand'): *a'y dodi gyr llaw y gerwyn* 'and setting it beside the tub' PKM 86. 28, *mynyd mawr gyr llaw y coet* 'a big mountain beside the forest' 39. 24, *yma . . . y mynnaf i trigyaw ger dy law di* 'here do I desire to dwell beside thee' LlA 125. 14.

N. Caerwyn Williams (B xv. 33–36) has explained the simple preposition *ger* as a back-formation based on the combinations *ger bron, ger llaw*. In these the *g-* is secondary, and the preposition was originally *er* (§ 246). On the development of initial *g-* in certain forms, see WG 188. *Cer* is analogical, formed under the influence of pairs such as *can, gan* (§ 208).

§ 210. Kyt a(c), Gyt a(c), Y gyt a(c) (ModW *ynghyda*(*g*)) '(together) with': *a chyt ac ef y bydant y maccwyeit* 'and with him are the squires' LlB 5. 8, *vy eneit inheu a geiff gorffuys gyt a'r iawn werydon* 'my soul shall have rest with the true virgins' B ix. 328. 21, *Duw a vyd y gyt a thi* 'God will be with thee' BDe 2. 16–17, *A'r ebestyl a doethant y gyt a'r corff hyt e vynwent* 'And the

Apostles came with the body as far as the tomb' B x. 32. 1, *ac yd ymyrrwys gwyrda y wlat y gyt ac ef* 'and the noblemen of the land joined company with him' PKM 27. 6–7.

§ 211. Kyfarwyneb a(c), Gyfarwyneb a(c) 'opposite' (*cyf* + *arwyneb* 'face', see GPC 218): *hyny welynt Mon gyuarwyneb ac wynt* 'till they could see Anglesey opposite them' WM 185. 11–12.

§ 212. Kyferbyn a(c), Gyferbyn a(c) 'opposite' (*cyf* + *erbyn* § 216): *a chadeir arall gyuerbyn a hi yn waac* 'and another chair opposite her empty' RM 293. 27, *gyferbyn a phenn Nonn* 'opposite Non's head' BDe 4. 10.

§ 213. Kyn, see § 46 n. 3.

§ 214. Ech '*ex*, out of': *ech e dir a'e dreuyd* 'out of his land and homes' CA 5. 115, *ech y gadwynawr* 'out of its chains' BT 10. 23. *ech adaf* 'after, afterwards' CLlH 2. 6[b] (*adaf* 'hand'; for the meaning, cf. *o law* § 232 *h*; see CLlH 60–61, also CA 298).

N. The use of this preposition is rare. As prefix it is found in *ech-tywynnu* 'to glitter', *ech-dihenedic* 'exhausted', *eh-ofyn* 'bold, fearless' (cf. Ir. *ess-amin*), also *es-gar* 'foe' (cf. Ir. *escarae*).

§ 215. Eithyr 'outside, beyond': *a'r neylltroet en e gueli a'r llall eythir e gueli* 'with the one foot in the bed and the other outside the bed' ZCP xx. 69. 32, *eithyr mod* 'beyond measure' YCM 2. 17; 'except': *eithyr y pedwardyn y buassynt y gyt* 'except those four persons who had been together' PKM 61. 20, *ti a geffy kyuarws a notto dy benn a'th tauawd . . . eithyr uy llong a'm llen . . .* 'thou shalt obtain the boon thy head and thy tongue shall name, with the exception of my ship and my mantle' WM 459. 26–32, *Mi a uydaf porthawr y Arthur pob dyw kalan Ionawr, a'm raclouyeit hagen y ulwydyn eithyr hynny* 'I am porter to Arthur each first day of January, but my deputies for (the remainder of) the year save then' 456. 4–7; in a negative sentence: *neb ryw dim ny welynt eithyr guydlwdyn* 'no manner of thing could they see except a wild beast' PKM 52. 12–13. As conjunction, see § 256.

Dieithyr 'outside': *mynet dieither e dinas a orugant* 'they went outside the city' B x. 31. 19; 'except': *a'r meibyon oll a vuant*

ueirw kyn noc eu tat, dyeithyr y mab ieuaf 'and all the sons died before their father, except the youngest son' RB 401. 32–33.

Odieithyr 'outside': *yskynuaen a oed odieithyr y porth* 'there was a horse-block outside the gate' PKM 21. 23, *Dos di . . . odieithyr yr eglwys* 'Go thou outside the church' BDe 3. 17, *odieithyr mod* 'beyond measure' YCM 113. 28. As an adverb: *y rwng y rei odyyvwn a'r rei odieithyr* 'between those within and those without' SG 116. 23.

§ 216. Erbyn 'by', time: *erbyn pen y nawuet dyd* 'by the end of the ninth day' LlB 110. 6, *erbyn hanner dyd drannoeth* 'by midday on the morrow' PKM 6. 13, *erbyn auory* 'by tomorrow' YCM 7. 27; manner: *Lawnslot a gymerth y march erbyn y ffrwyn* 'Lancelot took the horse by its bridle' SG 81. 29, *A'r abat yna erbyn y law a'e kymmerth* 'And the abbot then took him by the hand' 109. 10; 'for, against', with words denoting preparation, &c.: *mi baraf bot gwled darparedic yn barawt erbyn dy dyuot* 'I will have a feast prepared in readiness for thy coming' PKM 13. 7–8, *Gwled darparedic oed udunt erbyn eu dyuot yn Arberth* 'A feast was prepared for them against their coming at Arberth' 50. 12–13, *Ymbaratoa erbyn dy uarchnat* 'Prepare for thy market' B ii. 18. 4, *y ymgyweiraw o'r ebestyl . . . erbyn y dyuot ef* 'that the Apostles might equip themselves for His coming' LlA 22. 1–2.

Yn erbyn, see § 245 *e*.

N. *Erbyn* is cognate with Ir. *ar chiunn* (GOI 498), and derives from Brit. **are-penni*, an early combination of *ar* (§ 205 n. 6) and *penn* 'head' (= Ir. *cenn*); see also *Celtica* ii. 309–10.

§ 217. (G)wedy 'after': *gwedy offerenneu* 'after masses' BDe 11. 11, *guede er emadraud hvnnv* 'after those words' B ix. 338. 31, *wedy hynny* 'after that, afterwards' § 92 *d*; before a personal pronoun: *gwydi ny* 'after us' BBC 44. 9; before a personal name: *Dialvr yv vy env i, wedy Belzebub* 'Avenger is my name, after Beelzebub' B ix. 331. 25.

It is used with a verbal noun to form (*a*) a temporal clause, (*b*) a past participle.

(*a*) *Guedy daruot y'r seithwyr . . . cladu penn Bendigeiduran yn*

y Gwynuryn yn Llundein 'After the seven men had buried the head of Bendigeidfran in the White Mount in London' PKM 49. 1–3, *gwedy eisted o bawp . . . kyuodi a oruc y diagon* 'after all had sat down, the deacon rose' BDe 11. 23.

(*b*) *e uelly e dianghassant e gelynyon wedy caffael eu golwc* 'thus the enemies escaped having received their sight' B ix. 337. 20–21.

For its use to express the perfect and pluperfect in the periphrastic construction with the verb 'to be', see §§ 121 *b*, 122 *a*.

§ 218. Heb 'without': *na ellir rengi bod duw heb ffyd* 'that it is not possible to please God without faith' B vii. 377. 23, *hen wrach . . . heb dant yn y fenn* 'an old crone without a tooth in her mouth' WM 453. 27 (for its use to negative the verbal noun, see § 183 *b*); 'past', with verbs of motion: *nyt kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch, noc yd a hitheu hebdaw ef* 'no sooner had he mounted his horse than she went past him' PKM 12. 1, *ef a doeth heb porth y llys* 'he came past the gate of the court' 84. 25.

Heb law 'past' (*llaw* 'hand'): *y prifford a gerdei heb law yr orssed* 'the highway that led past the mound' PKM 9. 14.

§ 219. (H)erwyd 'according to': *ual y gwedei y bawb herwyd eu henryded* 'as befitted all according to their rank' B v. 207. 35, *herwyd y dyall* (ms. *dyyll*) *a'r synhwyr a rodes duw* 'according to the interpretation and meaning that God gave' LlA 160. 2; 'as regards': *vn gyfreith vyd a gwr ryd herwyd y dial* 'he will be under the same law as a freeman as regards punishment' LlB 59. 30; 'by', manner: *mi a gymeraf Hu herwyd y deu droet* 'I will take Hu by his two feet' B v. 215. 12, *or dichawn hi y attal herwyd y loscwrn* 'if she is able to hold it by its tail' LlB 61. 30–31, *y deuy ti ac ef herwyd y afwyneu* 'that thou wilt bring him by the reins' WM 142. 15, *a Dewi herwyd y law deheu yn y gyuodi* 'and Dewi by the right hand raising him' BDe 16. 17, *a chymryt y mab erwyd y traet* 'and took the boy by the feet' PKM 43. 24.

Gerfyd 'by': *ac a deuth ac ef gervyd y avwyneu y Rolant* 'and brought it by the reins to Rolant' YCM 72. 5, *y cwn . . . heb ohir yn y daly, rei ohonunt geruyd y benn, ereill yn y vynwgyl* 'the hounds without delay seizing it, some by the head, others at the throut' ChO 10. 6–8.

Yn herwyd, see § 245 *h*.

N. *Gerfyđ* is a variant of *erwyđ*, with a secondary *g*-, see § 209 n., WG 188, 415; for *f* / *w* see § 10. *Erwyđ* is probably from **are-ɥidh*, cf. *er-* in *erbyn* § 216 n. *h-* in *herwyđ* is secondary, also Corn. *herwydh*, Bret. *heruez*, see L & P 122.

§ 220. Hyt (as noun 'length') time, 'until': *katwer yn gyfan ef hyt y nos* 'let it be kept entire until the night' LlB 51. 13, *hyt Dyd Brawt* 'until the Day of Judgement' BDe 6. 5, *o . . . hyt* § 231, *yr . . . hyt* § 246, 'during, at, by': *Os y gyt a'r nos neu hyt nos y lledir* 'If it is killed towards the night or during the night' LlB 51. 15, *gweitheu hyt dyd. gweitheu hyt nos* 'sometimes by day, sometimes by night' YBH 35. 2196; place, 'as far as, to': *O lost ir inis hit bronn ir alt* 'From Llost yr Ynys as far as the breast of the Allt' LL 73. 3, with verbs of motion: *yny doeth hyt y guely* 'until she came as far as the bed' YBH 12. 774, *Ewch . . . hyt yr auon yssyd geyr llaw y sant* 'Go ye as far as the river that is beside the saint' BDe 8. 18, *Naud yr offeirat teulu yw dwyn y dyn hyt yr eglwys nessaf idaw* 'The protection of the priest of the bodyguard is to conduct a person as far as the nearest church' LlB 6. 18.

It is found in the following compound prepositions:

(*a*) *Hyt ar* 'as far as, up to' (*ar* § 205), with nouns denoting measure or extent, in respect of time, place, number, &c.: *dyro lawer o'r deueit yn echwyn hyt ar yspeit* 'give many of the sheep on loan for a period' B ii. 16. 5, *guedy dyuot Baldulf hyt ar deg milltir y vrth y gaer* 'after Baldulf had come to within ten miles of the fort' (lit. 'as far as ten miles') BD 145. 20, *hyt ar dvyuil hayach* 'to the number of almost two thousand' 18. 7.

With verbs of motion: *Ac y doeth hyt ar auon Temys* 'And he came as far as the river Thames' BD 20. 18.

(*b*) *Hyt at* 'as far as, to' (*at* § 207): *ac y doeth hyt att Chyarlys* 'and he came to Charles' B v. 219. 4.

(*c*) *Hyt is* (*is* § 226): *ac a neidyawd y neill hanner idi . . . hyt is y thraet* 'and one half of it sprang to beneath her feet' BDe 4. 11–12.

(*d*) *Hyt rac bronn* (*rac bronn* § 235): *yna dyuot o Idawc . . . hyt rac bronn Arthur* 'then Iddawg came before Arthur' BR 6. 20–21.

(*e*) *Hyt yn* 'until' (*yn* § 244): *hyt en diwed byt* 'until the end of the world' B x. 32. 25; 'as far as, to', with verbs of motion: *ef a aeth at Caswallawn hyt yn Rytychen* 'he went to Caswallawn, to Oxford' PKM 51. 11–12, *gwedy eu dyuot hyt ym perued y ryt ar Hafren* 'after they had come to the middle of the ford on the Severn' BR 9. 10.

(*f*) *Hyt yn oet* 'excluding, all except': *eu hadaw a oruc yno . . . hyt yn oet trugein marchawc* 'he left them there, all except sixty horsemen' YCM 11. 9; 'including, even' (the only meaning in ModW): *kannys pob peth a lauuryant yn da hyt ynn oet ev pechawt* Lat. '*quia omnia cooperantur illis in bonum, etiam ipsa peccata*' LlA 34. 24; see WG 421.

(*g*) *Hyt ym pen* 'up to (the end of), until (after)' (*ym pen* § 245 *o*): *hyt ympen y nawuettyd o'r vn mis hwnnw* 'until the ninth day of that same month' LlB 20. 9–10, *ny enir hyt ympenn deng mlyned ar hugeint* '(who) will not be born until after thirty years' BDe 2. 7–8, *A phrovi hynny a orvc hyt ympenn teirgweith* 'And he tried that up to three times' B ix. 48. 18.

N. There are a few examples of the preposition *bet, uet* 'as far as, up to'. OW *behet, bihit, biheit, bichet, bet,* see GPC 266. MW *uet: vet* (ms. *ver*) *yn Ryt Wilure ar Efyrnwy* 'as far as the Ford of Wilfre on Efyrnwy' BR 1. 22, *educher* (< *fed ucher*) 'until evening' WM 499. 27.

§ 221. Y (ModW *i*) 'to'.

(*a*) It is used with a number of verbs to complete their meaning: *kanys wynt a uuydhaant idaw* 'for they will obey him' LlA 5. 29, *gvassanaethu e duw* 'to serve God' B ix. 146. 20, *Darystwng y'th gedymdeith* 'Submit to thy companion' ii. 31. 31, *y adoli y Dewi* 'to worship Dewi' BDe 18. 14–16, *na chret vyth idaw o hynny allan* 'do not believe him ever thenceforth' B ii. 31. 2, *ydaw ef yn wastat y guediey* 'unto Him always did she pray' ix. 325, *bot eu syberwyt yn argywedu udunt* 'that their pride was doing them harm' BD 142. 2, *mi a arbetaf ytt wrth dy ewyllys* 'I will spare thee according to thy will' B v. 217. 36, *ony phallwys kyfreith idaw o vywn y vlwydyn* 'unless the law has failed him within the year' LlB 39. 22.

Verbs of motion, usually with a noun denoting place: *hi a aeth e'r demyl* 'she went to the temple' B ix. 340. 29, *Y'r llys y doethant* 'They came to the court' PKM 11. 13. With nouns or pronouns denoting person, *ar* or *at* is usually used (§§ 205, 207), but *y* is sometimes found: *yd anvones duw llew idav* 'God sent a lion to him' B ix. 341. 18, *a pheri y'r kygyd . . . dyuot idi* 'and cause the butcher to come to her' PKM 37. 27–28, *dyuot deu Wydel uonllwm idaw* 'two bare-breeched Irishmen came to him' 44. 18, *Mivi a'm bydin a ruthraf udunt hwy* 'I and my army shall charge at them' HGrC 126. 30; in cases such as the following, with figurative meaning: *kany doeth drwc y dyn eirioet o dewi* 'for no ill ever came to man from keeping silent' B ii. 29. 25, *A phan del oet vdunt a phwyll, ef a daw cof udunt y kyghorev* 'And when age comes to them and reason, they will remember the counsels' (lit. 'memory will come to them of the counsels') ii. 29. 16–17, *Y Ewrart Dygyrwnt y daw gware weithon* 'It is E. D.'s turn to perform now' (lit. 'to E. D. does performing come now') v. 215. 3.

(*b*) It is very commonly employed to denote the indirect object: *y erchi kygreir y Arthur* 'to seek a truce of Arthur' BR 19. 4, *Mi a'e gorchymynneis y weisson y meirych* 'I have handed it over to the grooms of the horses' PKM 23. 26, *pan rodych gynghor y dyn* 'when thou givest advice to a man' B ii. 27. 18, *Yti, Argluyd Duw, y diolchaf vy hynny* 'To thee, Lord God, do I give thanks for that' ix. 331. 19, *Y neb a uenffyccyo ty a than y arall* 'Whoever shall lend a house and fire to another' LlB 50. 14. Very often a verbal noun serves as direct object in this construction, in which case it invariably comes after the indirect object: *mi a baraf idaw vynet drwod* 'I shall cause him to go across' BDe 11. 4, *dyscet idi eisted* 'let him instruct her to sit' B vii. 371. 30, *Mi a adaf y ti y rodi idaw* 'I will permit thee to give it him' PKM 24. 3, *ny elly di ludyas y bawb dywedut* 'thou canst not prevent everyone from speaking' B ii. 25. 17, *adolwyn e'r mab datcanu udunt er anryuedaut* '(they) besought the boy to declare unto them the wonder' ix. 145. 31, *Diawl a ennyc ytti ac y minneu bechu* 'The devil incites you and me also to sin' vii. 372. 7–8. Another construction occasionally occurs with some of these verbs; the preposition is made to govern the verbal noun, while the noun or pronoun serves

as direct object, as in the following examples: *e dyscu a oruc e emendav e vuched* 'he instructed him to mend his ways' B ix. 337. 30, *Gat yno ef y rodi drossot y pawb* 'Leave him there to give to all in thy stead' PKM 17. 22, *Ni'm lludd meinwar i'w charu* 'The slim gentle one does not prevent me from loving her' GDG 292. 33. This construction became more common in ModW; see CFG 33.

(*c*) The preposition is commonly employed after a noun or adjective in the predicate of a nominal sentence. The grammatical subject of the sentence follows, usually in the form of a verbal noun: *Gnawt yw y bop peth dielw vot yn gv* 'It is customary for every profitless thing to be cherished' B ii. 31. 15, *mynych yw idaw syrthyaw y mywn tlodi* 'it is often that he falls (lit. 'for him to fall') into poverty' ii. 9. 18, *kewilydyus yw y dyn dysgu arall* 'it is shameful for a man to instruct another' ii. 21. 15, *dir yw ymi gwneuthur hynny* 'I must do that' (lit. 'necessary is it for me to do that') PKM 92. 1. *Reit* 'necessity' is commonly found in this construction: *reit yv idav ef kynnal cret gyffredin yr egluys* 'he must maintain the catholic faith of the Church' B v. 196. 18, *reit yw in gerdet yn bryssur* 'we must travel in haste' PKM 71. 1, *reit yw i mi . . . vynet y ynys arall* 'I must go to another island' BDe 4. 7.

(*d*) It is used to denote possession: *prif lys idaw* 'a chief court of his' PKM 1. 3, *a danned heyrrnn idav* 'having iron teeth' B ix. 329. 31–32, *A mab a vu idaw* 'And he had a son' BDe 1. 8; also *gan* (see § 208).

(*e*) It is used to denote purpose, with the meaning 'for, for the sake of': *y mae yn barawt ytt* 'it is ready for thee' BDe 19. 12–13; with a verbal noun 'to, in order to': *ac a digvydaf yw draet e adolwyn idav ef dy gemryt ty* 'and I will fall at His feet to beseech Him to receive thee' B ix. 147. 35, *Mi a af ac ef gennyf y ymwelet a'r amerawdyr* 'I will take it with me to visit the Emperor' ix. 48. 2–3, *Deu uarchauc a doeth i waret i wisc hela y amdanaw* 'Two knights came to rid him of his hunting garb' PKM 4. 10, *e ymolchi yd aethant* 'they went to wash' 4. 16, *agor dy byrth y dyuot brenhin gogonyant ymyvn* 'open thy gates for the King of Glory to come in' B xiv. 269. 22–23.

(*f*) *Amcan y* 'about, approximately' (*amcan* 'estimate'): *amkan*

y gan wr o Gristonogyon 'about a hundred Christians' YCM 155. 11, *amcan i vil o yffeireit o'e dedyf hwy* 'about a thousand priests of their faith' YBH 14. 921, *amkan y hanner milltir* 'about half a mile' SG 40. 27.

Agos y 'close on, nearly' (*agos* 'close, near'): *agos y deugein* 'close on forty' YBH 52. 3379, *agos y deir milltir* 'nearly three miles' 45. 2907, *agos y uis* 'close on a month' WM 440. 10.

§ 222. Y 'in', with the infixed pronoun 1. and 2. sing.: *y'm nedeir* 'in my hand' CLlH 12. 10[a], *y'th ogonyant* 'in thy glory' B x. 32. 13, *y'm rith i* 'in my guise' x. 25. 3, *y'th ystauell* 'in thy chamber' v. 217. 12, *y'th uedyant di* 'in thy power' PKM 14. 25, *y'th uryt ti* 'in thy mind' 60. 2. It is also used with verbal nouns (§§ 119 *a*, 120 *a*, 145, and see also B xviii. 362–72).

A form *y* also serves as a predicative particle with nouns and adjectives (§§ 21 *d*, 22, 145), and as an adverbial particle with adjectives (§ 250).

N. Arwyn Watkins has explained the preposition *y* as a phonetic variant of *yn* § 244; see B xvii. 137–58.

The predicative and adverbial particle *y* may well be the preposition *y* 'to' (**do*); cf. the use of Corn. *the* in the same construction: *the weth* 'worse', *the wel* 'better'; see B vii. 279–83, LlCC 20, TC 244, LlC ii. 192, also B xix. 295–315.

§ 223. (*a*) **Y am** (*am* § 203) 'about, towards', time: *or lledir y karw y am hanher dyd* 'if the stag is killed towards midday' WML 36. 4–5, *y am . . . a*(*c*) . . . 'on the other side of . . . from': *y am e tan a'r brenyn* 'on the opposite side of the fire from the king' ZCP xx. 34. 22–23, *a mynet y orwed y am y tan ac ef* 'and went to lie on the opposite side of the fire from him' WM 255. 14–15; 'besides, in addition to': *a guyrda y am hynny* 'and noblemen besides those' PKM 29. 7; 'from about / upon': *i waret i wisc hela y amdanaw* 'to remove his hunting garb from about him' PKM 4. 10–11, *bwrw y bratteu . . . y amdanaw a oruc Pwyll* 'Pwyll cast off (lit. 'from about him') the rags' 17. 5.

(*b*) **Y ar** (*ar* § 204) 'on, upon': *y ar uarch erchlas mawr* 'on a big

dapple-grey horse' PKM 2. 4; 'besides, in addition to': *a their pryf temyl y ar hynny* 'and three principal temples besides those' BD 62. 18; 'from upon': *y vwrw y lludet y arnunt* 'to throw off (lit. 'from upon them') their weariness' BR 14. 28–29, *Guaret yr hut a'r lledrith y ar seith cantref Dyuet* 'To have the charm and enchantment removed from upon the seven cantrefs of Dyfed' PKM 63. 28, *Na werth dy sofyl y ar dy dir* 'Do not sell thy stubble from upon thy land' B ii. 13. 17.

Odi ar (see n. 1. below): *mi a drossaf ychydic odi ar vy fford vy hun ac ody ar defnyd y kyfarwydyt* 'I will turn a little from my own way and from the subject of the story' SG 127. 9.

(*c*) **Y gan** (*gan* § 208) 'by, because', cause: *megys yr hagrao vy eneit y ganthunt* 'that my soul may be defiled because of them' B x. 55. 5; it denotes the agent: *yn yr vn amser yd adeilvt Ruuein y gan y deu uroder Remus a Romulus* 'at the same time Rome was built by the two brothers Remus and Romulus' BD 31. 19–20, *pregeth y gan Gildas Sant* 'a sermon by Gildas Sant' BDe 3. 12; 'from', with a personal name or pronoun: *Y gan Vendigeiduran y kyrchawd y mab at Vanawydan* 'From Bendigeidfran the boy went to Manawydan' PKM 43. 14–15, *o ureid y diaghyssant y ganthav* 'with difficulty did they escape from him' BD 15. 30, *y baup o'r a'e keisso y gantaw* 'to everyone who shall seek it from him' LlB 6. 12, *ba furuf y keffir wy y gantaw ef?* 'in what way shall they be got from him?' PKM 68. 26, *Llyna rod deilwng y gan Duw y'r ryw wr hwnnw* 'That was a worthy gift from God to such a man as he' BDe 10. 4.

(*d*) **Y dan** § 237. (*e*) **Y dros** § 339. (*f*) **Y rac** § 235.

(*g*) **Y wrth** (*wrth* § 243) 'from': *pellaf uydei hitheu e wrthaw ef* 'further would she be from him' PKM 10. 3–4, *nyt ey y wrthyf i heno* 'thou shalt not go from me tonight' 85. 18, *a chilyaw dalym y wrth y guyr* 'and fell back some distance from the men' 55. 17, *kymryt enw y mab y wrth y geir a dywot y uam* 'to take the name of the boy from the word his mother spoke' 26. 18, *ar hynny y doeth ryv bvystuil athrugar y ueint y vrth uor Ywerdon* 'thereupon there came some beast of tremendous size from the Irish Sea' BD 41. 20; 'about, concerning, of': *ny chigleu dim y wrth duw* 'who has heard nothing of God' LlA 35. 19, *nyt oes neb yma a wypo dim y*

wrth hynny 'there is here no one who knows anything about that' PKM 39. 27, *pann gauas llawen chwedyl y wrthaw* 'when she received glad tidings of him' 26. 18–19; 'as compared with': *diuwyn oed pob un iwrthi hi* 'each one was unlovely compared with it' PKM 46. 15, *megys meibyon oed pavb o wyrda y teyrnas oll y vrthav ynteu* 'as youths were all the noblemen of the whole kingdom compared with him' BD 88. 10–11; see *Celtica* iii. 145–6.

Dy wrth (see n. 1. below): *a gyrru Kulhwch arnaw, dy vrth y gaffel yn retkyr hwch* 'and he was called Culhwch, because he was found (lit. 'from his being found') in a pig-run' WM 452. 20–21.

O ywrth (see n. 1. below): *vy nghytwybot a beris ym eu bwrw oywrthyf* 'my conscience caused me to cast them from me' FfBO 56. 31.

N. 1. The original meaning of *y* in these combinations was 'from'; it derives from *ðy* (OW *di*) < **dē* (Ir. *di*, cf. Lat. *dē*), and still occurs in *o-ði* (composed of *o* 'from' and (*ð*)*i*): ModW *oddi am, oddi ar, oddi wrth*, &c. Its force in the combinations *y am, y ar*, &c., cannot always be ascertained, for, as we have seen above, they often bear the same meanings as the simple prepositions *am, ar*, &c. It is likely that there was much confusion between them at an early period; see B xiii. 1–10.

The simple preposition *y* 'from' was discarded to avoid confusion with *y* 'to'; the latter derives from *ðy* (OW *di*) < **do* (Ir. *do*).

N. 2. Traces of the use of *y* 'from' are probably found in *y dreis* 'by force' ChO 11. 8–9, *y ueis* 'by walking, on foot' PKM 39. 10, see B xiii. 3. Cf. also: *Blwydyn . . . y heno* 'A year from tonight' PKM 3. 16–17.

§ 224. (*a*) **Y maes o** 'outside' (*maes* 'field, plain'): *y maes o'e wassanaeth dylyedus* 'outside his proper function' LlB 104. 7; 'out of', with verbs of motion: *pan el ef y maes o'e tir ehunan* 'when he goes out from his own land' LlB 3. 4, *a phan daw y maes o'r ogof* 'and when he comes out of the cave' WM 158. 22–24, *pann doethant y maes o'r koet* 'when they came out of the wood' YBH 50. 3227, *Hwy a vwriwyt i maes o Baradwys* 'They were thrown out of Paradise' BY 6. 23.

(*b*) **O vaes y** 'outside': *Os o vaes y'r llys y byd* 'If it be outside the court' LlB 43. 27.

§ 225. (*a*) **Y mywn, Mywn** 'in': *gan eisted e mevn cadeir* 'sitting in a chair' B x. 22. 18, *a uo kyuarwyd y mywn kyureith* 'one who is proficient in law' LlB 17. 16, *Ti a wnnaethost pob peth mywn doethineb* 'Thou didst make everything in wisdom' LlA 5. 1; with a definite noun: *yno y buant y nos honno y mywn y dref a elwir etwa Mochtref* 'there they were that night in the township which is still called Mochdref' PKM 71. 11, *merchet y vilaeineit a fwynt y mywn maertrefi y llys* 'the daughters of his bondmen that are in the *maer* townships of the court' LlB 27. 20; 'into': *hyt nat oed hawd y dyn o'r byt diodef y mwc hwnnw yn mynet y mywn y dwy ffroen* 'so that it was not easy for any man in the world to endure that smoke going into his nostrils' BR 2. 23.

Y mywn y 'into': *ac yna . . . yd aeth ymywn y'r llys* 'and then he went into the court' YBH 23. 1500. Cf. *Y'r dinas y mywn y doeth Bown* 'Into the city came Bown' YBH 14. 918–19, *yny doeth y'r dinas y mywn* B v. 218. 33.

(*b*) **Y vewn** 'into' (see TC 397): *a thrannoeth y doeth Charlymaen y vewn y dinas* 'and the following day Charlemagne came into the city' Hg MSS ii. 29. 14.

(*c*) **O vywn** 'within': *or daw glaw o vywn yr wythuet dyd* 'if rain comes within the eighth day' B ii. 13. 5, *ny phoenir o vywn hynny* 'he is not to be molested within that period' LlB 41. 28, *a llys uawr o uywn y gaer* 'and a great court within the rampart' WM 168. 14–15.

O vywn y 'within': *a disgynnv o vywn y'r kwrt* 'and (they) descended within the courtyard' B v. 211. 4.

Ody vywn 'within' (*ody*, see § 233 n. 1): *ody vywn y seith mlyned hynn* 'within these seven years' YBH 51. 3325, *yny doeth nos arnaw ody vywn glynn mawr dwfyn* 'till night came upon him within a large deep valley' SG 83. 14–15.

N. Note the following example where *yn* occurs with *mywn*, which is preceded by a possessive pronoun: *Yn y mywn yd oed colovyn eureit* 'Inside it (or 'in the middle of it') there was a column of gold' B v. 212. 30. With *y(n) mywn* cf. Ir. *immedón* (see L & P 36).

§ 226. Is 'below' (as comp. of *is-el* 'low' § 42): *is penn y lin* 'below his knee' LlB 28. 13.

Od is 'below' (*od*, cf. § 223 n. 1): *neur disgynnassei Arthur a'e lu y kedyrn od is Kaer Vadon* 'Arthur and his host of the mighty had descended below Caer Faddon' BR 10. 4.

Is law 'below' (*llaw* 'hand'): *is law y drws* 'below the door' WM 155–6.

Is gil 'behind' on horseback (*cil* 'back'): *yna yscynnu a oruc Sabaot isgil y gwas* 'then Sabaot mounted behind the youth' YBH 61. 3941, *odyna Idawc a gymerth Ronabwy is y gil* 'then Iddawg took Rhonabwy up behind him' BR 9. 7; see BR 47, GDG 518.

§ 227. Mal, Val 'like': *mal ef* 'like him' R 1403. 19; see also § 92 *c*.

ual kynt 'all the same, nevertheless': *A gwreic a geif ef ual kynt* 'But a wife he shall have all the same' PKM 83. 15–16; see YBH 128, 131.

§ 228. Megys, Vegys 'like': *megys mynyd uchel* 'like a high mountain' BDe 17. 19–20, *syrthyaw megys dynyon meirw* 'to fall like dead men' 19. 17.

§ 229. Namwyn, &c., 'except, besides'; see § 255.

§ 230. Nes 'until' (as comp. of *agos* 'near' § 42), with a verbal noun: *ny chysgaf hun lonyd nes gwybot a allwyf ellwg y vorwyn* 'I will not sleep in peace till I know whether I can set the maiden free' WM 167. 15–17.

§ 231. O(c) 'from', time: *o'r gyuawr honno* 'from that moment' PKM 47. 18, *o'r lle* 'straightway' (*lle* 'place'): *mineu a af o'r lle* 'I shall go straightway' YBH 27. 1695, *o . . . hyt* 'from . . . to': *o galan gayaf hyt galan Mei* 'from the first day of winter to the first of May' LlB 69. 15, *o . . . allan* 'from . . . forth' (§ 92 *d*): *o hediw allan* 'from this day forth' BR 17. 13; place: *E brenhin a'e clywei wynteu o'r lle yd oed ar garrec uchel uch eu penn* 'The king could hear them from the place where he was upon a high rock over them' PKM 30. 10, *o pop parth y'r eskeir* 'on each side of the ridge' 39. 25, *o . . . hyt* 'from . . . to': *o'r llaur hyt y nef* 'from earth to

heaven' B ix. 331. 16; 'by, by means of', manner (often instrumental): *odeno . . . y kerdus o hwyl a rwyf hyt en enyssed Denmarc* 'thence he went by sail and oar to the islands of Denmark' HGrC 136. 1–2, *y drychu y Freinc llurugauc a helmauc o'e uwyall deu vinyauc* 'to cleave the armoured and helmeted French with his double-edged axe' 136. 14–15, *yr hwnn a enillws dwyrann o Ywerdon . . . o'e dewred* 'who gained two parts of Ireland by his valour' 108. 26–27, *keisswn ninheu . . . oc an hut a'n lledrith, hudaw gwreic idaw ynteu o'r blodeu* 'let us seek by our magic and enchantment to conjure a wife for him out of flowers' PKM 83. 20, *ny digawn y etiued dwyn y tir rac hwnnw o gyfreith* 'his descendants cannot take the land from that person by law' LlB 78. 22 (cf. l. 21 *trwy*), *o wir* 'by right' AP 5. 138, *o lit* 'in anger' BDe 7. 13; 'from, because of', cause: *o enryded gwneuthur y ty . . . ef a tangnoueda a thi* 'by reason of the honour in making the house, he will make peace with thee' PKM 42. 2–4, *kanys mi a lawenheeis o drwc a delei y'm kymodawc* 'for I rejoiced because of an ill that would befall my neighbour' B viii. 139. 27. For its use to denote the subject of the verbal noun, see § 181 *a*.

It is frequently used to express certain genitival relationships, with the meaning 'of': *Arwydon tec . . . o bali* 'Beautiful ensigns of silk' PKM 30. 2, *torch vaur o eur* 'a big torque of gold' HGrC 106. 3, *heit o wenyn* 'a swarm of bees' BDe 1. 12, *neb ohonam ni* 'any of us' 13. 18, *pob vn o honunt* 'every one of them' PKM 42. 14, *y geing honn o'r Mabinyogi* 'this branch of the Mabinogi' 48. 12. For further examples, see §§ 101–17.

With verbs: *aruervch y weithyon oc avch kryfder* 'practise now your strength' BD 128. 15, *ny allaf anobeithyav o vadeueint* 'I cannot despair of forgiveness' B ix. 147. 28, *Prydera o'th dylwyth* Lat. '*Familiam cura*' ii. 26, *Yma y treythir o ach Dewi, ac o dalym o'e vuched* 'Here is related the ancestry of Dewi and some of his life' BDe 1. 1, *Moysen . . . a'r proffuydi a racdywedassant o'r diodef hvnn* 'Moses and the prophets foretold of this suffering' B xiv. 260. 10, *llenwi y karchar a wnaeth o dryc arocleu* 'it filled the prison with a bad smell' x. 55. 14, (*na*) *nacaha ui ohonunt* 'do not refuse them to me' PKM 70. 1.

Verbs of motion 'from', usually before nouns denoting place:

ac yd aeth ar y thraet o'r dvfyr 'and she went on her feet from the water' B ix. 332. 32, *ac a dianghyssant o'r ty hayarn yn Iwerdon* 'and they escaped from the iron house in Ireland' PKM 35. 7, *mi a welwn gwr melyngoch, mawr, yn dyuot o'r llyn* 'I could see a big man with yellow-red hair coming from the lake' 35. 13–14; *allan o* 'out of / from': *a'e venet . . . allan o'r vanachloc* 'so that he went out of the monastery' B ix. 337. 24, *llithraw allan yn gymrawvs a oruc o'r eglwys* 'he slipped out terrified from the church' v. 208. 8, cf. *o'r dinas allan y doethant* 'out from the city they came' v. 207. 14; *ymeith o* 'away from': *yd aeth hitheu ymeith o'r dwuyr* 'she went away from the water' B x. 57. 14; *y maes o* § 224 *a*.

N. 1. With *o* cf. Ir. *ó, úa* 'from, by', Lat. *au(-fero)*, see GOI 524. The form *oc* which is common only before the pl. forms of the prefixed personal pronoun is probably by analogy with *a(c)*; see §§ 56 n. 3, 75 n. 3.

N. 2. There are a few early examples of *o* 'under' < *go* (cf. *go traet* BT 64. 14) < **gṷo* = Ir. *fo*: *dygwydaw an gwyr ny penn o draet* '(to see) our men fall headlong' (lit. 'head under feet') CA 40. 999, see B xiii. 3. *Go* of course, is common as a prefix, see WG 267.

N. 3. *A* 'of' is used in certain expressions (§ 39 *c*). Later it was completely superseded by *o*.

§ 232. *O* is found in the following composite prepositions:

(*a*) *O achaws* 'because of, by reason of' (*achaws* 'cause'): *o achaws i drigiant ef y ulwydyn honno yn Annwuyn* 'by reason of his sojourn that year in Annwfn' PKM 8. 21–22, *Da a dwy ynys a diffeithwyt o'm achaws i* 'Two good islands have been laid waste because of me' 45. 17–18; 'for the sake of': *o'ch achaws chwi mi a ellygaf yr ychen* 'for your sake I will unyoke the oxen' B v. 210. 35; 'concerning, in respect of': *o achaws paluawt Branwen* 'concerning the blow to Branwen' PKM 48. 13, *o achaws gwreic y maent* 'they are in respect of a woman' LlB 111. 20.

(*b*) *O adlo* 'by reason of' (see B i. 116–18): *Or hwyda . . . o atlo henllwgyr* 'If it swells by reason of an old chafe' LlB 92. 27.

(*c*) *O blegyt* 'on the side of, for' (see CA 230–1): *Brenhin y castell marw . . . a ovynnawd idaw oblegyt pwy yr oed yn dwyn yr arueu hynny* 'The king of the Dead Castle asked him on whose part he was bearing those arms' SG 276–7, *Uy mab dwc dy uuched yn gall o blegyt duw a'r byt* 'My son, lead thy life

sensibly for God and the world' B ii. 9. 13. In ModW the meaning is 'because'.

(*d*) *O bleit* 'on the side of, for' (*pleit* 'side'): *kenetyl y Arthur o pleit y tat* 'kindred to Arthur on his father's side' WM 461. 35, *minheu o bleit duw ac o'y awdurdawt awch ellyngaf oc awch holl bechodeu* 'I on behalf of God and by His authority will absolve you of all your sins' Hg MSS ii. 30. 23–24.

(*e*) *O vaes y* § 224 *b*. (*f*) *O vywn y* § 225 *c*.

(*g*) *O herwyd* 'according to' (*herwyd* § 219): *y troy yr Credo hvnn . . . o heruyd y synnvyr a rodes Duv ymi* 'to translate this Creed according to the sense that God gave to me' B v. 195.

(*h*) *O law* 'after' (*llaw* 'hand', see § 92 *d*): *O law hynn* 'After this' Pen 7. 210.

§ 233. Parth a(c) 'towards' (*parth* 'part, side', *a*(*c*) § 201): *Parth a'r dyd Riannon a deffroes* 'Towards day Rhiannon awoke' PKM 20. 23. With verbs: *or dyweit vn ohonunt geir cam parth a'r llall* 'if one of them shall say a false word with regard to the other' LlB 128. 2, *Gwynuededic Vargret a etrychaud parth a'r nef* 'Blessed Margaret looked towards heaven' B ix. 327. 36. It is common with verbs of motion: *hyt pan del y pennteulu trwy y porth parth a'e lety* 'until the chief of the bodyguard come through the gate towards his lodging' LlB 7. 19, *Kyrchwn parth a Dyuet* 'Let us proceed towards Dyfed' PKM 55. 2, *Gwyr y Deheu a gerdassant . . . parth ac eu gwlat* 'The men of the South journeyed towards their land' 73. 18–19.

Parth ac ar: *bot eu hynt parth ac ar Hu Gorstinabyl* 'that their journey was towards Hu of Constantinople' B v. 209. 19.

Parth ac at: *wynt a welynt teir llong ar dec yn kyrchu parth ac attunt* 'they could see thirteen ships proceeding towards them' PKM 29. 15–17.

§ 234. Py, see § 105 n. 1.

§ 235. Rac, Y rac (Corn. *the rag* § 223 n. 1), see EC vi. 11–20. 'before', place: *rac pebyll Madawc* 'before the tent of Madawg' CA 2. 28, *canet y canu a elwir 'Unbeinyaeth Prydein' racdunt* 'let him sing the poem called "The Chieftainship of Britain" before

them' LlB 22. 25; 'because of, by reason of', cause: *rac diruawr wres y kyrchwys y bleit a'e yscwyd* 'by reason of the exceeding great heat he charged the wall with his shoulder' PKM 36. 19–20, with an equative adjective (§ 45), *meint* (§ 102); 'for', purpose: *rodi da y reidussion rac dy eneit* 'to give goods to the needy for the sake of thy soul' B ii. 32. 18, *vrth ganu efferenneu rac y eneit* 'to say masses for his soul' BD 204. 9–10, *Na wna bechawt rac ofyn duw, a rac kabyl dynyon* 'Do not commit sin for fear of God and the censure of men' B ii. 34. 1, *dyro ui idaw rac anglot yt* 'give me to him lest dishonour be upon thee' PKM 14. 19. In the last two examples the preposition has acquired a negative meaning; before a verbal noun it is commonly found with the meaning 'lest, for fear that': *na at trachefyn, rac gwybot hynn* 'let (them) not go back, lest this be known' PKM 38. 5, *rac dy welet yn ymodi y pryf hwnnw, mi a'y prynaf* 'lest thou be seen handling that creature, I will redeem it' 62. 24–25, *Pilatus a'y lladawd ac a oed y gyt ac ef y rac twyllaw Ideon ereill val hynny* 'Pilatus killed him and as many as were with him lest other Jews might be deceived likewise' B ix. 47. 16–17. The meaning 'lest . . . not' is expressed by *rac na* + verb (see § 183 *a*): *Edrych hagen y bwy y rodych rac nas keffych vyth* 'But watch to whom thou dost give it, lest thou mayest never get it back' B ii. 27. 8.

With verbs; verbs of concealing, taking, fleeing, protecting, delivering, &c., 'from': *Ny chelaf ragot vyg kystlwn* 'I will not conceal from thee my identity' BR 4. 23, *mi a ddygwn y goron rac ermin* 'I would take his crown from Ermin' YBH 15. 1002, *Ef a ellir rac hynny dianc yn hawd* 'It is possible to avoid (lit. 'escape from') that easily' PKM 87. 4, *kannys ef a dyly goglyt y neuat rac tan yna* 'for it is his duty to protect the hall from fire then' LlB 27. 27, *oe diffryt rac drwc* 'to defend them from evil' LlA 56. 16, *y rac*: *ninheu a dygwn y racdunt yr eidunt* 'we also shall take from them that which is theirs' RB 207. 21 (= *y arnadunt* BD 165. 1–2); verbs of motion, 'forward, ahead, on his way', &c.: *miui a af ragof* 'I will go on my way' PKM 3. 26, *Y kennadeu a gyrchyssant racdu* 'The messengers went on their way' 41. 21, *kerda ragot* 'go thy way' 69. 2, *racdun yd hwylyssant* 'forth they sailed' YBH 33. 2092, *ragor(i) rac* § 114.

Rac bronn 'before, in front of' (*bronn* 'breast', cf. *ger bronn* § 209 *a*): *a dygwydaw ar benn y lin rac bron yr amherawdyr* 'and he fell on his knee before the Emperor' YBH 2. 93, *y gwas oed yn seuyll rac bronn Arthur* 'the youth who was standing in front of Arthur' BR 8. 1, *Y troedauc a eisted dan traet y brenhin, a'r cannhwyllyd rac y vronn* 'The foot-holder sits under the king's feet, and the candle-bearer before him' LlB 5. 26–28, *a'e dwyn yntev o'r arglwyd rac bronn drws y ty yd oed Veir yndaw* 'and the Lord brought him before the door of the house in which Mary was' LlA 78. 14.

Rac llaw, adverb 'after this, later', (*llaw* 'hand', orig. probably local in meaning, 'in front of the hand'): *a daw rac llaw e'r vravt* 'He will come later to the judgement' B ix. 148. 1, *val yd emdengys rac llav* 'as will appear later' x. 27. 32; similarly *rac wyneb* (*wyneb* 'face'): *Gwynn ev byt y rei glan y callonnev kannys y rei hynny rac wyneb a welant* (ms. *wnelant*) *duw* 'Blessed are the pure in heart, for they later shall see God' LlA 150. 16.

§ 236. (Y) rwng 'between': *rwng y pasc a'r sulgwyn* 'between Easter and Whitsun' B ii. 14. 9, *yrydaw a'r golofyn* 'between him and the column' LlB 4. 22–23, *damlygu e mab en gadarn e rwng e dwy lav* '(she) embraced the boy firmly between her two hands' B x. 32. 37. Sometimes (*y*) *rwng* . . . *a*(*c*) comes close to meaning 'both . . . and' (cf. Ir. *etar* . . . *ocus*): *yna rwng dicter a llit, taraw ymplith y llygot a wnaeth* 'then in wrath and anger he rushed in amidst the mice' PKM 60. 12–13, *a llawer o uilyoed y gyt ac vynt, y rvng Brytanyeit a chenedloed ereill* 'and many thousands along with them, both Britons and other races' BD 185. 22.

With verbs: *yna y doeth meibyon anuundeb y teruysgu y rygunt* 'then the sons of dissension came to stir up strife among them' BD 33. 18, *ar uessur tangneuedu y rom ac vynt* 'with the intention of making peace between us and them' 120. 25, *kynn rannv y crwyn y rwg y brenhin a'r kynnydyonn* 'before sharing the skins between the king and the huntsmen' LlB 11. 18.

Kyfrwng 'between': *Eisted kyfrwg deu o'r milwyr* 'Sit thou between two of the warriors' WM 459. 10.

Ody rwng 'from between' (*ody* § 223 n. 1): *uabon uab modron*

a ducpwyt yn teir nossic ody rwng y vam a'r paret 'Mabon son of Modron, who was taken when three nights old from between his mother and the wall' WM 490. 5–7.

§ 237. Tan, Dan, Y dan, A dan (OW *guotan, gutan*, see B xiii. 4) 'under, below, beneath': *yna y dechrewis y Gwydyl kynneu tan dan y peir dadeni* 'then the Irish began to kindle a fire under the cauldron of rebirth' PKM 44. 9–10, *yg keythywet adan Pandrasus vrenhyn Groec* 'in captivity under Pandrasus, king of Greece' BD 4. 9, *y dan y twr uchaf idaw* 'under the highest tower he has' B v. 214. 29, *bydwch yma . . . y dan y paret hwnn* 'be ye here under this wall' PKM 76. 12–13, *dan baret yr ystauell* 'under the wall of the chamber' 76. 15, *y dan y amdiffyn* 'under his protection' BDe 18. 21; 'up to, as far as': *holl Germania adan y theruyneu* 'the whole of Germania up to its boundaries' BD 78. 8.

It occurs in expressions denoting manner or attendant circumstances: *A pheri a oruc meithrin y mab dan gel* 'And she had the boy reared in secret' Hg MSS ii. 272. 11, *Yna dan diruawr ouyn dispeiliaw a oruc Malcus y gledeu* 'Then in great fear Malcus unsheathed his sword' B x. 59. 3, *mi . . . a becheis dan obeith madeueint* 'I sinned in the hope of (getting) forgiveness' viii. 139. 16.

With verbs; verbs of motion, *y dan, a dan*: *yn hynny guan y dan y meirych* 'thereupon he set upon the horses' PKM 32. 2, *Awn adanunt a lladwn* 'Let us fall on them and slay them' 54. 1; the verb 'to be', with the meaning 'to warrant': *Y neb a wertho moch, bit y danunt rac y vynyglawc, tri diwarnawt* 'Whoever shall sell swine, he shall warrant them free from quinsy for three days' LlB 93. 25.

With a verbal noun it forms a participle which expresses an action simultaneous with that of the main verb, but usually separate from it (contrast *gan* § 208): *yd aeth ar y thraet o'r dvfyr dan voli a bendigav Duv* 'she went on her feet from the water, praising and glorifying God' B ix. 332. 32, *ef a aeth ymeith . . . dan wylaw ac ymelldigaw yr awr y ganet* 'he went away, weeping and cursing the hour he was born' SG 40. 37–38, *Ar hynny kyfodi a wnaeth y vorwyn y vynyd y dan ellwg y dagreu* 'Thereupon the

maiden arose, shedding tears' WM 135. 1–2, *dynessau a wnaeth y chueric parth a'r gaer a dan ganu y delyn* 'he drew near to the fortress leisurely, playing the harp' BD 146. 3.

§ 238. Tra(c), Dra (rare) 'over, beyond': OW *tra nos* 'over night, on the morrow' Comp; MW *trac eryri* 'over Eryri' LlHen 46. 16, *Yssit* (ms. *yssydd*) *Lanfawr dra gweilgi* 'There is a Llanfawr beyond the sea' CLlH 22. 6[a], *tra messur* 'beyond measure' YMTh 57. 14, *to tra tho* 'layer on layer' B ii. 13. 23, *geir tra geir* 'point by point' (lit. 'word upon word') LlB 127. 9, *gwers tra gwers* 'alternately' (*gwers* 'a while' § 249) ib.

It most commonly occurs before *kefyn* 'back', with an infixed possessive pronoun. Sing. 1. *tra-m-kefyn* 'back': *dyfot a orugum inheu tramkefyn y'r ffordy deuthum gynt* 'I came back the way I had come before' WM 232. 30–32, 2. *tra-th-gefyn*: *dos trathgefyn y'r llys* 'go back to the court' 124. 19, 3. masc. *tra-y-gefyn* PKM 59. 9, fem. *dra-e-chefyn* RM 177. 12. Pl. 3. *trach-eu-keuyn* BD 38. 31. (For *trach*, cf. *drach 'y nghefn* 'over my back, back' GDG 131. 42, also *drach y uron* 'before him' B x. 56. 21, *bron* 'breast', usually *ger bronn* § 209 *a*, or *rac bronn* § 235.) The impersonal form is *trachefyn*, *drachefyn*, with the meaning 'back, again': *dyuot drachevyn a oruc ar delw e wynvydedic Veir* '(she) came back to the statue of the blessed Mary' B ix. 340. 30; 'above' (rare): *megys y dywetpvyt tracheuyn* 'as was said above' BD 72. 14.

§ 239. Tros, Dros, Y dros 'for, instead of': *mae ef a dyry naud drostunt oll y baub* 'that it is he who grants protection for them all to everyone' LlB 6. 11, *namyn Giluathwy uab Don . . . (a aei) y gylchu y wlat drostaw* 'but Gilfaethwy son of Dôn would make the circuit of the land in his stead' PKM 67. 14, *namyn yr ystyryaw caryat ar vr arall drostaw ef* 'but because (she) was meditating love for another man in his stead' WM 417. 9–10, *Ny chymellaf inheu ar neb uynet e ymlad, dros wneuthur ohanam ninheu an gallu* 'I will not compel anyone to go to fight, instead of our doing what we can' PKM 73. 3, *y dros*: *keissaw neb vn a wrtheppo drostaw ac a wnel cwbyl y drostaw* 'to seek someone who may answer for him and who may bear the whole for him' LlB 44. 18–19; 'for, in

respect of': *Dros pob vn o'r rei hynny y keiff ef punt* 'For each of those he gets a pound' LlB 26. 18; 'for, on account of': *a thros e wassanaeth e duc y vuched tragywyd* 'and for his service she brought him to eternal life' B x. 25. 30, *ot ysgymynwyt dros ledrat* 'if he was excommunicated for theft' vii. 371. 10.

With verbs, 'for, on behalf of': *y ymlad tros eu gvlat* 'to fight for their country' BD 97. 28, *y dadleu drostaw yn llys* 'to plead for him in court' LlB 45. 20, *gwediet yr offeiryat drostaw* 'let the priest pray for him' B vii. 371. 22; verbs of motion 'over, across': *kerdet en droetsych dros eurdonen* '(she) walked with her feet dry across Jordan' B ix. 341. 9, *Camha di dros honn* 'Step thou over this' PKM 77. 12, *dwyn y dynn dros ffin y kymhwt y bo yndaw* 'to convey a person over the boundary of the commot in which he is' LlB 6. 16, *ac a neidyawd y neill hanner idi dros benn y lleian* 'and the one half of it leaped over the nun's head' BDe 4. 11–12, 'beyond': *nyt aeth y nos honno dros vgein weith* 'he did not go that night beyond twenty times' B v. 218. 1, *o bechodeu a elei dros gof* 'of sins that might be forgotten' (lit. 'that might go beyond memory') B viii. 138. 12, *pann aeth dros y gorchymyn* 'when he went beyond the command' (Lat. *praeterivit*) LlA 14. 13.

§ 240. Trwy, Drwy 'through', time: *drwy y vlwydyn* 'through the year' B ii. 11. 4, *trwy yr holl Rawys* 'through the whole of Lent' LlB 1. 13, *drwy lawer o vlwynyded* 'over many years' BDe 16. 20; 'through, by means of, in', manner or attendant circumstances: *an rydhav ninhev o flammeu uffern trwy e hun mab hi* 'to deliver us from the flames of hell through her only son' B ix. 146. 6, *y wediaw Duw trwy dyrwest a gwedi perffeith* 'to pray to God in complete abstinence and prayer' LlB 1. 13, *kerdet e ymdeith drwy y lit a wnaeth* 'he went away in wrath' PKM 79. 9, *Ena drwy sorr yd erchis Olibrius y chrogi* 'Then in anger Olibrius ordered her to be hanged' B x. 54. 7, *a uu . . . yn gwassannaethu idaw drwy ovyn a charyat* 'who has been serving Him in fear and love' BDe 2. 5–6; 'through, because of, from', cause: *trwy dristit e dechreuws wylav* 'from sorrow he began to weep' B x. 27. 20; see further AP 41.

With verbs: *edrych a oruc rei o'r dynyadon drwy fenestyr y*

karchardy ar y santes 'some of the men looked through the window of the prison-house at the saint' B x. 55. 7–8, *yr (h)on a dyuawt drwy eneu y dreic* 'which grew through the jaws of the dragon' B x. 55. 33.

In MW it has the meaning 'over, across' with verbs of motion: *nyt oes gynghor namyn kilyaw drwy Linon* 'there is no counsel save to retreat across the Llinon' PKM 40. 18, *cany doey ormes byth drwy uor y'r ynys honn* 'for no plague would ever come across the sea to this island' 47. 23–24, *Y chwedyl . . . a aeth drwy yr holl ynys honn* 'The news went over all this island' BDe 20. 16.

§ 241. (Y) tu a(c) 'towards' (*tu* 'side', *a(c)* § 201): *a thu a'r pylgeint deffroi* 'and towards cockcrow (they) awoke' PKM 20. 9.

With verbs: *A phan edrychassant tu a'r twryf* 'And when they looked in the direction of the commotion' BR 5. 18, *o'r mod hwnn y dyly offeiryat ymdyborthi tu a phechadur* 'in this way should a priest conduct himself towards a sinner' B vii. 371. 2; verbs of motion: *e gerdet e tu ac Alexandria* 'to travel towards Alexandria' B x. 28. 23, *en bryssyav e tu a'r egluys* 'hurrying to the church' ix. 145. 4, *y gwelei vydin yn dyuot tu a'r ryt* 'he could see a troop coming towards the ford' BR 7. 9, *yna yd ymchoeles y mackwy tu a'e bebyll* 'then the squire returned towards his pavilion' 12. 29. Also *parth a(c)*, see § 233.

Tu ac at 'towards': *llawer a dylyir y wneuthur tu ac att jechyt yr eneit* 'much should be done towards the salvation of the soul' B ii. 24. 31.

§ 242. Uch 'above' (as comp. of *uch-el* 'high' § 42): *y Maen Tyuyawc, uch y Velen Ryd* 'at Maen Tyriawg, above Y Felen-rhyd' PKM 73. 16.

It is found in the following composite prepositions:

(*a*) *Uch benn* 'above' (*penn* 'head'): *uch benn y weilgi* 'above the sea' PKM 46. 21, *y mywn prenn uch penn yr auon* 'in a tree above the river' BDe 1. 13.

(*b*) *Uch law* 'above' (*llaw* 'hand'): *uch law y bont o'r tu draw y'r auon wynt a welynt castelldref* 'above the bridge on the other side of the river they could see a walled town' WM 433. 5–7.

(*c*) *Od uch* 'above' (*od* § 223 n. 1, see B xiii. 4): *blwydyn od uch med*

mawr eu haruaeth 'a year above their mead, grand was their design' CA 15. 364, *od uch y benn* 'above his head' YBH 17. 1132, *od ywch* (*ywch* § 2): *odywch llon dar* 'above a (?)firm oak-tree' CLlH 24. 9[a].

§ 243. Wrth (OW *gurth*: *gurth ir serenn* 'opposite the constellation' Comp; Ir. *fri*(*th*), see B xv. 124–5, *Celtica* iii. 126–48) 'at, by', place: *wrth y drws* 'at the door' PKM 22. 25–26, *Lle y pennguastraut a'e gytymdeithonn yn y neuad vrth y golofyn nessaf y'r brenhin* 'The place of the chief groom and his companions (is) in the hall by the column next to the king' LlB 19. 17; 'by, according to': *arnaw y gelwy wrth dy reit* 'on Him shalt thou call according to thy need' B ix. 327. 8, *Ynteu a lunywys yr esgidyeu, ac nit wrth y messur, namyn yn uwy* 'He fashioned the shoes, yet not to the measure, but bigger' PKM 80. 3; 'by, by means of': *a'y ellwg wrth linin hyt ygwaelot yr eol* 'and let him down by a string to the bottom of the jail' YBH 19. 1214; 'compared with' (cf. *y wrth* § 223 *g*): *Wrth Wen gweissyonein oedyn* 'Compared with Gwen they were mere youths' CLlH 5. 26[c]; 'for, because of': *wrth hynny* 'therefore, because of that' BDe 10. 22, 15. 14, before a verbal noun: *a'e ganmavl yn uvyhaf, vrth hanuot y tat a'e uam o Ruuein* 'and favoured him the more, because his father and mother hailed from Rome' BD 65. 5; when the meaning is negative, the construction is *wrth na* + verb (§ 183 *a*): *vrth nat atwaenat neb yn y dref mynet a oruc parth a'r hen llys* 'because he did not know any one in the town, he went towards the old court' WM 392. 39–41, *Wrth nat oed ym Prydein gwr wrdach y gyghor noc ef* 'Because there was not in Britain a man more mighty in counsel than he' BR 20. 12; 'for', purpose: *Gwedy hynny yd erchis gwneuthur tri llyfyr kyfreith: vn wrth y lys peunydyawl presswyl y gyt ac ef* 'Then he ordered three law-books to be prepared: one for his daily court to remain with him' LlB 1. 26, before a verbal noun: *ac erchi udunt adeilat kestyll . . . vrth gadv eu gvlat onadunt rac eu gelynyon* 'and bade them build castles in order that they might guard their country against their enemies' BD 83. 5, *yn keissaw eneideu wrth eu poeni* 'seeking souls in order to torment them' YBH 35. 2238, *ac yd aethant a hi maes o'r dinas wrth y llosgi* 'and they took her out of the city to burn her' 38. 2450–2.

With verbs: *nat eistedei vrth y gaer* 'that he would not besiege (lit. 'sit by') the fortress' BD 146. 12, *uuydhau a wnaeth yr amheravdyr vrth gyghor y wyrda* 'the Emperor abided by the counsel of his nobles' 47. 11; *bot wrth* 'to abide by, yield to': *mi a uydaf wrth a dywedeisti* 'I will abide by what thou didst say' PKM 50. 19, *na bydei vn ohonunt wrth bedwar o'r Ffreingk yn ymlad* 'that one of them would not yield to four of the French in battle' ChO 4. 13; occasionally with verbs of motion, 'to, towards': *O chlywy diaspat, dos wrthi* 'If thou hear an outcry, make towards it' WM 120. 1, *yno y ducpwyt a gahat o uedic da yg Gwyned wrthaw* 'there were brought to him all the good physicians that were found in Gwynedd' PKM 90. 19; verbs of thinking, feeling, speaking, acting, &c., to indicate the persons towards whom the feeling, action, &c., is directed: *na lityych wrth nep* 'that thou be not angry with anyone' B ii. 27. 1, *Trugarha wrthyf* 'Be merciful unto me' ix. 326. 19, *Pa achaws . . . na dywedy di wrthyf i?* 'Why dost thou not speak to me?' PKM 7. 13–14, *tra deweis wrthyt ti* 'while I stopped speaking to thee' 8. 2–3.

With adjectives 'to, towards': *ehelaeth urth anghanogyon* 'bountiful towards the needy' B ix. 146. 8, *byd da o'th olut wrth y rei da* 'be generous with thy wealth towards the good' ii. 29. 21, *llawen uuwyt wrthaw* 'he was made welcome' PKM 30. 25, *Ny buum drwc i etwa wrthyt ti* 'I have not been bad to thee yet' 81. 4.

With nouns, *crassaw* (*cressaw*, *craessaw*) 'welcome': *Crassaw wrthyt y gennyf i* 'Welcome to thee from me' PKM 12. 15, *neges* 'errand': *yd oed neges idi wrth rei o'r maes hwnn* 'she had an errand to some on this plain' 11. 10, also *at* (see § 207), *reit* 'need, necessity': *nit reit ynn wrthunt* 'we have no need of them' PKM 83. 3–4.

§ 244. Yn 'in', time: *yn ieuengtit y dyd* 'early in the day' (lit. 'in the youth of the day') PKM 18. 23, *yn yr amser y bo etiued udunt wy* 'in the time there be an offspring to them' 75. 7, *yn y lle* 'straightway' (*lle* 'place'): *En e lle gwedy hynny y doeth y mamaeth y'r carchardy atei* 'Straightway after that her foster-mother came to the prison-house to her' B x. 55. 6, *Ac yn y lle y vrawt a gytsynhywys ac ef* 'And straightway his brother agreed with him' WM

192. 27 (see YBH 113); place: *yn Arberth* 'in Arberth' PKM 1. 2–3, *yn y coet* 'in the wood' 1. 14, *yn y therfyn(eu)* 'from end to end, completely': *rodyaw Gwyned a wnaeth, a Phowys yn y theruyn* 'he traversed Gwynedd, and the whole extent of Powys' PKM 88. 22, *Madawc uab Maredud a oed idaw Powys yn y theruyneu* 'Madawg son of Maredudd held Powys from end to end' BR 1. 1–2, 'among': *tyvu newyn en e bobyl* 'famine grew among the people' B x. 29. 13, *nyt oes Duv tebic yti yn yr holl dwyweu* 'there is no god like unto thee among all the gods' ix. 334. 11, *benndigedic wyt ti yn y gwraged* 'blessed art thou among women' LlA 159. 15, 'on' (rare): *yn y groc* 'on the cross' LlA 23. 14; manner 'in': *en gurthwynebu idav yg gosgeth tarw* 'resisting him in the guise of a bull' B x. 27. 37, *Yn y mod hwnnw y telir sarhaet brenhin* 'In that manner is to be paid the *sarhad* of a king' LlB 3. 26.

In MW (but not in ModW) it may be used with an indefinite noun: *yg gveithredoed da* 'in good deeds' B x. 22. 23, *yg gveledigaeth* 'in a vision' x. 25. 19.

With verbs, 'in': *credu yn y Trindaut o nef* 'to believe in the Trinity of heaven' B v. 196. 14, *megys e gobeithyassam enot* 'as we have placed our hope in Thee' x. 32. 6, *heb ohir yd ymyvaelavd y keisseit yndi* 'without delay the inquisitors grabbed her' ix. 333. 4, *nyt ymyrrut yn y pryf* 'thou wouldst not meddle with the creature' PKM 61. 5; 'to, into', with verbs of motion: *ynteu a aeth yg castell Dymolt* Lat. *'in castellum Dimilioc se recepit'* BD 137. 7–8, *yd aethant yn eu llongeu* 'they went to their ships' 19. 8, *a dyuot yn y uryt ac yn y uedwl uynet y hela* 'and it came into his head and heart to go a-hunting' PKM 1. 3. 'against': *ymchuelvn an arueu yn an gelynyon* Lat. *'uertamus arma in hostes'* BD 118. 30–31 (= *yn erbyn an gelynyon* RB 158. 4).

It is used before the verbal noun in the periphrastic construction with the verb 'to be', §§ 119 *a*, 120 *a*, 145. It is used with a verbal noun to form a participle or sub-predicate: *ac yn tynnu y gledyf attaw y dywawt* 'and drawing his sword towards him, he said' YCM 61. 11, *ny welei neb ef yn llad y gwyr* 'no one could see him slaying the men' PKM 46. 6.

N. A form *yn* serves as predicative particle before nouns and adjectives (§§ 21 *d*, 22, 145) in a nominal sub-predicate: *mi a'th roessum yn wreic y*

Uanawydan uab Llyr 'I have given thee as wife to Manawydan son of Llŷr' PKM 50. 21; it also serves as adverbial particle with adjectives, § 250. This *yn* is probably not to be identified with the preposition, but rather with a primitive form of the article, see Arwyn Watkins, B xix. 295–315.

§ 245. *Yn* is found in the following composite prepositions:

(*a*) *Yn annat* 'before, in preference to, in particular'; generally with *neb*, *dim*, *un*, &c.: *heb ymgyfaruot ac ef yn annat neb* 'without meeting him of all men' (lit. 'rather than anybody') SG 34. 22. As adverb, 'especially, particularly': *Ac yn annat llawen oed Arthur* 'And especially was Arthur glad' SG 10. 22–23. *Annat* is found without *yn*: *O chlywy diaspat dos wrthi, a diaspat gwreic anat diaspat o'r byt* 'If thou hear an outcry, make towards it, and a woman's outcry above any cry in the world' WM 119–20.

(*b*) *Yg kyfeir* 'opposite, towards, for' (*kyfeir* 'direction, region, part'): *yuallen a oed yghyueir drws y pebyll* 'there was an apple-tree opposite the entrance of the pavilion' WM 449. 18–19, *yg kyfeir blaen yr auon y tu a'r gollewin y kerdwn* 'towards the source of the river westwards was I journeying' 184. 15–17, *a'r neill hanner y'r bwyt a'r llyn a gymerth Peredur idaw ehun, a'r llall a adawd yghyfeir y uorwyn* 'and one half of the food and drink Peredur took for himself, and the other half he left for the maiden' 121. 1–3, *can mu yghyfeir pob cantref o'e arglwydiaeth* 'a hundred kine for every cantref of his lordship' LlB 3. 17.

(*c*) *Yg kylch* 'around, concerning' (*kylch* 'circle'): *Peredur a glywei gordyar gwyr a meirch yg kylch y kastell* 'Peredur could hear the clamour of men and horses around the castle' WM 147. 25–27, *a dodi golhwythyon ar vereu yg kylch y tan* 'and set chops on spits around the fire' 255. 16–17, *a guyrda y am hynny, mal y gwedei ynghylch brenhin* 'and besides these, noblemen, as was seemly around a king' PKM 29. 7–8, *kanys llei vyd goual dyn a'y bryder a'y lavur yg kylch ychydic noc yg kylch llawer* 'for less will be man's care and anxiety and toil concerning a little than (it will be) concerning much' B ii. 33.

Yg kylch o gylch 'round about': *y teyrnassoed ereill yn eu kylch ogylch* 'the other kingdoms round about them' Hg MSS ii. 248. 20.

(*d*) *Yn drws* 'at the entrance to, in front of' (*drws* 'door, entrance,

estuary', cf. *yn nrws tywi auon* 'at the estuary of the river Tywi' Pen 20. 81, see B ix. 130–1): *yn nrws ryt* 'at the entrance to the ford' BT 56. 25, *Pan sauei yn drws pebyll* 'When he stood at the entrance to (or 'in front of') the tent' CLlH 6. 34[a], *nachaf er holl ebestyl yn disgynnv en drws e ty* 'behold, all the apostles landing in front of the house' B x. 30. 26, *nachaf y guelynt bvrn o weissyon yeueinc yn guare yn drvs porth y dinas* 'behold, they could see a group of young lads playing before the gate of the city' BD 101. 5–6. Cf. Ir. *i ndorus*, see ZCP viii. 348–9, B viii. 20–21; cf. also *ar drws* § 206 *c*.

(*e*) *Yn erbyn* 'against' (*erbyn* § 216): *ac ymlad yn ehouyn yn erbyn Emreis* 'and fight fearlessly against Emreis' BD 119. 31, *Nyt af i yn erbyn hynny* 'I will not go against that' PKM 24. 2; 'towards, to meet': *Aet un . . . yn y herbyn y wybot pwy yw* 'Let someone go to meet her to find out who she is' PKM 9. 18–19, *Kyuodi a oruc ynteu yn eu herbyn* 'He rose up to meet them' 65. 6–7, *Yna yd aeth kennadeu yn y erbyn y wahawd* 'Then messengers went to meet him (and) to invite him' 85. 2, *nachaf y gwelynt yn dyuot yn eu herbyn gwreic wedw* 'behold they could see coming towards them a widow' BDe 16. 1.

(*f*) *Yg gwarthaf* 'at the top / peak of, on top of, upon' (*gwarthaf* 'highest point, top, summit' § 41 n. 5): *yg gwarthaf Arwystli* 'in the uplands of Arwystli' BR 1. 3, *a'y daraw dyrnawd tostlym . . . ygwarthaf y benn* 'and struck him a painful-sharp blow on the crown of his head' WM 441–2. Cf. *ar warthaf* § 206 *h*.

(*g*) *Yg gwyd* 'in the presence of' (*gwyd* 'presence', Ir. *fiad*): *or twg . . . yg gwyd offeirat* 'if he swears in the presence of a priest' LlB 35. 21–22, *Neus rodes y uelly, Arglwydes, yg gwyd gwyrda* 'He has so given it, lady, in the presence of nobles' PKM 14. 7–8.

(*h*) *Yn herwyd* 'as regards' (*herwyd* § 219): *yn herwyd ymlad a frouedigaeth y gorff* 'as regards resisting fleshly temptation' PKM 7. 29, *yn herwyd gueledigaeth* 'in appearance' 24. 16.

(*i*) *Yn hyt* 'throughout' (*hyt* 'length'): *en hyt e Garawys* 'throughout Lent' B ix. 147. 18, *yn hyt y oes* 'throughout his life' WM 463. 29–30.

(*j*) *Ymlaen* 'in front of, before' (*blaen* 'front, point'): *Gwrthrychyat . . . a dylyir y enrydedu ymlaen pawb yn y llys* 'The

successor is to be honoured before (i.e. 'in preference to') all in the court' LlB 4. 17–19.

(*k*) *Yn lle* 'in place of, instead of' (*lle* 'place'): *ac y ganet Seth yn lle Avel* 'and Seth was born in place of Abel' LlA 13. 19, *A phryn rei ieueinc yn eu lle* 'And buy young ones instead of them' B ii. 14. 14. It is occasionally used for *yn* (§ 244) as a predicative and adverbial particle: *y gvr oed yn lle amheravdyr* 'the man who was emperor' BD 54. 28, *Minneu a'e kymeraf yn lle kyghor* 'I shall take it as counsel' BR 8. 12, *my a dywedaf ywch yn lle gwir panyw un ohonawch a'm ryd i* 'I will tell you in truth that one of you will betray me' Hg MSS ii. 251. 29–30. See further BY 114, BR 45.

(*l*) *Yn llwrw | llwrwf* (see YBH 122) 'in the direction of, after' (*llwrw* 'track, course', Ir. *lorg*): *y dygvydassant hvy ynn llwrw eu hwynep y'r llaur* 'they fell on (lit. 'in the direction of') their faces to the ground' B ix. 333. 26, *hyny dygwyd yn llwrw y benn ar lawr y neuad* 'so that he falls headlong on the floor of the hall' YBH 4. 209–11, *Yna y byryawd ef neit yn y gerwyn yn llwrwf y deudroet* 'Then he made a leap into the tub, landing on his feet' (lit. 'in the trail of his feet') 35. 2222–4; *llwrw* alone: *llwrw essiwet ket* 'after dearth of largess' R 1351. 20.

(*m*) *Ym plith* 'among, amidst': *A hwnnw yn marchogaeth ym plith y llu* 'And he riding in amongst the host' BR 10. 14, *Nyt oes arnaf i ouyn cael kymrıw, neu archolleu, ym plith hynn o niuer* 'I do not fear to receive wounds or blows amidst such a host as this' PKM 9. 8–9.

(*n*) *Ymysc* 'among, amidst'; see § 92 *d*, WG 417.

(*o*) *Ym penn* 'at the end of, after' (*penn* 'head, end'): *Paham nat anuones ef yr yspryt glann ym penn y deugein nyhev* 'Why did he not send the Holy Ghost at the end of the forty days?' LlA 21. 31, *Ac ym pen guers y kyuodes guas yeuanc clotuavr* 'And after a while there arose a famous young man' BD 32. 10.

(*p*) *Ym pwyth* 'in return / payment for' (*pwyth* 'payment, requital, price', see CLlH 166, CA 158): *ag eu kynnig uddunt ym pwyth eu bradwryaeth* 'and offered them to them in return for their treachery' HGrC 148. 17–18. It is also found as an exclamation, meaning 'pray, please!', &c.; note the following examples: *ymhwyth na urath y march onyt yn wedeid ac yn dyledus* 'pray do

not spur the horse but moderately and duly' YBH 9. 561–2, *ac ymhwyth na wrthot titheu vygharyat i* 'and I pray thee, do not for thy part refuse my love' 11. 684–5, *ac ymhwyth taw a son wrthyf a gat ym orfowys* 'and I pray thee, speak not to me and let me rest' 12. 781–2, see p. 92.

(*q*) *Yn ol* 'after' (*ol* 'track, course'): *en e ol enteu ef a wnaethpvyt arall en archescop* 'after him, another was made archbishop' B x. 22. 24; with verbs of motion: *a delei en e ol enteu o amperodron* 'all the emperors that would come after him' B ix. 339. 5, *Yn ol honno y kerdwys ef* 'After her he went' PKM 60. 16, *yn ol yr arueu yd aeth hi* 'she went after the arms' 82. 22, *y kyuodes y brenhin ac yd anuones yn ol Bown* 'the king arose and sent for (lit. 'after') Bown' YBH 44. 2858–60.

(*r*) *Yn wysc* 'in the direction of, after' (*wysc* 'track, course', cf. *yn llwrw* above): *yny want y mab yn wysc y benn yn y gynneu* 'he thrust the boy headlong into the blazing fire' PKM 43. 26, *Mae yr aniueileit yd aethawch yn eu hwysc?* 'Where are the animals you went after?' 71. 22–23.

§ 246. Yr (ModW *er*) 'during': OW *ir ir tri ui. aur* 'during the three six (leg. eight) hours' Comp, MW *erioet* § 247 *e*; 'from, since', with a noun indicating a point of time: *yr hynny hyt hediw* 'from that day to this' PKM 92. 5; *yr yn*: *a uu yr yn uab yn gwassanaethu idaw* 'who has been from boyhood serving Him' BDe 2. 5; *yr pan* § 273; *yr ys*, with a noun indicating a period of time § 147 *e*.

'for, because of', cause: *paub er caryat Crist en bryssyav e tu a'r egluys* 'everyone for the love of Christ hurrying to the church' B ix. 145. 4, *na chellweiria nep nac yr anaf a rodo Duw arnaw nac yr heint* 'do not mock anyone neither because of a deformity that God may have inflicted upon him nor because of a disease' ii. 27. 3, before a verbal noun: *na thremykych nep yr y vot yn dlodach no thi* 'that thou despise not anyone because he is poorer than thou' B ii. 27. 2. When the meaning is negative, the construction is *yr na* + verb (§ 183 *a*): *Darogan yw idaw kaffel etiued o honat ti, yr nas caffo o arall* 'It is prophesied that he shall have offspring of thee, since he has not had it of another' RM 101. 23 (= *kanys ry gaffo* WM 453. 39. *yr na* here is probably causal and not

concessive, despite ChSDR 44. 51 *kyn nys kaffo* 'although he has not had it'. The latter is best explained as reflecting the spread of the concessive meaning of *yr*; in ModW *er na* can only mean 'though . . . not').

'for, for the sake of', purpose: *ti a wely a wneuthum i yrot ti* 'thou wilt see what I have done for thee' PKM 6. 20–21, *ny adwn ni drwc arnam ny hunein yr dyn yn y byt* 'we will not allow ourselves to be wronged for any one in the world' 21. 5, *ac yrot titheu mi a'y cadwn* 'and for thy sake too I would keep it' 57. 21–22, *yr anryded y arwndel vy march* 'in honour of Arundel my horse' YBH 46. 2929 (cf. *ar anryded* § 205), *yr lles* § 205, before a verbal noun: *yr hvnn a diodeuaud yr an guaret ni* 'He who suffered in order to deliver us' B v. 202. 29.

'despite, notwithstanding': *yr a uyrit yndi ny bydei lawnach no chynt* 'despite all that was put into it, it was no fuller than before' PKM 16. 20, *yr a welsynt o ouut yn y gwyd, ac yr a gewssynt e hun, ny doy gof udunt wy dim* 'notwithstanding all the grief they had seen before their eyes, and notwithstanding all they had experienced, they did not remember anything' 46. 26–27, before an equative adjective § 45, *meint* § 102.

With verbs of buying, selling, giving, &c., 'for, in exchange for': *gwerthu yr chweugeint, ac elchwyl y brynu yr punt* 'to sell for ten shillings, and again to buy it for a pound' B ii. 9. 27, *Mi a rodaf seith punt it yrdaw* 'I will give thee seven pounds for it' PKM 63. 15.

Yr mwyn 'for the sake of' (*mwyn* 'value, enjoyment', Ir. *mian*): *yr mwyn y gwr mwyhaf a gery* 'for the sake of the man thou lovest best' PKM 12. 7–8; 'because of, on account of': *A mi'n glaf er mwyn gloywferch* 'And I sick on account of a fine girl' GDG 167. 1.

ADVERBS

§ 247. Most of the following are old forms, used exclusively as adverbs:

(*a*) *yman* 'here' LlA 30. 6, *ymma* PKM 15. 11, *odyman* 'hence' CLlH 8. 45[a], *odyyma* SG 7. 35, *odyma* BDe 5. 22 (*ody* § 223

n. 1), *hyt yman* 'hither' WM 186. 11, *draw ac yman* R 1369. 17–18, *hvnt ac ema* B x. 28. 34.

ynaeth 'then' HGCr 28. 55, *yna* 'then, there' YBH 7. 391, 24. 1546, *odynaeth* 'thereafter' R 581. 41–42, *odyna* BDe 17. 1 (*ody* § 223 n. 1).

ynoeth 'thither' BBC 66. 4–5, *yno* 'there, thither', and also 'then' in MW, *odynoed* 'thence' BT 19. 17, *odyno* BDe 17. 13 (*ody* § 223 n. 1).

yn § 76.

(*b*) *doe* 'yesterday', *echdoe* 'the day before yesterday', *neithwyr* 'last night' PKM 7. 18, *ymannos* 'the other night' R 1264. 34.

hediw 'today', *henoeth* 'tonight', *heno*.

auory 'tomorrow', *auore* PKM 3. 15, 19. 5.

trannoeth 'the following day', *tradwy* 'the third day (from today)' YBH 13. 856, *trennyd* 'the day after tomorrow'.

eleni 'this year', *yr llyned* 'last year' PKM 75. 17.

beunyd 'every day', *beunoeth* 'every night'.

(*c*) Early MW (1) *nw* 'now': *Nu ny'm car i Guendit* 'Now Gwenddydd loves me not' BBC 50. 1, *ryued yw gennyf nu na'm atwaynost* 'Now I am surprised that thou dost not know me' WM 386. 25–26, *Y'th law di nu y rodaf i* 'Into thy hands I now give it' 413. 28.

(2) *moch* (Ir. *mos*) 'soon, early, quickly': *Moch guelher y niuer gan Elgan* 'Soon will be seen the host of (lit. 'with') Elgan' YMTh 57. 10.

(3) *rwy* 'too much': *rwy yt werthey Arthur* 'overmuch dost thou asperse Arthur' WM 470. 32, *Gwreic y del idi gleuyt y gwraged yn rwy* 'A woman in whom the menses flow excessively' EC viii. 74. 11; as a pronominal: *Nyt gwell rwy no digawn* 'Too much is not better than enough' RBH 963.

(*d*) *etto* 'again, yet', *edwaeth* HGCr 28. 47, *etwan* PKM 48. 8, *etton* R 1264. 18, *etwa, etwo*. *-t-* < *-d-* due to provection before *w*, see § 17 *a* 3.

hefyt 'also, besides'. In MW (but not in Mod. lit. W.) it is used in negative as well as affirmative sentences: *Ny wydwn achos it heuyt y'm llad i* 'Besides I knew no reason for thee to slay me' PKM 5. 27.

drachefyn § 238.

(*e*) *eissoes* 'nevertheless, however' (ModW 'already'), *eisswys* PKM 20. 8, *eissyoes* LlHen 15. 11, *A chyuarch gwell eissoes y Owein a oruc ef* 'But nevertheless he greeted Owein' BR 14. 14.

erioet 'ever', *eryoet* B x. 27. 13, *eiryoet* ix. 47. 2, *yroet* PKM 3. 12, *eiroet* 3. 9. It consists of the preposition *yr* 'during' (§ 246), the possessive pronoun 3. sing. masc. *i*, and the noun *oet* 'age, time'. *i* became *i̯*, which caused affection of *er* > *eir*; occasionally *i̯* was dropped (§ 8 *b* n.), hence *eiroet*. The expression originally meant 'during his time', &c. Forms with the 1. sing. of the possessive pronoun are occasionally found: *ermoet* (*er* + '*m* + *oet*) ChO 5. 21, also *eirmoet* CLlH 10. 16[b] (*eir-* by analogy with *eiryoet*). *erioet*, however, became general, and developed as an impersonal adverbial form.

byth, *vyth* 'ever', usually in negative, interrogative, and conditional sentences: *hyt na diffygyei byth e chof hi* 'so that her memory would never fail' B ix. 338. 1, *o deuy di byth y Rufein* 'if ever thou come to Rome' WM 188. 21–22, *goreu a allo uyth a wna inni* 'the best that ever he can will he do for us' PKM 25. 4, *byth bellach* 'evermore' BDe 21. 21–22, *byth wedi* 'ever after' R 583. 3; *a phyth* R 1028. 6, B ix. 334. 25, with spirant mutation (< *p-*) is analogical.

y rawc 'in future, for evermore' CLlH 23. 5[c], see L & P 6.

(*f*) *allan(n)* 'out', see § 92 *d*; it rhymes with *-ann* in early poetry, BT 27. 20; *ody allan* 'from without' (*ody* § 223 n. 1): *onyt agorit ody allan* 'unless it were opened from without' YBH 37. 2377; *allan o* 'out of' § 231.

y maes 'out', see § 224; *odyuays* 'from without' (*ody* § 223 n. 1): *Milys odyuays a gayawd y porth* 'Milys from without closed the door' YBH 37. 2372; *y maes o* 'out of' § 224 *a*.

y mywn 'in, within': *heb vynet y mywn* 'without going in' YBH 23. 1491, *ac yny uyd hynny o'r ureich a'r ebawl ganthaw ef y mywn* 'so that that much of the arm together with the colt was in with him' PKM 22. 20–21; as preposition (see § 225), *ody vywn* '(from) within' (*oďy* § 223 n. 1) YBH 64. 4134, *o vewn* '(from) within': *ene oed e gvaet a'r budred o vewn en llithrav allan* 'so that the blood and filth from within was flowing out' B ix. 338. 16.

y ymdeith 'away': *a gyrru yr erchwys a ladyssei y carw e ymdeith* 'and drove away the pack that had killed the stag' PKM 2. 1;

ymdeith: *Tranoeth ef a gerdawd Peredur ymdeith* 'On the morrow Peredur went away' WM 145. 23–24; *ymeith*: *Ffown odyma ymeith* 'Let us flee away from here' BDe 8. 22, *ymeith o* 'away from' § 231.

adref 'home', destination with verbs of motion: *ymchoelut adref a oruc Boya* 'Boya returned home' BDe 8. 14; *gartref* 'at home' (locative) RB 15. 5–6.

(*g*) *hwnt* 'hence, yonder', *ody hwnt* 'from yonder'.

draw 'yonder'.

vry 'up, above' (oblique case (? loc.) of *bre* 'hill' < **brigā*); *obry* 'down, below'.

(*h*) *gynt* 'formerly, before' (< *cynt* § 42): *Amgen urys gerdet nit oed genthi hi no'r dyd gynt* 'Her pace was no different from the day before' PKM 10. 28–29, *ynteu a rodes yr vn atteb ac a rodassei gynt* 'he gave the same answer as he had given before' BDe 14. 21 (*a*/*na chynt* with spirant mutation of *cynt*, see *gwedy* below).

gynneu 'a (short) while ago': *y geir a dywede(i)sti gynneu* 'the word thou didst speak a short while ago' WM 153. 23–24, *Paham na elleist di bregethu y ni gynneu* 'Why wert thou not able to preach to us just now?' BDe 3. 21, *gynne* YBH 15. 977.

gwedy 'afterwards': *na chynt na gwedy* 'neither before nor after' BDe 3. 6. As preposition, see § 217.

bellach 'from now on, henceforth, again' (comp. of *pell* 'far', see also § 46 n. 1): *Nit oes ansawd y mi y'ch kynnal chwi bellach* 'I am not in a position to maintain you from now on' PKM 6. 5, *ni'th elwir bellach byth yn uorwyn* 'thou shalt not ever again be called a maiden' 79. 7–8.

(*i*) (*y*)*velly* 'so, thus': *Ac yuelly y teruyna y geing hon yma o'r Mabynogyon* 'And thus ends this branch of the Mabinogion' PKM 27. 27, *ny wharyei weisson vy mam a mifi velly* 'the servants of my mother would not play with me thus' WM 124. 31–32.

N. (*y*)*velly* is from *evelhyn* (= Bret. *evelhenn*) < **hevel hyn* (*haval* < **samal-* (cf. Lat. *simil-is*) + *hyn*; cf. Ir. *amal sin*, OIr. *samlaid*); see WG 181, 419, AP 35.

(*j*) *breid* 'hardly, scarcely, with difficulty', usually in the mixed order (§ 146): *breid y diegis* 'with difficulty did he escape' RB 319. 11; *a breid*: *a breid y dieinc Hu ehun* 'with difficulty will Hu

himself escape' B v. 214. 37–38; *o vreid*: *o ureid y diaghyssant y ganthav* 'with difficulty did they escape from him' BD 15. 30, *o vreid y doeth nep onadunt y eu gwlat* 'scarcely did any of them come to their own country' HGrC 124. 7, *ac y dihengis ynteu o ureid* 'and he escaped with difficulty' WM 463. 35–36; *breid o* 'hardly, scarcely' (*o* 'if' § 272): *breid o diaghei neb* 'hardly would anyone escape' BD 10. 13; *breid | abreid na* 'almost, nearly': *breid na holldes* 'he nearly burst' YCM 54. 23, *breid na thorres y gallon* 'he nearly broke his heart' YBH 8. 498, *abreid na cholles y synwyr* 'he nearly lost his reason' 67. 4348.

(*k*) *ac atuyd* 'perhaps, perchance' (*ac* + 3. sing. fut. of *aduot* § 150): *a phei mynhwn vn wreic ac atuyd awch whaer chwi a vynnwn yn gyntaf* 'but if I desired any woman, perhaps it is your sister I would desire the first' WM 158. 34–36. Also *atuyd*: *kanys atuyd ae collet ar dothoed idaw, neu ynteu yn medylyaw am y wreic uwyhaf a garei* 'for it may be either that loss has come to him, or that he is thinking of the woman he loves best' WM 142. 2–4.

ac attoed 'perhaps, perchance' (*ac* + 3. sing. imperf. of *aduot* § 150): *agattoed ti yv yr Iessu hvnnv* 'perhaps thou art that Jesus' B xiv. 270. 7, also xiv. 264. 36, RM 212. 20 (= *atuyd* WM 142. 2 above), Hg MSS ii. 85. 5.

(*l*) *y gyt* 'together': *A'r nos honno kyscu y gyt a wnaethant* 'And that night they slept together' PKM 85. 15–16, *pa furu y kehynt uot yg kyt* 'in what way they might stay together' 85. 20.

(*m*) *haeach* 'almost': *yny daruu eu dystryw yn gvbyl hayach* 'until they were almost completely destroyed' BD 7. 4; with the negative, 'not much, hardly at all': *nyt arhoes ef haeach* 'he did not stay much' SG 38. 6. With the negative it may serve as a pronominal, meaning 'hardly anyone / anything': *ny welei hayach* 'he could see hardly anything' WM 393. 1, *ny dieghis . . . hayach onadunt yn diuriv dianaf* 'hardly any of them escaped uninjured unhurt' BD 34. 27–28, *Ny buant hayach o enkyt yno* 'They had been hardly any length of time there' PKM 11. 13–14.

haeachen: *llidyaw a oruc Arthur o welet y deu was hayachen wedi eu llad* 'Arthur was angered at seeing his two servants well nigh slain' WM 506. 7–8.

(*n*) *achlân* 'wholly, entirely'. It generally follows the noun or

phrase which it modifies (cf. *oll* § 107 *a*): *Mi a'u colleis oll achlan* 'I have lost them all entirely' CLlH 47. 108[b], *yr hwn a'n gwarchaeod ni achlan ymewn un llestyr* 'who held us entirely in one vessel' B x. 56. 12.

For the use of *yma, gynneu, draw, gynt* with nouns, see § 94.

For *drwod, racco, heibyaw, uchot, issot, yghot, yngo*, see § 63 n. 3.

§ 248. Some common adverbial expressions consist of nouns governed by prepositions. (Forms such as *erioet, allan(n), drachefyn*, &c., which originally consisted of preposition + noun, but which were felt as simple adverbial forms by the MW period, are given in § 247 above.)

ar neilltu 'on one side, separately, individually' (*neilltu* 'one side'), see B xiii. 74, xv. 204; *ar untu* 'together, on end, continuously' (*untu* 'one side'), see B xiii. 73–74, xvi. 104; *ar hynt, ar llet*, &c., see § 204.

ger llaw 'nearby'. (As preposition, see § 209 *b*.)

y vyny(d) 'up' (*mynyd* 'mountain'): *Un a gyuodes y uynyd* 'One rose up' PKM 9. 19–20, *Kyuot y vyny* 'Rise up' BDe 7. 20.

y waeret 'down' (*gwaeret* 'slope, declivity'): *e diffrvythws e dwylav o benn y elined e waeret* 'his hands withered from his elbows down' B x. 31. 24; *y'r gwaeret*: *disgynnu a wnaeth ef ar hyt y raf y'r gwaeret* 'he descended down along the rope' YBH 17. 1129–30.

o'r blaen 'in front' (*blaen* 'end, front'): *Hu a anuones o'r blaen y rybudyaw y urenhines* 'Hu sent on in front to warn the queen' B v. 211. 1, *a gollwng y kennadeu o'r blaen* 'and (he) let the messengers go on in front' BDe 16. 4.

o'r diwed 'at last' (*diwed* 'end').

Expressions such as the following are also found:

wyneb ar wyneb 'face to face' (*wyneb* 'face'): *y ymlad a'm gwrthwynepwyr wynep ar wynep* 'to fight with my opponents face to face' B x. 54. 15. Cf. *tal yn tal* (*tal* 'front, end'): *ac ymlad tal yn tal a'r neb a ymerbynno a mi* 'and fight face to face with him who shall oppose me' B ix. 329. 2.

erbyn yn erbyn 'one against the other' (*erbyn* § 216): *pan rodont eu deu wystyl, erbyn yn erbyn, yn llaw y brenhin am vrawt* 'when

they place their two pledges one against the other in the hand of the king for judgement' LlB 100. 24.

eneit dros eneit 'life for life' (*eneit* 'life, soul'): *yna yd aethpwyt eneit dros eneit ac ef* 'then they joined with him life for life' WM 503. 3–4.

anghen yn anghen 'by sheer force' (*anghen* 'necessity, battle'): *a'e yrru anghen yn anghen yn Hafren* 'and drove him by sheer force into the Severn' WM 504. 13.

ol yn ol 'one after the other, in succession' (*ol* § 245 *q*): *gwarthec gwynyon clustgochyon, kymeint ac a anhont o Argoel hyt yn llys Dinefwr ol yn ol* 'white cattle with red ears, as many as shall extend one after the other from Argoel to the court of Dinefwr' LlB 4. 4, *galw a oruc yr athro attaw y holl disgyblon ol yn ol* 'the teacher called his pupils to him one after the other' BDe 5. 7–8.

gwers tra gwers, see § 238.

blith dra chymysc 'mixed, in a medley, promiscuously' (*blith* < *plith*, cf. *ym plith* § 245 *m*, *tra* § 238, *kymysc* 'mixture') BD 120. 14, 122. 2.

law heb law 'promiscuously, at random, casually' (*llaw* 'hand', *heb* § 218): *kyscu pob un lau heb lau gan uam y gilid* 'each slept casually with the other's mother' PKM 48. 5–6.

§ 249. Nouns may be used adverbially without a preposition. (On lenition in such nouns, see § 19.) Nouns denoting time; duration or point of time: *yn Hardlech y bydwch seith mlyned* 'in Harddlech you will be for seven years' PKM 45. 2–3, *yno y bu y nos honno* 'there he was that night' 1. 7, *Val yd oed Wydyon diwarnawt yn y wely* 'As Gwydion was one day in his bed' 78. 3.

treigyl 'once, one time' ('turn'): *A threigyl yg gwylva er arch-angel hvnnv yd oed torvoed en bryssyav o'r egluys* 'And once on the feast of that archangel crowds were hurrying from the church' B ix. 335. 3.

treigylgweith 'once, one time' (*gweith* 'time'): *A threigylgweith yd oed yn Arberth* 'And once upon a time he was at Arberth' PKM 1. 2.

dydgweith 'one day' (*dyd* 'day' + *gweith*): *dydgweith y doeth Dauyd a'e disgyblon* 'one day David and his disciples came' BDe 7. 4.

boreugweith 'one morning' (*boreu* 'morning' + *gweith*) YBH 48. 3110.

eilweith 'a second time, again' (*eil* 'second' + *gweith*) BDe 14. 20.

weithieu 'at times, sometimes' (pl. of *gweith*).

weithon 'now' (*y weith hon*): *wrth hynny yd achwannegir dy enw di weithon* 'therefore thy name shall now be increased' B v. 208. 32–33, *keis uorwyn a uo is dy draet weithon* 'seek now a maiden to be under thy feet' PKM 74. 7.

gwers 'a while': *Wylaf wers; tawaf wedy* 'I shall weep a while; then I shall be silent' CLlH 35. 18c, *A chyt a mi y bydy y wers hon* 'And with me shalt thou be this while' WM 128. 22; *gwers . . . gwers* = Lat. *nunc . . . nunc* BD 7. 27–28; *bob eilwers*, see § 106 *b*.

yn awr 'now' (*yn*, probably an old form of the article (cf. Bret., Corn. *an*, see L & P 218), + *awr* 'hour').

ruth(u)r 'a (good) while' ('a rush, attack'): *gwedy kyscu ruthur o honaw* 'after he had slept a good while' SG 70. 29, *gwedy eu bot ruthur o'r nos yn gwylyaw velly* 'after they had been for a good part of the night watching thus' 88. 11; distance: *a chilyaw a mynet ruthyr y wrthaw* 'and withdrew and went some distance from him' WM 251. 20.

rynnawd 'a (good) while' ('a rush', see CA 181): *guedy bot y uelly rynnavd* 'after being thus for a while' BD 28. 23, *ac y porthes en e dy ehun ef rynnawd o dydyeu* 'and he maintained him in his own house for some days' HGrC 134. 3–4; distance: *tu a'r lle yd oed gwr pengrych gwineu mawr rynawd y wrthaw* 'towards the place where there was a big curly-headed auburn man some distance from him' BR 19. 8, also WM 225. 28. Cf. *ac a'e byrywys ergyt mawr y wrthaw* 'and threw him a good distance away from him' WM 141. 14–15 (*ergyt* 'a throw, blow').

gartref 'at home' § 247 *f*.

Also *yr amser* (*y*), *y dyd* (*y*), *y ffordd* (*y*), *y mod* (*y*), &c., followed by a relative clause, see § 71.

N. In the earlier language, the object of destination with verbs of motion is expressed without a preposition (see § 21 *c*). This construction occurs mostly with names of countries, cities, towns, locations, &c.: *guedy y dyuot enys Prydein* 'after he had come to the island of Britain' BD 65. 23, *ymchuelut a wnaeth Arthur enys Prydein* 'Arthur returned to the

island of Britain' 153. 20, *y racdywededigyon elynyon uchot a foassynt Ywerdon* 'the above afore-mentioned enemies that had fled to Ireland' 80. 28, *y gvr kyntaf gvedy Brutus a aeth Freinc a llynghes ganthav* 'the first man after Brutus who went to France with a fleet' 24. 13, *canys Auarvy yr athoed Ruuein y gyt ac Ulkessar* 'for Afarwy had gone to Rome with Julius Caesar' 55. 5, *Myned... Wynedd ydd wyf* 'Going to Gwynedd am I' GDG 27. 3–4 (often found in Dafydd ap Gwilym, see GDG 443). See ZCP xvii. 98–101, CA 84–85, BD lvii, TC 226–7.

§ 250. An adverbial expression may be formed from the particle *yn* / *y* + adjective, usually to indicate manner: *a phaub en kerdet en ryd e'r demyl gyssygredic* 'and all walking freely to the sacred temple' B ix. 340. 24, *yn llawen ti a'e keffy* 'gladly shalt thou have it' PKM 16. 14, *medylyaw a wnaeth yn hir* '(she) meditated for long' 7. 10, *kilyaw y gyflym* '(they) withdrew hurriedly' 55. 11, *fo y gewylydus a oruc Pandrasus* 'Pandrasus fled disgracefully' BD 6. 22.

With compared forms. Equative: *a'y gadw yn gyhyt a hynn* 'and to keep it as long as this' PKM 78. 25–26. Comparative: *yr hon a garei ynteu y wuy no dim daearavl* 'whom he loved more than anything earthly' BD 136. 26. Superlative: *a'y chynhal yn oreu a allom* 'and to defend it as best we can' PKM 82. 19.

N. Certain prepositions are occasionally used with adjectives to form adverbial expressions: *ar fyr* 'shortly, quickly': *kyuot y uynyd ar uyrr* 'rise up quickly' PKM 16. 26 (cf. *ar fyrder* § 204); *o bell* 'from afar': *ef a glywei o bell llevein er eneidyeu* 'he could hear from afar the crying of the souls' B x. 26. 11; *o newyd* 'anew' B xiv. 259. 43.

§ 251. The adjective may be used adverbially without *yn* / *y*:

(*a*) When it occurs at the beginning of the sentence in the mixed or abnormal order (§§ 146, 199): *ys aflwydyannus y daruu y myui* 'unsuccessfully has it turned out for me' SG 288. 19, *Doeth a fwyllawc y medreist* 'Wisely and prudently didst thou act' WM 391. 33.

Compared forms. Equative: *kystal y doi y gof y'r dyn eithaf yn yr holl gyuoeth yr oet* [*ac idaw ynteu*] 'as well was the tryst remembered by the furthest man in the whole kingdom as by himself' PKM 5. 9–10. Comparative: *Hwyrach y mynnwn i efo yna no chynt* 'Less eagerly did I desire him then than before' WM 135. 17. Superlative: *goreu y gueda arnaw Pryderi uab Pwyll Penn*

Annwn '(the name) Pryderi son of Pwyll Penn Annwn best becomes him' PKM 26. 12.

(*b*) Compared forms are found without *yn*/*y* even when they occur medially after the verb: *ny adei Hu y verch y wrthaw mor bell a hynny* 'Hu would not let his daughter away from him so far as that' B v. 219. 34 (*yn*/*y* is never used before *mor* + adjective), *yr awr honn kerda gyntaf y gellych* 'now proceed as quickly as thou canst' YCM 3. 3.

The comparative *mwy*/*vwy* 'more' is often used adverbially; note the following examples: *cany wyr gwreic atnabot yawn mwy no cham* 'for a woman knows not how to recognize right more than wrong' B ii. 29. 13, *na thebic panyw amdanat ti y byder yn dywedut mwy noc am ereill* 'do not think that it is of thee that people are talking more than of others' ii. 30. 7, *Y Mab a anet o'r Tat ehunan, ac ny wnaethpuyt ac ny chrevyt moe no'r Tat* 'The Son was born of the Father himself, and was not made nor created any more than the Father' v. 199. 5.

mwy vwy 'more and more, all the more, increasingly': *moli duw uwy uwy a orugant wynteu* 'they praised God all the more' B ix. 148. 28. *nes nes* 'nearer and nearer': *a chyn chwannocket vu ef y welet yr hyn a weles ac y denessawd nes nes* 'and so desirous was he of seeing what he saw that he approached nearer and nearer' SG 56. 10.

(*c*) With the comparative a relative construction may be employed; the adjective serves as nominal predicate in a relative clause, thus: *Am kynhelych a uo gwell* 'Do thou support me better' CLlH 10. 10^{b}, *y drigyaw a vo hwy* 'to dwell longer' BDe 19. 21, *o doy a uo nes* 'if thou comest nearer' YBH 20. 1285–6, *eisted a wei hwy* 'to sit longer' PKM 37. 3, *y hanrydedu hi a uei uwy* 'to honour her more' B x. 22. 12–13, *Ti a allut dywedut a uei hygarach* 'Thou couldst have spoken more pleasingly' WM 142. 27.

(*d*) When compared forms used adverbially occur in a relative clause where the relative is subject or object, they are placed after the antecedent and immediately in front of the clause, thus, Equative: *gwr kymeint a gasseir yma ac efo* 'a man who is so much hated here as he' SG 137. 32. Comparative: *nyt oed marchawc urdawl uwy a gerit ym pob gwlat noc ef* 'there was no ordained

knight that was more beloved in every country than he' SG 117. 35. Superlative: *y gwr mwyhaf a gery* 'the man thou lovest best' PKM 12. 8. See B ix. 139–40.

(*e*) *yn*/*y* is not used, when the adjective used adverbially forms a compound (close or loose) with a following verb: *Mynych edrych dy da* 'Attend to thy cattle often' B ii. 14. 14, *ac a hir drigyawd ar hynny* 'and dwelt for long upon them' viii. 137. 22–23, *na well wedei y neb y neges honno noc y Wenwlyd* 'that that mission befitted no one better than Gwenwlyd' YCM 118. 11.

N. The adjective *newyd* 'new' is employed before a verbal noun to denote the immediate past; the verbal noun is usually passive in meaning: *a'e varyf yn newyd eillaw* 'and his beard newly trimmed' BR 4. 2–3 (also YBH 34. 2170). It will be noticed that in this example *yn* is used. *Newyd* is, however, found before the verbal noun without a preposition, in which case its use resembles that of prepositions like *gwedy* (see § 217). Note the following examples: *wynt a welsant llythyr newyd wneuthur* 'they saw letters recently written' SG 3. 11–12, *Bwrt a arganuu gwr marw gwaetlyt newyd lad yn y ymyl* 'Bort perceived a dead blood-stained man just killed by his side' 104. 25, *a'r prenn . . . a oed wynnach noc eiry pan vei newyd odi* 'and the wood was whiter than snow when it would be newly fallen' 126. 38–39, *kanys effeirat yw newyd vrdaw* 'for he is a priest newly ordained' YBH 20. 1284–5.

CONJUNCTIONS

CO-ORDINATIVE

The following serve to connect two or more co-ordinate words, phrases, or sentences:

§ 252. A(c) 'and'; *a* before consonants, *ac* [≡ *ag*] before vowels: *Pwyll a Rhiannon, Kulhwch ac Olwen.* Examples abound in the narrative prose of MW, which displays a marked preference for co-ordination. Note the following passage: *Pwyll Pendeuic Dyuet a oed yn arglwyd ar seith cantref Dyuet . . . A threigylgweith yd oed yn Arberth . . . a dyuot yn y uryt . . . uynet y hela . . . Ac ef a gy hwynnwys . . . ac a doeth hyt yn Penn Llwyn Diarwya, ac yno y*

bu y nos honno 'Pwyll, Prince of Dyfed, was lord of the seven cantrefs of Dyfed. And once upon a time he was in Arberth, and it came into his mind to go a-hunting. And he set out and came as far as Pen Llwyn Diarwya, and there he was that night' PKM 1. 1–7.

N. 1. *a(c)* occasionally conveys meanings such as 'but, yet, although': *Mi a rodaf y carcharawr itti, ac ny darparysswn y rodi y neb* 'I will give thee the prisoner, although I had not intended to give him to anyone' WM 489. 23–25, *ac ewythyr oed ef y Bown, ac ny wydat Bown y ddeirydeit idaw* 'and an uncle to Bown was he, yet Bown did not know that he was related to him' YBH 34. 2122–4 (= Fr. *mes*, see pp. clxiv, 185).

It is employed before an independent phrase. This is an absolute construction consisting of a noun / pronoun + a nominal predicate (noun, adjective, or verbal noun preceded by *yn*, *wedy*, *heb*, &c.). Although its construction is absolute, the phrase is usually subordinate to the principal clause in meaning (see CFG 26–28): *nyt a mi yn uyw yd aho ef y Gernyw* 'not while I am alive (lit. 'and I alive') shall he go to Cornwall' WM 504. 1–2, *goueileint a dellis yndaw, o gamhet idaw attal y mab ganthaw, ac ef yn gwybot y uot yn uab y wr arall* 'anxiety seized upon him, how wrong it was for him to keep the boy with him, when he knew that he was another man's son' (lit. 'and he knowing . . .') PKM 24. 20–22.

a(c) . . . *a(c)* 'both . . . and': *a hen a yeueing a hydyr a llaw* 'both young and old, both strong and weak' CA 3. 63, *a meirch a gwyr* 'both steeds and men' 30. 745, *a thi a'th kyuoeth* 'both thou and thy possessions' PKM 26. 27, *a hediw a pheunyd* 'both today and every day' 18. 26–27, *ac ef a'y chwe meib* 'both he and his six sons' WM 117. 7–8, *a'e vratwyr a'e elynyon* 'both his traitors and his enemies' HGrC 120. 2.

N. 2. In OW *hacet* 'and' occurs (*hac* + *et*, cf. *noget*, *nogyt*, Lat. *ita*, see B iii. 265).

§ 253. (*a*) **Neu** 'or': *hayarn neu dur* 'iron or steel' B v. 215. 7. *neu ynteu* 'or otherwise', see § 55 *b* 2 n.

(*b*) **ae . . . ae** 'whether / either . . . or', see § 196. *y neill . . . ae . . . ae*, see § 96 *a*.

§ 254. Na(c) 'nor', with the negative; *na(c)* . . . *na(c)* 'neither . . . nor': *Na gwr na gwreic o hynny nyt edewis Riannon* 'Neither man nor woman of those left Rhiannon' PKM 19. 14–15, *ny welynt neb ryw dim, na thy, nac aniueil, na mwc, na than, na dyn, na chyuanhed* 'they could see no manner of thing, neither house nor beast nor smoke nor fire nor man nor dwelling' 51. 27–28.

N. The use of *na* in the following examples should be noted: *mi na vi* 'I and (yet) not I' CA 22. 548, *brenhin na vrenhin* 'a king and (yet) not a king' R 580. 33 (cf. RC xxi. 34), *Rodyn na rodyn* 'Whether they gave or not' CLlH 7. 40^{c}, *gwelit na welit* 'whether he was seen or not seen' RB 289. 34.

na . . . *na* 'whether . . . or': *na duv ar a'vch dycco na pheth arall* 'whether it be a god that may have brought you or something else' BD 92. 23, *pan dycco beich, na mawr na bychan uo, ny welir uyth* 'when he carries a burden, whether it be great or small, it is never seen' WM 465. 3–5. See CA 205, CLlH 91, BD 236–7, L & P 250.

§ 255. Namwyn, &c. 'except, besides, but'. As preposition, with the negative. *namwyn*: *namwyn duw nyt oes dewin* 'there is no seer except God' R 1056. 8–9; *namyn*: *Nyt oes ohonam ni namyn cleisseu a dyrnodeu* 'There is of us nothing except bruises and blows' PKM 20. 25; *namen*: *namen vn gwr o gant ny* (ms. *eny*) *delhei* 'there would not come but one man in a hundred' CA 2. 29. *nam*: *nam seith ny dyrreith o Gaer Sidi* 'save seven none returned from Caer Siddi' BT 54. 24.

As conjunction, *namyn*: *namyn os miui a gar yr amherawdyr deuet hyt yman y'm hol* 'but if it is I whom the emperor loves, let him come hither to fetch me' WM 186. 10–11. *nam*: *nam Gwalchmei ny adawd heb gof gymryt y march* 'but Gwalchmei did not forget to take the horse' SG 209. 9.

N. 1. *Namwyn* is probably from *yn amwyn* (*amwyn* 'to contend for, take, seize', see GPC 103–4), a present participle which developed as a preposition (see Sir Ifor Williams, AP 38–39). *nam* is from *namn* < *namyn* (cf. *ont* < *onyt* 'but', *cans* < *canys* 'because', see WG 55–56); similarly *twym* 'warm, hot' < *twymn, twymyn.*

amyn, amen (forms of the verbal noun without *yn*) are also found: *na dely ef teghu amyn yu korn* 'he ought not to swear except by his horn' LlDW 16. 10–11.

N. 2. *Namwy* (OW *nammui*) 'only' is not related to *namwyn*, but is cognate with Ir. *nammá* 'only', lit. 'not more' (see GOI 237, Contrib. N-O-P 12–13). *nyt namwy* 'not only': *nyt namwy e pechawt hvnnv namyn er holl pechodev* 'not only that sin, but all the sins' Hav. 2. 195^{b}. Its use in Welsh is rare, see BD 278.

§ 256. Eithyr 'but': *Enteu a allei gerdet e bop lle o'r e mynnei en ryd either y egluys Bedyr ehun ny allei vynet* 'He was able to walk freely to every place he wished, but to the church of Peter only he could not go' B ix. 339. 25–26. As preposition, see § 215.

Dieithyr 'but': *Os eu pobi a wneir, llei vyd eu chwyd a'e mygedorth, dyeithyr anhaws vyd eu todi* 'If they are baked, the swelling and flatulence will be less, but it will be more difficult to digest them' EC viii. 84. 26–27.

§ 257. Onyt 'except', see § 272 *a*.

§ 258. Hagen 'however, for, but'. It never occurs first in the sentence (cf. Ir. *immurgu*): *Yr a rodwn i idau ef hagen, kystal a chynt yd ymladei a mi drannoeth* 'For despite aught I might give him, as well as before would he fight with me on the morrow' PKM 3. 21, *Wynteu hagen ni wybuyssynt i eisseu ef* 'They for their part however had not known of his absence' 6. 28, *Nyt oed nes hagen idi no chynt* 'But he was no nearer to her than before' 12. 4.

SUBORDINATIVE

The following serve to introduce subordinate clauses of time, place, cause, purpose, &c.:

§ 259. O achaws 'because' (*achaws* 'cause'): *o achaws na chaffant genhyt na neges nac atteb* 'because they get from thee neither message nor answer' WM 183. 8–10. As preposition, see § 232 *a*.

achaws: *Galw Gwrhyr Gwalltawt Ieithoed, achaws yr holl ieithoed a wydyat* 'He called Gwrhyr Interpreter of Tongues, because he knew all tongues' RM 114. 15 (omitted in WM 471. 33), *achaws y dyd hwnnw y kyuodes yr Arglwyd Iessu o veirw yn vyw*

'because on that day the Lord Jesus arose from the dead alive' LlA 158. 4.

§ 260. O'r awr 'since, because' (lit. 'of the hour', cf. Ir. *óre*, GOI 316), OW *oraur* Comp; see § 148 *c*, B iii. 262.

§ 261. (*a*) **Can** 'since, because': *A chan traethus Gyldas o hynny yn llvyr y pedeis ynheu* 'And since Gildas dealt thoroughly with that, I for my part refrained' BD 20. 26–27, *Kymerwn ninheu . . . y dyd hwnn yn llawen anrydedus, kan duc Duw nyni yn dangneuedwyr* 'Let us spend this day joyfully and honourably, since God hath made us peacemakers' B v. 219. 11–12.

Cany(t) 'since, because . . . not' (*can* + *ny*(*t*)): *A chanyt atwaenat er abat beth a archei ar hynt, nys canhyadws idaw* 'And since the abbot did not at once realize what he requested, he did not grant it to him' B ix. 337. 27, *Arglwyd . . . pawb a'y dyly, canyt oes urenhin ar holl Annwuyn namyn ti* 'Lord, everyone ought to be, because there is no king over the whole of Annwn except thee' PKM 6. 8, *Kynhewi a oruc Pwyll, cany bu attep a rodassei* 'Pwyll was dumb, for there was no answer he might have given' 14. 12.

(*b*) **Canys**

(1) *Can* + *ys* 'it is' (§ 147). It is followed by the construction of the mixed order (i.e. noun, &c. + relative clause § 146): *Nyt* [*oes*] *arnafi ovyn agheu canys Crist a'm croesses i ac arwyd y groc lan ef* 'I am not afraid of death, because Christ hath blessed me with the sign of His holy cross' B ix. 327. 33; *cans* BD 132. 9, see § 255 n. 1.

(2) *Can* + *ys* (the infixed pronoun § 59) R 1176. 25–26.

(3) *Can* + *ny* + *'s* (the infixed pronoun § 58): *y bu digrif ganthaw ymw*[*e*]*let a'y eniuer ac a'y deulu, canis ry welsei ef* [*wy ys blwydyn*] 'he rejoiced to see his retinue and his war-band, because he had not seen them for a year' PKM 6. 27, *a chanys gwnn, Arglwydes, medwl yw genhyf y diuetha* 'but since I do not know of any (lit. 'of it'), lady, I intend to destroy it' 61. 12–13, *Kanys gollyngy yr hynny, mi a rodaf it pedeirpunt ar ugeint o aryant parawt* 'Since thou wilt not let it go for that, I will give thee four-and-twenty pounds of ready money' 63. 18–20.

(*c*) **Canys** 'since, because'. Already in the MW period *canys* was beginning to supersede *can* as a simple conjunction before the verb: *Canys ydiw Duw yn nef . . . anrydedet bawb hwnnw ymlaen pawb* 'Since God is in heaven, let all honour Him above all' B ii. 28, *A chanys bu, . . . mi a rodaf Pryderi a Riannon it* 'But since she was, I will give thee Pryderi and Rhiannon' PKM 64. 18, *Canys ywch yn rwymedigaeth, mi a wnaf ywch gerdet y gyt* 'Since you are allied together, I will make you fare together' 75. 4–5.

Canys ny(t) 'since, because . . . not': *Na vyd chwedleugar rac dy gaffel ar gelwyd, kanys nyt argyweda tewi* 'Be not talkative lest thou be found lying, because it harms not to keep silent' B ii. 20. 3.

§ 262. Kyt 'although': *ked doeth ef nyd aeth yn warthegawc* 'although he came, he went not (back) with spoil of cattle' LlHen 3. 2. The verb of the clause is usually in the subjunctive: *Hawd yw genhyf gaffel hynny, kyt tybycckych ti na bo hawd* 'I think it is easy to get that, though thou think it is not easy' WM 480. 16–18. *Eissoes* (§ 247 *e*) occasionally occurs in the principal clause: *A chet bei llaver ydav o dinassoed ereill, hvnnv eissoes a garei yn wy no'r vn* 'And though he had many other cities, yet it was that one he loved more than any' BD 44. 14.

N. 1. With *kyt* the form of the 3. sing. pres. subj. of the verb 'to be' is *boet*: *kyt boet keuynderw y mi y gwr hwnnw* 'though that man be my cousin' PKM 49. 13; for further examples, see TC 317.

Kynn 'although': *a chynn rodher medyant iti ar vyg korff i, Iessu Grist hagen a amdiffynn vy eneit* 'and though thou be given authority over my body, yet Jesus Christ shall defend my soul' B ix. 328. 27–28, *A chyn bo enwedigaeth y kyuoeth y mi, bit y mwynant y ti a Riannon* 'And though the territory be mine in name, let its use be for thee and Rhiannon' PKM 49. 23.

N. 2. *Kynn* is a back-formation based on *kyn ny* (< *kyt ny*), see below.

Kyn ny(t) 'although . . . not': *a chyn nyt ymdialwyf a thi . . . mi a wnaf o anglot itt guerth can carw* 'and though I will not take vengeance upon thee, I will do thee dishonour to the value of a hundred stags' PKM 2. 17–18, *Kyn ny bwyf arglwydes, . . . mi a wnn*

beth yw hynny 'Though I be not a lady, I know what that is' 40. 3–4; *kyny*: *A chyny bei itti o gyuoeth namyn y seith cantref hynny, nyt oes seith cantref well noc wy* 'And though thou hadst no territory save those seven cantrefs, there are not seven cantrefs better than they' PKM 49. 20–21.

N. 3. *mal/megys kyt* 'as though/if', with the imperf. subj.: *val kyt bei brenhin vei bob un onadunt* 'as though each one of them were a king' B v. 209. 35, *annoc y Brytanyeit megys ket bei un onadunt* '(he) urged the Britons as though he were one of them' BD 56. 10–11.

a chyt (after the equative, § 43): *yny oedynt kyn wlypet a chyt tynnit o'r auon* 'until they were as wet as if they had been dragged out of the river' BR 7. 20; *a chyn*: *A chyn amlyket oed udunt wy a chyn bydynt gyt ac wy* 'And it was as clear to them as if they were together with them' PKM 46. 17 (cf. *a phei*: *yn vnwed a phei bydei ef . . . yrwg dy* (ms. *y*) *vreicheu* 'like as if he were between (?) thy arms' LlA 99. 26).

no chyt (after the comparative, § 46) 'than if': *nyt oed nes idi yna no chyt bei ar y gam* 'he was no nearer to her then than if he went at a walking pace' PKM 11. 3.

mal/megys kyny 'as though/if . . . not': *val kynys adnappei y dyvat* 'as though it did not know him, it said' B xiv. 269. 17, *A phan wyl e gwyr a'e crogassei evo yn vyv ac en llawen megys keny bei boen arnav* 'And when the men who had hanged him saw him alive and joyful as though he had no pain' B x. 24. 21–22.

a chyny (cf. *a chyt* above): *e bu gen yachet a cheny diodeuei dim gouut eryoet* '(she) was as healthy as though she had never suffered any affliction' B x. 27. 13.

N. 4. Traces of *ky-* without *-t* [≡ *d*] are found: *kevei diffeith* 'though it were waste' CA 12. 296. *Kevei* (*ky* + *bei* § 144) is found in negative and interrogative sentences with the meaning 'even': *nyt arbedus keuei yr egluysseu* 'he spared not even the churches' HGrC 130. 13, *Pwy keuey a geissei llauuryav y gyt ac wyntvy y geyssav rydyt o'r ryw geythywet honno?*' 'Who would even seek to work with them to seek freedom from such captivity as that?' BD 12. 9–10. See WG 447, G 118, CA 149, GDG 536.

§ 263. Gyt ac y(d) 'as soon as': *Ar hynny, gyt ac y kyuodes ef, llyma gennadeu Matholwch yn dyuot attaw ef* 'Thereupon, as soon as he rose up, lo, the messengers of Matholwch coming to him' PKM 41. 5.

Y gyt ac y(d): *Y gyt ac yd aethant yn y guely ymchwelut e weneb at yr erchwyn a oruc ef* 'As soon as they got into bed he turned his face to the bedside' PKM 4. 27–28, *y gyt ac yd aant y'r berth,*

kilyaw y gyflym 'as soon as they went into the copse, they withdrew hurriedly' 55. 10–11.

Yn gytneit ac y(d) 'as soon as' (*cytneit* < *cyt* + *neit* 'leap'): *yn gytneit ac yd aeth hun yn y lygeit y rodet drych idaw y vot ef a'e gedymdeithon yn kerdet ar draws maes Argygroec* 'as soon as sleep came upon his eyes he was given a vision that he and his companions were walking across the plain of Argyngroeg' BR 3. 25–27.

§ 264. Kynn 'before': *Kynn bum kein vaglawc, bum kyffes eiryawc* 'Before I was bent of back, I was eloquent of speech' CLlH 8. 1[a], *Tynn y brychewyn o'th lygat dy hun kynn tynnych o lygat arall* 'Take the speck out of thine own eye, before thou take it out of the eye of another' B ii. 21. 17, *mi a dygaf y gennyt titheu dy eneit kyn elych odyma* 'I will take from thee thy life, before thou goest from here' SG 269. 14. See also § 46 n. 3.

§ 265. Delw yt 'as, how' (*delw* 'form', cf. Corn. *del*, see L & P 145, LlCC 99): *Delw y doeth ataf alaf oe law* 'As there came to me wealth from his hand' Ll Hen 143. 13. See further G 312.

§ 266. Gwedy 'after'; it is found with and without *y(d)*: *gwedy yd elom y mywn yr ogof, ny'n keis neb* 'after we shall have gone into the cave, no one will look for us' YBH 28. 1790–2, *guedy y darffei ydav ef yn gyntaf guasgaru guyr Ruuein ac eu llad* 'after he would have first scattered the men of Rome and killed them' BD 66. 2–3, *gvedy darfey ydav treyglav llawer o wladoet y dayar* 'after he had traversed many of the countries of the earth' 3. 25, *guedy byryer llawer yndi, ef a ouyn yt* 'after much has been thrown into it, he will ask thee' PKM 15. 7, *ehofyn oed ytti dyuot yma wedy lladut vy mrawt* 'it was daring for thee to come here after thou hadst killed my brother' SG 269. 9–10. As preposition, see § 217.

Gwedy na(t): *guedy nas cavssant wynt a doethant e'r avon* 'after they had not got him they came to the river' B x. 23. 12.

§ 267. Gwerth na(t) 'because . . . not' (*gwerth* 'worth, value'):

a'th uo di gwas nym gwerth na thechut 'may the land of heaven be thine, because thou wouldst not flee' CA 9. 233.

§ 268. Herwyd y(d) 'according as, as' (*herwyd* § 219): *A herwyd y dyweit y kyuarwydyt, ef a uu arglwyd wedy hynny ar Wyned* 'And as the tale tells, he was lord thereafter over Gwynedd' PKM 92. 24–25.

Herwyd val y(d): *herwyd ual y tebygaf i* 'according as I think' B v. 218. 19.

§ 269. (*a*) **Hyt y(d)** 'as far as, as long as' (*hyt* § 220): *dwyn dy vyneb di a wnaf hyt y bu dy glot ym pedryal byt bellaf* 'I will take away thine honour as far as thy renown was farthest in the four corners of the world' WM 459. 23, *Taw hyt y mynnych* 'Be silent as long as thou wilt' PKM 14. 13.

(*b*) **Hyt pan** (*pan* § 273) 'until', time: *Sef a wnaeth ynteu, y deimlaw hyt pan gauas y benn* 'What he then did was to feel about him till he found his head' PKM 42. 20, *A'r pym meib hynny a uagyssant hyt ban uuant weisson mawr* 'And those five sons they reared until they were grown youths' 48. 3–4; 'in order that, that', purpose: *Gelwuch ar Grist hyt pan uo euo a rodo ywch glevder a rydit* 'Call on Christ that He may grant you valour and freedom' BD 82. 29, *Drycheuwch y fyrch y dan uyn deu amrant, hyt pan welwyf defnyt uyn daw* 'Raise up the forks under my two eyelids that I may see my future son-in-law' WM 477. 13–16; result BD 185. 1, see § 44.

Hyt na(t) 'because . . . not': *A Ronabwy, hyt na allei na chyscu na gorffowys, medylyaw a oruc bot yn llei boen idaw mynet ar groen y dinawet melyn y'r parth y gysgu* 'And Rhonabwy, because he could neither sleep nor rest, thought it would be less of a torture for him to go on the yellow ox skin on the dais, to sleep' BR 3. 21–24; 'in order that . . . not, that . . . not', purpose: *A'r amser hvnnv y guedivs Helias proffvyt hyt na delhei glav* 'And in that time the prophet Elijah prayed that rain might not come' BD 26. 4; result B ix. 326. 4, see § 44.

(*c*) **Hyt tra** 'while, as long as' (*tra* § 276): *titheu a dywedut y mae ti a dalyssei y neill hyt tra fum inheu yn llad y llall* 'thou wouldst

say that it was thou who hadst held the one while I was killing the other' YBH 30. 1902–4, *hyt tra ym gatter yn uyw, hanbyd gwaeth drem uy llygeit* 'as long as I am left alive, the sight of my eyes will be the worse' WM 479. 6–8.

N. There are examples of *hyt y(d)*, *hyt na(t)* before noun clauses = 'that . . . (not)': *medylyav a wnaeth hyt y gallei bot yn well y dwed no'e dechreu* 'he thought that its end could be better than its beginning' BD 61. 19, *Hyn heuyt a gadarnhaei, hyt na lauuryei y geissyav gvr idi megys y'r lleill* 'This also he affirmed, that he would not endeavour to seek a husband for her as for the others' 27. 12–13.

§ 270. Mal y(d), Val y(d) (see § 227) 'according as, as', manner: *ac yd aethant y eisted y'r kadeireu ual yd eistedassei an Harglwyd ni a'r deudec ebystyl* 'and they went to sit to the chairs as our Lord and the twelve apostles had sat' B v. 208. 3. Occasionally *(y)velly* (§ 247 *i*) occurs in the principal clause: *Val yd adefych heint dy gorf y vedic fydlawn, velly adef dy gyfrinach y gedymdeith tawel fydlawn* 'As thou dost disclose the disease of thy body to a trustworthy physician, so disclose thou thy secret to a quiet and trustworthy companion' B ii. 24. 12; 'as', time: *ual yd oed y erchwys ef yn ymgael ac ystlys y llannerch, ef a welei carw o ulaen yr erchwys arall* 'as his pack was reaching the edge of the clearing, he could see a stag in front of the other pack' PKM 1. 14–15; 'in order that, that', purpose: *Reit yw ytti . . . menegi y mi pwy yw hwnnw mal y gallo an gwyrda . . . barnu pwy hoffa ohonam ni* 'Thou must declare unto me who he is, that our nobles may judge which of us is the more distinguished' B v. 205. *mal pei* 'as though it were': *yr hwnn a uo da genhyt ti malpei teu uei gwna arnaw* 'do with it that which pleaseth thee, as though it were thine own' WM 487. 22–24. *mal kyt, mal kyny* § 262 n. 3.

Mal na(t) 'in order that . . . not, that . . . not,' purpose: *par weithon wahard y llongeu, . . . ual nat el neb y Gymry* 'set now a ban on the ships that no one may go to Wales' PKM 38. 3; 'so that . . . not, that . . . not', result: *Je, arglwydes, . . . kyscu a wneuthum inheu mal na vybuum pan aeth ef* 'Aye, lady, for my part I slept so that I knew not when he went' WM 389. 26; 'as though . . . not': *dyuot yma yuory y'm kymryt ual na vypwn i y vrth hynny* 'to come here tomorrow to take me as though I did not know of it'

WM 429. 32, also *mal pei na(t)*: *penn y pryuet a yssynt rac newyn mal pei nat yssynt uwyt eiroet* 'they would devour the heads of insects through hunger, as though they had never eaten food' WM 467. 2–4.

Wrth val y(d) 'according as, as': *Vrth ual y bo dy anryded* 'According as thy dignity may be' PKM 2. 22, *wrth ual y guelych y guassanaeth yndi* 'as thou seest the service in it' 4. 3–4, *Wrth mal y bo yr hin* 'According as the weather may be' B ii. 15. 9–10.

N. *Malkawn.* The first element is certainly *mal*; note the following examples: *mynet y wlad y gwedi malkawn a geffynt etiued* 'the country went to prayer in order that they might have offspring' WM 452. 7, *y edrych malkawn a dyffei dim ar y bed* 'to see if anything might be growing on the grave' 453. 4.

§ 271. Megys y(d) (see § 228) 'according as, as': *Bit . . . dy drugared di arnam ni megys e gobeithyassam enot* 'May thy mercy be upon us as we have trusted in thee' B x. 32. 6. Occasionally *(y)velly* (§ 247 *i*) occurs in the principal clause: *[M]egys yd ymwassanaethant aelodeu vn corff . . . uelly y dylyant aelodev Duv ymnerthu* 'As the members of one body serve each other, so the members of God ought to strengthen each other' B v. 195; 'in order that, that', purpose: *Anuon ym vedygynyaeth a iechyt o nef megys y bo yscawnnach gennyfi vy archolleu* 'Send me remedy and salvation from heaven that I may the more easily bear my wounds' B ix. 328. 6; result BD 82. 31, see § 44.

Megys na(t) 'in order that . . . not, so that . . . not': *yr hwnn . . . a ossodes teruyneu y'r moroed megis na delwynt uyth dros y orchymyn* 'who set limits to the seas, that they go not ever beyond His authority' B x. 55. 23; 'as though . . . not': *ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt drwy lawer o yspeit kyn no hynny* 'they embraced one another, as though they had not seen one another for a long while before then' RB 186. 33.

§ 272. (*a*) **O(t)** 'if'. It is usually followed by the indicative: *o doy a uo nes mi a'th wnaf a'm cledeu yn diagon idaw* 'if thou come nearer, I shall make thee with my sword a deacon to him' YBH 20. 1285–7, *ot erchir ytt beth a vo ku gennyt, dyro ef* 'if thou be asked for that which is dear to thee, give it' B ii. 31. 18, *ot oed uawr ef,*

mwy dwyweith oed y wreic noc ef 'if he was big, twice as big as he was the woman' PKM 35. 16–17.

Or (*o* + *ry* § 185): *Or ymlad deuwr o'r swydogyonn yn llys, y distein a geiff trayan eu dirwy* 'If two of the officers fight in court, the steward is to have a third of their *dirwy*' LlB 12. 7–9, *or byd da genhyt, arglwyd, miui a af y edrych a symudawd y marchawc y ar y medwl hwnnw* 'if it please thee, lord, I will go and see whether the knight has moved from that meditation' WM 142. 7–10.

Ony(t) 'if . . . not': *ony allaf i ue hun cael y urenhinaeth, ac aduyd ys kymeraf gynghor am ych kennadwri chwi* 'if I cannot myself gain the kingship, maybe I shall take counsel concerning your message' PKM 41. 15–16, *Ac eres gynhyf i, ony wdosti dim y wrth hynny* 'And I am surprised if thou dost not know anything of that' 35. 9, *Ny chymerwn ni na bwyt na diawt . . . onyt edewy ditheu dyuot y gyt a ninneu* 'We will take neither food nor drink, unless thou dost promise to come with us' BDe 15. 11–12.

N. 1. *Onyt* occurs also as preposition and conjunction, meaning 'except, but': *a oed neb yn yr eglwys onyt efo ehun* 'whether there was anyone in the church except himself' BDe 3. 15–16, *na mynnei ef le y sefyll onyt ar y llawr gwastat* 'that he did not desire a place to stand on except on the level ground' 17. 12. *ont* (see WG 55): *ny rodet doethinep ont y rei* 'wisdom was not given except to some' B ii. 29. 20. *Dim onyt* § 117 *d*.

(*b*) **Os**

(1) *O* + *ys* 'it is' (§ 147). It is followed by the construction of the mixed order (cf. *canys* § 261 *b*): *os arch gyuartal a erchy ymi, yn llawen ti a'e keffy* 'if it be a reasonable boon that thou ask of me, gladly shalt thou have it' PKM 16. 13, *os ouyn yssyd arnawchi, ym kyffes y Duw, mi a'ch differaf* 'if it be fear that is upon you, by my confession to God, I will protect you' 21. 3–4.

Ossit 'if there is' (cf. *yssit* § 147 *c*), with an indefinite subject: *osit rann imi o'th uab ti uorwyn, oer uyth uyd y galon* 'if there is a share to me of thy son, maiden, cold will his heart be for ever' WM 464. 36–37.

(2) *O* + *'s* (the infixed pronoun § 58): *Mae ymma mab it . . . os mynny* 'There is here a boy for thee, if thou dost want him' PKM 23. 5.

(*c*) **Os.** *Os* occurs for *o(t)* before a verb as early as the MW

period: *Os ydywch chuitheu en dywedut auch treissyav ohonaf vi, dodwn ar vravt y goruchel vrenhin* 'If ye are saying that I have violated you, let us refer it to the judgement of the Most High King' B x. 23. 7–8.

N. 2. When two co-ordinate clauses connected by *ac* follow *o(t)*, *or*, *os*, the verb of the second is in the subjunctive: *Eissyoes os y penytywr a vyd anwybodus ynghylch y ryw betheu hynny. Ac a ovynno pa vod* 'However, if the penitent is ignorant of those matters, and asks how' B viii. 138. 4–5, *ot ymwystla ef yn amserawl, ac nat ymwystlo y brawdwr ac ef* 'if he enters into pledge in due time, and the judge enters not into pledge with him' LlB 106. 16, *O gwely vwyt a diawt or byd reit itt wrthaw ac na bo o wybot a dayoni y rodi itt kymer dy hun ef* 'If thou seest food and drink, if thou hast need of it and there be not the courtesy and goodness to give it thee, take it thyself' RM 195. 17–19.

N. 3. On the use of *o(t)*, &c., to introduce indirect questions, see § 196.

§ 273. Pan 'when': *A phan doeth yno, yd oed Arawn urenhin Annwuyn yn y erbyn* 'And when he came there, Arawn king of Annwn was waiting for him' PKM 6. 16–17, *A phan uo ef ar perued y digrifwch a'y gyuedach, dyret titheu dy hun ymywn* 'And when he is in the midst of his mirth and carousal, do thou come in thyself' 15. 2–3.

Yr pan 'since' (*yr* § 246): *kyfrifwch awch treul yr pan doethoch yma* 'count your charges since you came here' WM 161. 20.

Erbyn pan 'by (the time) when' (*erbyn* § 216): *a'e uot yn hywed erbyn pan elei y mab y uarchogaeth* 'and that it be broken in by the time when the boy would go a-riding' PKM 24. 7.

O'r pan 'from (the time) when' (*o'r*, cf. § 75): *o'r pan agoroch y drws hwnnw, ny ellwch uot yno* 'from the time you have opened that door, you may not stay there' PKM 45. 9.

Hyt pan § 269 *b*.

§ 274. Pei, Bei. *Pei* is the form of the 3. sing. imperf. subj. of the verb 'to be'. Originally it served as a copula, and was followed by a noun, &c. (cf. *canys* § 261 *b* 1, *os* § 272 *b* 1), thus: *Pei er argluyd pab a'e gardinalyeit a genynt efferen drossof, mi a gaffwn vadeuant* 'Were the Lord Pope and his cardinals to sing mass for me, I would obtain forgiveness' B x. 26. 15–16, *pei mi ry wascut uelly ny oruydei ar arall uyth rodi serch im* 'had it been I thou didst

squeeze in this wise, there were no need for another ever to give me love' WM 474. 30–32, *oed escor uym pryder im, pei gwir hynny* 'I should be delivered of my care, were that true' PKM 26. 10, *mi allwn arnaf dy garu yn uwyhaf gwreic, pei da genhyt* 'I could bring myself to love thee best of women, should it please thee' WM 145. 25–27.

Later it developed as a conjunction 'if', and was used before a verb in the imperf. subj. or plup., see §§ 120 *f*, 122 *b*.

Pe (< *pei*): *A phe gwypwn uot dy gynnyd val y bu, nyt aut y wrthyf pan aethost* 'And if I had known that thy progress would be as it has been, thou hadst not gone from me when thou didst' WM 144. 34–35. Examples of *pe* are rare in MW.

N. 1. The particle *yt* (§ 190 n.) is found with *pei* (cf. ModW *ped*) before forms of the imperf. subj. of the verb 'to be', as follows: Sing. 1. *bei et uwn i yn dechreu uy ieuengtit* 'if I were at the beginning of my youth' PKM 57. 20, *pei ettwn* YBH 27. 1726, 3. *petuei* BDe 16. 17 (contrast *a ffe bei* YBH 3. 148). Later these forms were contracted to *pettwn* SG 278. 33, *pettut* LlA 67. 6, *pettei* SG 278. 19, &c.

N. 2. *Pei ron* '(even) if he should', followed by a verbal noun: *Eissyoes pei ron idaw vy llad i, mi a vynnwn gwplau ewyllys vy ewythyr* 'Nevertheless, even if it should kill me, I would fain fulfil my uncle's will' SG 5. 12–13, *Pony daroed ymi . . . pei ron y dyuot ef yno erchi na lettyit?* 'Did I not command that, should he come there, he be not lodged?' 212. 19–20. It is often found in Dafydd ap Gwilym (see GDG 488, 592).

N. 3. *bei . . . bei* 'whether . . . or': *kanys pawb a eynt yno yr amser hwnnw, bei ar iawn bei ar gam* 'for all went there at that time, whether rightly or wrongly' SG 36. 37–38.

Pei na(t), Bei na(t): *Bei na metrut hynny . . . ef a dry am dy benn cwbyl o'r gouut* 'If thou had not struck on that, all the harm would come on thy head' PKM 64–65.

Py na(t): *A phy na bei ueichawc hi, nis gordiwedut hi* 'And if she had not been pregnant, thou wouldst not have overtaken her' PKM 64. 17–18. Also *pa ny(t)*: *a pha ny bei daet y march a'e glotuorusset, ni a vynem y diuetha* 'and were not the horse so good and so renowned, we would wish to destroy it' YBH 47. 3020–2.

§ 275. Pryt pan 'when' (*pryt* 'time', *pan* § 273): *pryt pan gepplych di ereill am eu pechawt* 'when thou dost reprove others for their sins' B ii. 28.

Pryt na(t) 'when ... not': *Pryt na chyscei ynteu ny hand[en]ei dim ymdanei* 'When he was not sleeping he did not trouble himself at all about her' WM 183. 4–6; 'since / that ... not': *Arthur, py holy di y mi, pryt na'm gedy yn y tarren honn* 'Arthur, what dost thou demand of me, that thou wilt not leave me alone on this crag?' WM 489. 16–17, *pa beth yssyd arnaw ef ... pryt na welut eiroyd y gyfryw* 'what is there about it that thou shouldst never have seen its like?' 386. 34–36.

§ 276. Tra 'while, so long as': *ny ommedwyt neb tra barhaud* 'no one was refused while it lasted' PKM 19. 3, *tra parhawyf i, mi a'th kynhalyaf ... tra allwyf kynnhal y meu uy hun* 'while I continue, I will maintain thee, so long as I am able to maintain my own' 26. 26–27.

Hyt tra § 269 *c*.

§ 277. Trwy y(d) 'whereby, so that' (*trwy* § 240): *y tri naw affeith achwysson ynt trwy y gwneir y gweithredoed hyn trwy gytsynhyaw* 'the thrice nine accessaries are causes through which these acts are committed by consent' LlB 30. 2–5, *duw a eirch ... na chadarnnhao dyn kelwyd trwy twng trwy y colletto y gymodawc o'e da pressennawl nev o'e glot* 'God commands that a person shall not confirm a lie by oath, whereby he deprive his neighbour of his worldly possessions or of his honour' LlA 143. 15, *y gymryt gormod ohonunt trwy y bei orthrwm ar y gorff nev ar y eneit* 'to take an excess of them, so that his body or his soul would be oppressed' 144. 22.

Trw yt: *gweled y bed a uynnei trw yt gaffei wreicca* 'he wanted to see the grave whereby he might take a wife' WM 453. 11.

N. The above examples represent an unusual construction in MW. At an earlier period it may have been one of the constructions employed when the relative was governed by a preposition (see § 70): the preposition would be placed immediately before the relative clause, and followed by the particles *yt / y(d)*. Cf. Irish, GOI 312 f. The subject, however, requires further investigation.

§ 278. (H)yny (OW *hit ni*, see WG 446) 'until': *A'r ynys a gerdassant hyny doethant y Eryri* 'And they traversed the island

till they came to Eryri' WM 185. 7–8, *Ac yny agoroch y drws parth ac Aber Henuelen . . . y gellwch uot yno* 'And until you open the door towards Aber Henfelen you may bide there' PKM 45. 7–8; 'in order that, that', purpose: *Duw a rodho ytti rat y gyffessu dy bechodeu yny ellych gaffel madeueint ohonunt y gan duw* 'May God grant thee grace to confess thy sins that thou mayest obtain forgiveness of them from God' B vii. 372. 1; result BD 46. 17, see § 44.

N. Sometimes (*h*)*yny* is used to introduce an independent affirmative clause, in which there may be also a suggestion of wonder or surprise (see B i. 103, also B i. 9–12, L & P 220, TC 378): *yny want y mab yn wysc y benn yn y gynneu* 'he thrust the boy headlong into the blazing fire' PKM 43. 25–26; *hyny uyd*: *hyny uyd kaer a welynt* 'they could see a fort' (lit. 'it is a fort they could see') WM 472. 10, *han ny uyd dauates uawr a welynt* 'they could see a great flock of sheep' (lit. 'it is a great flock of sheep they could see') 472. 16–17 (= *yny* RM 114. 29), *Ac ar hynny hyny vyd y vrenhines a'e llawuorynyon yn dyfot* 'And thereupon the queen and her handmaidens come' 145. 2–4.

INTERJECTIONS

§ 279. The following interjections proper are found in MW: *a*, *ha*; *ae*; *oy a*, *oi a*, *wy a*, *wi a*; *oian a*, *hoian a*; *o*, *och*, *och a*; *wb*; *gwae*; *haha*; *tprue* R 1278. 23.

Examples: *A unben . . . beth amgen?* 'O, chieftain, what else?' PKM 2. 11, *Ae tydy, wr yeuanc* 'O, thou, young man!' BD 8. 15, *Oy a uab Duw . . . guae ui o'm ganedigaeth* 'Alas, Son of God, woe is me that I was born!' PKM 45. 15–16, *Hoian a parchellan* 'Ho, little pig!' BBC 61. 6, '*Och*,' *heb y Riannon*, '*paham y rody di attep yuelly*' '"Alas," said Rhiannon, "why dost thou give such an answer?"' PKM 14. 6–7, *Vb wyr*, *nawd dyw ragoch* 'Alack men, God protect you!' WM 473. 18, '*Haha*,' *heb ef*, '*graessaw duw wrthyt*' '"Ah, ha," said he, "God's welcome to thee!"' 123. 9.

§ 280. Interjectional forms and expressions derive from other parts of speech, and from phrases and sentences, often contracted.

myn or *ym* 'by', in expressions such as *myn llaw uyghyueillt* 'by the hand of my friend!' WM 458. 22, *myn Duw* 'by God!' RM 115.

16, *ym kyffes y Duw* 'by my confession to God!' PKM 21. 4, *ym Yessu* 'by Jesus!' HGCr 71. 19.

Ymhwyth § 245 *p*.

Y rof i a Duw 'Between me and God!' PKM 2. 12, *yr Duw* 'for God's sake!' 5. 27.

Meuyl im 'Shame on me!' PKM 7. 17, *Meuyl ar uy maryf i* 'Shame on my beard!' 47. 10–11, see p. 223, GDG 505. *mefyl* = Ir. *mebul*, see L & P 39.

Henffych well 'hail!' (*henffych* § 156).

Dioer 'indeed!, faith!' (for *Dyw a wyr* 'God knows', see BDe 44).

Nacha(f), Nycha 'lo!, behold!': *nachaf y klywynt gynnwryf mawr* 'lo, they could hear a great commotion' BR 17. 18, *nachaf un o'r llongeu yn raculaenu rac y rei ereill* 'lo, one of the ships going ahead of the others' PKM 30. 4, *Nachaf y kynhaeaf yn dyuot* 'Lo, the harvest coming' 59. 6–7.

Llyma 'lo here!' (< *syll yma* 'look here', cf. Fr. *voici*): *llyma was ieuanc coch gobengrych . . . yn dyuot o pebyll puruelyn* 'lo, a young ruddy curly-headed attendant coming from a bright yellow pavilion' BR 13. 3–5.

Llyna 'lo there!' (< *syll yna* 'look there', cf. Fr. *voilà*): *Llyna y gwr y mynyssit uy rodi i idaw o'm hanuod* 'That is the man to whom (they) would have given me against my will' PKM 14. 16.

Weldy 'lo!, behold!' (< *a wely di* 'dost thou see?'): *Weldy racco . . . y drws ny dylywn ni y agori* 'Behold, yonder is the door we should not open' PKM 46. 24–25.

Gwaethiroed (Duw) 'the more the pity!, unfortunately!, alas!' (see WG 440, YCM 187): *Gwaethiroed Duw . . . dy eni eiryoet* 'Alas, that thou wert ever born!' YCM 46. 13–14, *a gwaethiroed Duw na blingwyt. kanys trallawt braf a baryssant y Bown wedy hynny* 'and the more the pity that they were not flayed, for they caused ample affliction to Bown afterwards' YBH 10. 637–40, *yna y gellygawd Bown ef o'y wlat, a guaethiroed nas lladawd* 'then Bown dismissed him to his country, and alas that he did not kill him!' 10. 662–4. *yssy waethiroed: ac nyt oed dim bwyllwr ganthun yssy waethiroed* 'and they had no provisions, unfortunately' YBH 28. 1802–3.

N. 1. *gwaethiroed* appears to be for *gwaeth yr oed* 'worse it was'. *yssy waethiroed*, cf. *yssywaeth* below.

Yssywaeth 'the more the pity!, unfortunately!, alas!': *Ny chaffant gann Duw . . . ysprydawl vendith, namyn yr emelldith a haydassant ysywaeth* 'They will not get from God a spiritual blessing, but the curse which they, alas, incurred' LlA 157. 16–18, '*ae gwir y dywedy di?*' *heb y marchawc.* '*Gwir, myn Duw yssywaeth,*' *heb y Lawnslot* '"is it true what thou sayest?" said the knight. "True, by God, the more the pity," said Lancelot' SG 252. 1–2.

N. 2. *yssywaeth* is for *yssy(đ) waeth* 'which is worse' (*yssyđ* § 66), cf. *yssy waethiroed* above.

INDEXES

(*Numbers refer to pages*)

MIDDLE AND MODERN WELSH

A

a (interject.) 15, 245
a (rel. pron.) 20, 55, 60–74, 166
a (particle) 20, 51, 55, 64–74, 172, 180
a (interr.) 20, 166, 174–8
a (prep. 'of') 17, 37, 205
a(c) (prep. 'with', &c.) 21, 41, 44, 53, 54, 73, 88, 91, 92, 95, 181–2, 236
a(c) (conj. 'and') 21, 24, 46–47, 53, 54, 83, 230–1, 242
(a)breid 223–4, + o / na 224
achaws (conj.) 233–4
achlân 224–5
ach law 182
achub-eit 156, -eint 122
achupvy 129
achuanec 12, -au 12, 156
a chyt / chyn / chyny 236
adan *see* tan
adaned 30
adar, -en 31
adaw 'leave' 149, 156
adeilat 158
at vo, aduot 144, 145
adnabot 148
adolwyn 158
adrawd (3. sg. pres. indic.) 117, (v.n.) 156
adref 223
adwen 3, 148
ađaw 'promise' 156, -adoed 128, -af 116
ae (interject.) 245
ae, ay (rel. pron.) 63
ae, ay (interr.) 175–8, ae . . . ae 86–87, 175, 231
aei (imperf.) 'went' 5, 132
ae ny (interr.) 176
aess-awr 28
auall, euyll 27
aulonydha 118
auon-yd, -oed 32
auor-y, -e 221
ac a (rel.) 63
(ac) atuyd 224
ac attoed 224
ac megys y(d) 42
ac na(t) 41
agor-af 116, -awr 121, -i 157
agos, 40, 189, 199
anghen yn anghen 226
aghenawc 2
agreiffto 3
aho 133
allân(n) 84, 222
am (prep.) 17, 58, 77, 83, 182–3
am (pers. pron.) 56
amaeth, emeith 27
ambell 16
am ben 183
amcan y 198–9
amkawd 149
amdan 183
amdrychi 2
amddiffin 2
amen, amyn 232
amgeled 2
amgen, -ach 44
amgylch 183
amgyrwyf 2
amher-awdyr 2, 34, -odres 34
amlaw 183
amranneu 28
amrysson 2
amryw 16, 91
am-uc 124, -wyn 158, -wyth 124
amwarandawyr 129
amws, emys 27
amyl 16
anadred, nadred 12
andwy 147

anuon-af 116, -adoed 128, -es 122, -et 126
Annwuyn 9
anoeth 40
anu(u)ndeb 5
ar (dem. pron.) 70–71
ar (a ry) 62
ar (prep.) 17, 45–46, 48–49, 58, 77, 146, 183–8
araf 'weapon' 12
arall 85–87
ar aruer 184–5
ar ben 188
arbet 'spares' 116, -twy 128
arch-af 116, -adoed, -ydoed 127
ar draws 188
ardel(w) 11
ar delw 184
ar diwygyat 184–5
ar drws 188
artuad 126
ardwrn, erdyrn 27
ar eilun 184
ar eir 184
ar var 184
ar uedyr 185
ar uedwl 185
aruer, -ha 116
ar uessur 185
ar uod 184–5
ar ureint 184–5
ar vrys 184
ar vyrder 184
ar uyrr 228
ar ffuryf 184
ar ffysc 184
arganuot 145
ar gyffelybrwyd 184–5
argyweda 117
ar helw 184
arho-af 158, -es 122
ar hyt 189
ar hynt 184, 225
ar lun 184
ar lles 187
ar llet 184, 225
arn-adut, -u 58
ar neilltu 225
ar odeu 185
ar ol 189
aros 158
ar osged 184
artho 159
ar uchaf 189
ar untu 225
ar warthaf 189
ar-wed, -wein 158
ar weith 184
arvydoca-a 118, -ei 5
as (particle) 173
as (pron.) 56
ass-eu, -w, -wy 4
at 17, 59, 77, 189
atcorsan 120
atchwel-wynt 129
atuer 116, -af 158
atnewyd-hau 156, -wys 13
attadunt 58
atteb 14, 'answer' 154, 'answers' 116, -awd 125, -yd 115
atwaenat 122
atwen 13, 148
ath-oed, -wyf 132
athra(w)on 5, 31
awch (poss. pron.) 53
awr pob / py awr 97

B

baed, beid 27
bala(w)-on, -ot 5, 30, 32
baraf 'beard' 12
barhau 156
barn 'judges' 117, -adoed 127, -u (v.n.) 156
bawd 'drowns' 117
bedydyit 6
behot 103
bei (conj.) 242
beirn 117
beleu 30
bellach 44, 223
bernit (3. sg. imper.) 129
berwhodawr 121
beth 76, 81
beu-noeth, -nyd 221
bi, -avt 136
biw, bu 22, 27, 47
blawt 33
blin-av 157, -hau 156
blith dra chymysc 226
blodeu-oed 33, -aw 157, -ha 118

blwydyn 33, 47, -ed 33, blvynyded 33, blyned 22, 33, 47
bo, po 144–5
bot 'to be' 17–18, 20, 108, 109, 110, 111, 136–8, 160, 164
bof (1. sg. pres. subj.) 128
boly 10, 31, -eu 31
boreugweith 227
bradas 122
branos 28
bre(y)enhin, brenhin, -ed, -oed 32
breich 34
breidwyt, breudwyt 34
bre(h)yr, bryhyr 5
brith, breith 37
brithottor 121
briw-at 126, -aw 157, -haud 119
brod-er, -yr 30, 33, -ur 2, -oryon 33
buch 2
buchedocau 156
budur 13
buum 5, 135, 137, 155
bwlch (noun) 31
bwlch (adj.) 36
bwr-w, -yei 10
buiad 122, bwy-at 122, 137, -ant 136
bwyd, -eu 28
bwyr 128, 137
bvystuil-ed, -et, -eit 32
bwyta 'to eat' 156, 'eats' 117
bychan 35, 40, -et 40
bychot 103, -ed, -rwyt 103
(b)ychydic 16, 102–3
byd-at 122, 137, -hawt 119, 136, -awnt 120, 136, -if 115, 136, -yn 120, 137
bydin, -awr 28
bylch, -eu 31
byly 31
bynnac 81–82
byrd, -eu 31
byr-yvt, -vyt 126
byth, uyth, byth bellach, byth wedi 222

C, K

kat (impers. pret.) 149
cad, -eu 4, 28, 29
cadarn-het 39, -haf 39, -yon 35, ked-eirn, -yrn 35
cadw 156, -af 116, -wn 5, -yt 157
cael 149, 164
caer-eu, -oed 32, keyryd 5, 30, 32
caeth, keith 35
ca(e)u 5, 156
cavas 122, 149
kafod 'shower' 6, 9
caff-at 126, 149, -ael, -el 149, 157, -af, -awd, -awr, -wy 149, -wynt 129, 149
cah-at, -el, -o 149
calych 12
cam ly-ein, -eu 29
can(t) (prep.) *see* gan
can (conj.) 55, 56, 234, + ny(t) 174, 234
cana(w)on, &c. 2, 5, 30
can-awd 124, -bvyt 127, -eint 122, -hator, -otor, &c. 120–1, -t 124
can-uot, -hoed 145
canys 143, 234–5, cans 234, + ny(t) 235
car, -ant 29, kereint 29
car-u 114–15, -edic 166
kawat 6, 9
cawssoedwn 149
cayat 166
kedw-i 'to keep' 156, 157, -id 129, -is 122
kedymdeith, -yon 28
keed (2. sg. pres. indic.) 115
kevei 236
keuynder(w) 11
keffid (3. sg. pres. indic.) 149
keivyn 29
keingyeu 30
keint (1. sg. pret.) 124, 135, -um 124
keiss-wynt 129
keluyd-yt, -odeu, -odyon 31, 32
kened(y)loed 12
ken-if 115, -(h)it(t)or 120, 121
kenn(h)yw 145
ker *see* ger
kerd, -a 118, -assant 125, -et 157
ker-essyt (3. sg. pret.) 123, -i (3. sg. imperf.) 121, -iu (1. sg. pres. indic.) 115
kethr-awr, -eu, -i, -on 32
kewssit (3. sg. pret.) 149

keywneynt 29
kiglef, kigleu 124
kil, -ya 118, -yassant 125
cilid 2, cilyd 96–97
cladhet 129
cled-eu, -yf, -yfeu 29, -yvawr 30
clefydeu 'swords' 10
clotuorach 38
clybot 124
clyw-et 110, 124, 157, -ho 128, -i 121, -it 119, -ssant 125, -ssei 127, -(y)spwyt 126
k(y)naud 13
coll-af 116, -assam 125, -et 126, -edeint 127, -es 122
corff, -eu, -oed, kyrff 33
corfflan 20
corffor, -oed, -ion 33
corlan 20
korof 13
cosbawd 119
cra(e)ssaw, cressaw 214
cre-as, -awd, -wys 122
creddoe, crettwy 129
kreuyd 34, -wyr 10
krennit 119
crëu 5
crybwyllyeit 158
cryc, crec 36
crinyt (2. pl. imper.) 120
kudygyl 10
kuhudir 3
kwaethach 39
kwbwl, kwbyl 13, 16, 71, 100–1
cwt, cw(d) 21, 79
cwrwf 13
kwtta, kotta 36
cwyd-it 119, -in 120
kwyn-aw 157, -van 158, -if 115, -ouein 158
kychwynnu 156
kyt 55, 56, 235–6
kyt a(c) 191–2
kyuaruot 145
kyuarwyneb a(c) *see* gyuarwyneb a(c)
cyuedach 157
kyuerbyn a(c) *see* gyuerbyn a(c)
kyuerchyd 115
kyueryw 145
kyuing 3
kyflea 117
kyfliw 38
kyfnesseifeit 36
kyuodyn 120
kyfoet 38
kyuoeth 39
kyvrang 8
kyfrwng 208
kyfryng-och, -thut 59
kyfryw 16, 38, 73, 91–92
kyvuch 41
kyuurd 38
kyffröi 5
kygreir 34
kymeint 38, 94–95
kymeint arall 94–95
kymeint timmyn 95
kymeint un 95
kymer 116, -af 158, -awd 'will take 119, -(a)ssant 125, -th 124
kymoned 38
Cymräec 4
kymr-yt, -ut 2, 157
kymyscetor 120
kyn (with equat. adj.) 20, 41
kyn (prep.) 44, 192
kynn (conj. 'before') 237
kynn (conj. 'although') 235, + ny 174, 235–6
kynhelliis 6
kyniuer 38, 73
kynig-wyt, -ywyt, -pwyt 126
Cynlas 20
kynna 40
kynnullyd (2. sg. pres. indic.) 115
kyrch-af 117, -u 156, -vs 123, -vys 123
kyrd 31
kyriaw 'to cry' 13
kyrr-aed, -eid 117
kyrs 31
kysc-u, -wyt 157
kystadyl 40
kytduundeb 5
kywaeth 39
kyw-ed, -ein 158
kywilid 2

Ch

chwaer 11, 31, 32
chwaethach 39–40

chwaneckau 12
chwant 11, 118
chward, chweird 117
chwar-e (noun) 3, 11, (verb) 119, -yit 119
chwe(ch) 11, 21, 22, 45
chwed(y)l 34, -eu 12, -euha 156
chwen(n)ych 118, -u 11
chwerd-it, -yt 119
chwerthin 159
chwerw 10, 11
chwibanat 158
chwior-ed, -yd 31, 32

D

da 35, 40, -(h)et 40, -oed 35
dabre, debre 135, 136
dadyl 12
dagreuoed 33
dal, -y 10, 156, -a 10, -pwyt 126, -wy 129
damvn-a 118, -aw 157
damwein 11, 34
dan *see* tan
dannoed 4
danwaret 157
dar-uot 145–6, 163, -(f)u 9, 146, -oed, -ffo 146
darlle-aw, -af, -in 158
dathoed 134
dawedadoedit 128
dawr 150
dechreu-awt 123, -is, -vys 123, -it, -wyt, -spwyt 126, -ssam 126
defni 157
dec 22, 45
degle 135
deifyr 31
deigyr 30
deil(y)en 31
deint 31
deirydeit 150
del-i (v.n.) 157, -yessid (3. sg. pret.) 123, -(i)is 6, 122, -(i)it 126
del-of 128, -oent 129
delw 10
delw yt 237
deon 35
der-wen, -w, -i 31
der-yw, -w 146
deu-af, -bi, -byd 133, -eint 134, -hont, -po 135
deucant 16, 46
deuedoent, deuetoent 129
deuiin 33
deupeth 16
deurud 33
deutu 16
deuth 134, -an 120, -pwyt 126, 134, -um 134
Dewi 10
dia(f)wl 9, 27, diefyl 27
dian(g)c, diang 8, 158
dial 117, -awr 121
diaspedein 158
dichawn 150–1
did-arbot, -orbot 122, 150, -awr 150, -oryat 122, 150
dieil 117
dieng-yd (2. sg. pres. indic.) 115, -yt (v.n.) 158
diha(e)reb 154
di(h)eu 22, 33, -oed 33
Difyeu 9, 33
difri 9
diuryssint 120
diff-eraf 158, -erth, -yrth, -erwys 124, -ryt 158
diffyc, -ya 118
digarad 166
digawn (pron.) 103
digawn (verb) *see* dichawn
digon-i 151, -it 115, 151, -wy 151
dihirwch 2
dihol 156
dil-it, -yt, -ynaf 158
dilyssa 117
dim 71, 96, 106–8
dim onyt 107, 241
din-as 34, -assoed, -essyd 32
dioer 246
diolwch, diylch 117
disgynsit 123
distryv, -a 118
diw, dyw 'day' 33
diw (pa diw) 77–78
diwyn 158
do 176
do (dyuot) 133
dodwyf, dothwyf 134, 136
doe 221

doeth-oed 134, -pw(y)t 126, 134
doei 5, 134
dofynet 39
dogyn 103
doit (2. sg. pres. indic.) 115, 133
dol-eu, -yd 32
dorbi 150
dosparth 156
doth-oed, -wyf 134, 136
dra *see* tra(c)
dracheuyn 210, 221
dragon 30, 32
draw 85, 223, 225
dreic 30, 32, -eu, -ioedd 32
dros *see* tros
drwod 60, 225
drwy *see* trwy
drychaf-el 157, -wynt 129
duch (3. sg. pres. subj.) 128
dugum 124, 135
duw 'day' 33
duw 'god', -(y)eu 29
dwfwr 13
dwfyr 8, 9, 31, dwr 9
dwy 'god', -eu 29, -es 34
dwyglust 33
dwylann 34
dwyn 158
dwyre 158, -it 119, -in 158
dwyw 'god' 29, 34, -eu 29, -es 34
dyadu 166
dy-bi 133, -bo 135, -bu 62, 134, -byd 133
dyborthi 62
dybryssyaw 62
dycko 128
dychanu 62
dychyrch-u 62, -wynt 129
dyd 33, 47, 75, -yeu 33, -gweith 226
dy-daw, -del, -delwynt, -deuant, -deuei, -deuhawr, -deuho, -do, -dotyw, -dybyd 136
dyduch 128
dy-ui 133, -uo 135, -fu 134, -ffei, -ffer, -ffo, -ffwn 135
dyuot 109, 133–5
dyfred 31
dyfwr 'water' 8
dyffryn(t) 14
dyg-af 117, -an 120, -etawr 121, -if 115
digorbit 147
dygwydaw 157
d(y)ly 151, -af 13, 151, -et 13, -i 121, 151, -u 151
dyn 22, 34, 105–6, -yon, -edon, -yadon 33
dyppo 135
dyrchau-ael, -el 157, -aud (3. sg. pres. indic.) 119, -wy 129
dyrcheuit (3. sg. pres. indic.) 119
dyret 135, 136
dyrreith 124
dysgogettawr 121
dysgydoed 128
dyw 'god', -yeu 29
dyw-at, -ot 6, 124, -awt 124
dywed-ut, -yt, -wyt 157
dywed-wyt 'was said', -pv(y)t 126–7, -adoed 127
dywespwyt 127
dywëyt (2. pl. pres. indic.) 120
dyworpi 147

Dd

dieithyr 192–3, 233
dy wrth 201

E

ech 40, 192
ech adaf 192
echdihenedic 192
echtywynnu 192
ederyn 31
edeu 'thread' 30
edeu 'leaves' 116, 149
et(u)ryt 9, 158
edn-an, -ein(t) 29, -ot 28
edrychuir 128
edryd 117
educher 196
edwaeth 221
edeu 'promises' 116
ef, ef a (particle) 172
eglwyss-eu, -i, -yd 32
eng(h)i 153
ehofyn 192
eid-aw, -i, -u(nt) 54–55
eingaw 153
eilweith 227
eiryachator 120

e(i)r(y)oet 222
e(i)rmoet 222
eiss-(y)oes, -wys 222
eithaf 40, -oed 36
eithum 132, 135
eithyt 'went' 124, 132
eithyr (prep.) 192
eithyr (conj.) 233
elein, alaned 30
eleni 221
el-hid (3. sg. imper.) 129, 133, -it (3. sg. pres.) 119, 132, -(h)wyf, -(h)wynt 133
eneit dros eneit 226
ennic 3
enw 10, 29, -eu 29
yr (prep.), yr mwyn, yr na(t), yr pan, yr ys *see under* y
erbyn 193
erbyn (v.n.), -nyeit 158
erbyn pan 242
erbyn yn erbyn 225
erchessit 127
erti 159
eredic 159
ereill 85–87
eruynnyeit 158
ergyt 34
erlit, -vys 158
erlyn-yt (2. pl. pres. indic.) 120, -ynt 158
essynn 31
estr-awn, -onyon 35
etti 58
etto(n) 6, 221
etwa(n), etwo 6, 221
ethyw 132
eyt (3. sg. pres. indic.) 119, 132

F, V

ual kynt 203
val y(d) *see* mal
vet 196
velly 223, 239
vry 223
uy hun, &c. 89–90

Ff, F

fflwring 8
fo, ffo 8, 156, -es 122, -hawr 121
forest-eu, -yd 32
furu(f) 13

G

gad-(a)el, -u 152, 157
gadaw 149
gauael 150, 157
gauar 12
gal, -on 28, 31
galwettawr 121
gan 17, 57, 60, 83, 190–91, -tu(t), -tunt 60
gan-adoed, -ydoed 127, 152
gartref 223, 227
geing (verb) 153
gelor, -awr 28
gelw-i (3. sg. imperf.) 121, -it (3. sg. pres. indic.) 119, (impers. pret.) 126, -ideint 127
gellit (3. sg. pres. indic.) 119
geni 152
genni 152–3
ger, gyr, geir, gar 191
ger bronn 191
geruyd 194–5
ger llaw (prep.) 191, (adverb) 225
germein 158
gnawd, gnodach 39
goch-el 62, 158, -lyt 158
goueyn 29
gofwyaw 157
gouynn-of (1. sg. pres. subj.) 128
gog-el 162, -lyt 158
gogyuadav 157
gogyuerchi 121
gogyuoet 38
gogyfurd 38
gogymeint 38
goheb(u) 154
golch-ettawr 121, -i 6
go(r)diw-awd, -edawd 124, 125, -es 158
gorelwi 121
gor-eu (verb), -yw 147
gorfedd 9
goruot 146
gorllwyn 153
gormod 104–5
goruc 52, 124, 130, 131, 160, -pwyt 126, 130, -um 130
gorwyt-awd 28

gorymda 156
gridua(n) 158
Gröec 4
grud 34, -yeu 28
Gruffud 6
gwada 118
gwae 245
gwäeg 4
gwaethiroed (Duw) 246
gwaew-awr 28, 29, -ar, -yr 29
guanaid 130
gvant 124
gwarandawaf 116
gwarawt 124
gwarchadw 11, -af 116
gwarchawd 11
gwares (3. sg. pres. subj.) 128
gwartha(f) 9, 40, 189, 217
gwasgar-af 116, -awt 119
gwassanaeth, -u 157, -a 117
gwatw-ar, -or 6
gwawar 29
gwdost 147
(g)wedy (conj.) 55, 56, 237
(g)wedy (adverb) 223
(g)wedy (prep.) 138, 160, 193–4
gwed-(h)a 118, -u 153
gwed-dawt 11
gweheird 116
gwein-i 159, -iu 115, -yd, -ydaf 159
gweint 124, 135
gweiss-yon, -yonein 33
gweith 'time' 49, 226–7
gweithret 34
gwel-at, -et (impers. pret.) 126, -(h)attor, -(h)itor 120–1, -as, -es 122, -hvy 129, -i (3. sg. imperf.) 121, -if 115, -yd 119, -ydeint 127, -yn 120
gwelet 110, 157
guereit 131
gwerendeu 116
gwers 98, 227
gwerth-uawrogach, -uorach 38
gwerth na(t) 237–8
gweryt 116
gwëus 'lip' 9
gwe(y)wyr 29
gwinllan 20
gwiscof 128
Gulat Uorgant 14
gwl-adoed, -edyd 32
gwnaeth 124, 130, 135, -pwyt 126, 130, -oed 131
gwna-haud 119, 130, -hawnt 120, 130, -ho 131
gwnech 128, 131
gwne-if, -it 115, 130
gwneith-um 130, 135, -ur 3, 130, -yt (3. sg. pret.) 124, 130
gwnelit (3. sg. pres.) 119, 130
gwneud 132
gwneuth-ud 132, -ur 3, 109, 130, 132, 159
gwneyd (3. sg. pres. indic.) 119, 130
guoreu 147
gwr 27, 105–6
gwraged 30, -eint 33
gwreith (verb) 130, 131, (noun) 131
gwrth-eb 154, -eppo 128
gwrthledit 129
gwybot 147–8
gwyd-at, -yat 122, 147–8
gwyl 116
gwyl-at 158, -yas, -iis, -wys 122
gwylch 6
gwyp-it (3. sg. pres.) 119, -wyf 148
gvyrhaud 166
gwyrth 34
gwys 127, 147
gyt a(c) *see* kyt a(c)
gyt ac y(d) 236
gyuarwyneb a(c) 192
gyuerbyn a(c) 192
gynneu 85, 223, gynne 4, 223
gynt 85, 223, 225
gyrhawt 119

H

ha 245
haeach, -en 224
haearn 27
hagen 233
haha 245
han-bych, -ffo, -oed, -pych, -u, -wyf 147
hand-wyf, -id, -oed 147
hanuot 147
hanred 59
Harlech 20

hawd 35, 40
haudbeit 165
hawl 117
heb (prep.) 17, 59, 164, 194
heb (verb) 154
heb law 194
hebu 154
heby(r) 153–4
hediw 4, 221
heuyt 221
heibyaw 60, 225
hel-a, -y 10
helyc (verb) 117
hen 40, -yon 35
henffych well 246
Henllan 20
Henllys 20
hennyd 97
heno(eth) 4, 221
herwyd 194
herwyd ual y(d) 238
herwyd y(d) 238
hëu 5
hir 40, -yon 35
hirllaes 20
hithe 4, 49
hoian a 245
holl 16, 99, -awl, -re 99
hon-af, -awd 59
honn, honno 82–85
honneit 166
hu(t) 170–1
hw / chw 11
hwchwithev 58
hwde, hwdy 154
hwnn, hwnnw 4, 82–85
hwnt 223
hwydda 117
hyt 17, 195
hyt ar 195
hyt at 195
hyt is 195
hyt na(t) 42, 174, 238
hyt pan 42, 238
hyt rac bronn 195
hyt tra 238–9
hyt y 238
hyt ympenn 196
hyt yn 196
hyt yn oet 196
hydyr 39
hyvrydach 39
hyhitheu 58
hynaf 'chief', -yeid 36
hynaif 36
hynn, hynny 82–85
hyny *see* yny
hyttr-af, -et 39

I, Y

y 'to' 17, 44, 53–54, 57, 60, 70, 142, 146, 150, 151–2, 155–6, 162, 196–9
y (particle) 19, 20, 199, 228
y (yn) 138, 199
y am 199, 201
y ar 199–200, 201
y dan *see* tan
y dreis 201
y dros *see* tros
Idewon 6, 28, Ideon 6
ie(f), ieu 177
Iessu 26
ieuang 8
y ueis 201
y vewn 202
y vyny(d) 10, 225
y gan 151, 200
yll 99–100
y maes 222
y maes o 201
y mywn (y) 202, 222
y rac 200, 206–7
is (prep.) 17, 60, 202–3
is (adj.) 41
is gil 203
is law 203
issot 60, 225
is-taw, -ti 60
Ithel 3, 6
y waeret, y'r gwaeret 225
ywch 'higher' 2
ywch 'to you' 60
iwrch, yrch 6, 27
y wrth 150, 200–1
y ymdeith 222

L, Ll

llated 'was killed' 126
lladydoed 127
llavn-awr 28

llafuuryus 6
llall 85–87
llar, -a, -y 10
llas 'was killed' 127
llaw, -ach 40
llawch 117
llawer 71, 101–2, -yon 101
lle 34
llet (comp. adj.) 41
llet(u)rith 9
lledess-eint, -ynt 127
lledi (3. sg. imperf.) 121
llefeir 116
llefha 158
llei 16–17, 40
lleill 85–87
llemein 158
llenn-eu 28
llesseint 127
llettaud 119
lletty 13, -eu 27
lle(w)ot 5, 32
llewssei 127
llewych-awt 166, -yt 119
lliaws 102
llithyessit 123
llochessid 123
llory 'stick' 10
lloscetawr 121
lludyas 159
lluoss-awc, -yd, -ogrwyd 102
llurugeu 3
llwd-wn 13, -yn 31, 47
llwr-w, -y 10
llwybryn 120
lluydav 157
llwytyd 'prospers' 119
llydyn 32, 47
llygod-en, llyc 31
llicrid 119
llyma 98, 246
llyna 246
llynn 34
llyry 10
llys 34
llyss-ewyn, -eu 31, -euoed 33
ll wychedic 4

M

mab, -von 31
makwyu-eit 28
mae, maen(t) 136, 143–4
maen, mein 27
mäes 4
maeth 124
mag-adoed, -yssyt 127–8
mahar-aen, -uin, -en 3
mal, val (prep.) 84, 203
malkawn 240
mal kyt / kyny 236
mal na(t) 239
mal pei 239, 240
mal / val y(d) 239
manach, meneich 27
managaf 116
march 27, -awc, -oges 35, -ogaeth 157
Maredud 6
marnat 11
mar-war, -wor 6
mawr 35, 41
meccid, meckyt 119
medressid 123
med 'says' 154
med-dawt 11, -w 10
meddic 3
medwl 154
medyd 'rules' 119
medyl-yeit 158, -yut 6
meuyl 246
megittor 121
megys, vegys (prep.) 84, 203
megys kyt / kyny 236
megys na(t) 240
megys y(d) 42, 240
meib 31, 47, -yon 31, 33, -yonein 33
meint 93–94
meir-i 30, 33, -yon 33
meir(y)ch 12, 27
meithring 8
men, myn 'place' 67
meneg-i 157, -is 122
menyc 'declares' 116
meth-a 117, -awd 119
meu 54
Meur-uc, -yc 3
mi (a) (particle) 172
mi hun 89
mil 16, 45, 46
mo 107
moch (adverb) 221
modryb, -ed 30

moe 4
moei 5
moes 'give' 154
mol-adwy 35, 116, -ediw 116
mor 'so, as' 20, 38, 43
moryon (pl. of mawr) 35
mudif 115
mu hunan 89
mwrthwl 4
mwy 4, 15, 41, 93, 229
mwy vwy 229
myn (interjectional) 245
mynet 109, 132
myn-hwynt 129, -nv(y)s 123
mynychau 156
mynyd, -ed 30
myr (mor 'sea') 32
mywn 10, 202

N

na(c) (neg.) 174, 177–9
na(c) (conj.) 21, 53, 232
nacha(f), nycha 246
na(t) 21, 55, 61, 64, 173–4
na do 178
nac ef 178–9
nam 232, -wyn 203, 232, -en 232, -yn 90, 232
namwy 233
nanheu 32
nas 55
naw 22, 45, -wyr 16
neb 71, 96–97, 105–6
nebawt 105
neb kyfryw 92, 106
neb dim 106
neb rei 106
neb ryw 90–91, 106
neb un 106
neges 189, 214, -sawl 189
nei, neyeynt, nyeint 29
neill 16, 24, 85–87
neint 32
neith(y)wyr 4, 221
nemawr 105
nepeth 106
nes (adj.) 40
nes (prep.) 203
nes nes (adverb) 229
neu 'or' 17, 46, 231
neu(t) 21, 55, 61, 62, 169–70
neur 166, 170
newyd 230
'nhad 22
ny(t) 21, 55, 61–62, 64, 118, 141, 173–4
nyt amgen 44
nyr 166, 167
nys 55
no(c) 21, 43, 44, 53, 90
no chyt 236
noði (3. sg. imperf.) 121
nog-et, -yt 43, 231
nott-vy 129, -wyf 128
nw 'now' 221
nwy, nyw 4, 55–56
ny hun(ein) 89
nyrth 32

O

o (interject.) 25, 245
o 'under' 205
o(c) (prep.) 17, 37–38, 45, 46, 53, 59, 68, 70–71, 79–80, 83, 92, 95–96, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104–5, 105, 107, 147, 150, 161, 203–6
o(t) (conj.) 21, 55, 175, 240–2
o achaws (prep.) 83, (conj.) 233
o adlo 205
o bell 228
o blegyt 205–6
o bleit 206
obry 223
och, och a 245
odit 102
odidawc 102
ody allan 222
odi ar 200
odieithyr 193
odieithyr mod 193
ody uays 222
ody vywn 202
ody hwnt 223
ody-ma(n) 220, -na, -naeth, -no, -noed 221
ody rwng 208–9
od is 203
odywch 2, 213
od uch 212–13
oe 'to his', &c. 53, 54

oed 'was' 17, 61, 110–11, 127, 137, 143
oef 'I am' 4, 136
oes 17, 136, 144
oess-eu, -oed 33
oetta 129
oeth *see* wyth
o vaes y 201, 206
o vewn 222
o vreid 224
ovynhau 156
o vywn (y) 202
o herwyd 206
oy a, oian a 245
o ywrth 201
o law 206
olrein 158
ol yn ol 226
oll 98–99
o newyd 228
ony(t) 'if not' 241
on(y)t 'except, but' 233, 241
or 'if' 241
o'r blaen 225
o'r diwed 225
o'r pan 242
ossit 143, 241
ottid 119

P

pa 16, 21, 75–76
pa beth 76
padiw 77–78
pa gyfryw 92
paham, pam 77
pahar 77
paladyr 27
pan 21, 55, 56, 143, 'when' 242, 'whence, that' 79–80
pany(t) 175–6
pan yw 80
par-a, -ha 117, -hawd 5
pa rac 77
paret, parwyt 3
parth a(c) 206
parth ac ar / at 206
pa ryw 90
pa sawl 76, 95–96
pathawr 76, 150
pawb 71, 97
pe 243
pebyll, -eu 30, -av 157, -yawnt 120
pet 16, 78
pedeir dec 45
pedryollt 45
pedwar deg 45
pedwyr-yd, -ed 47
pei, bei 55, 56, 145, 242–3
peidyaw 157, 165
pei, bei na(t) 243
peirch 116
pei ron 243
pelli 121
penn, -awr 28
penrhyn 20
per-eid 119, -eu, -y 117, -heyt 119, -i 157, -it 126, -ideint 127, -is 122
persson 34
perygil 12
petuei, pettei, &c. 243
peth 37, 76, 96
pieiffo bynnac 82
pi-eu 4, 80–81, -euat, -eiuu, -oed 81, -wyt 80
pob 71, 98
pob kyfryw 92, 98
pob dim 106
pob peth 98
pob rei 98
pob ryw 90, 98
pob un 98
poe 'who?' 4
poen(h)a 118
pony(t) 175–6
porthloed, -eu 28
pregethyssit 123
Pryden 30
pryt na(t) 174, 244
pryt pan 243
prynessid 123
pum(p) *see* pymp
pumwyr 16
pwy 4, 74–75, 78
pwy bynnac 81–82
pwy gilyd 97
py *see* pa
py (prep.) 97, 206
py diw bynhac 82
pym(p) 16, 22, 45
pymthec 45
py na(t) 243

pynt (pl. of pont) 27
pyr (py ry) 77, 166
pyr (py yr) 77
pyrth (3. sg. pres. indic.) 116
pysc 30, -awt 29, 30
pythewnos 47

R(h)

rac 43, 59, 77, 83, 93, 104, 206–8, -dut 59
rac bronn 208
racco 60, 85, 225
rac llaw 208
ragor 103–4, -i 104
rang (ranc) 154, -hawdd, -ho, ragwy 155
red-ec 157, -eint 122
rengi (bod) 154–5
rei 75, 85, 92–93, 98
reit 39, 198, 214, -yach, -taf 39
reinc 154
renni (3. sg. imperf.) 121
reuhid 119
riein, rianed 30
riu-ed 126, -esit 123
ro 155
rocdaw, &c. 59
ro(d)i 10, 155
rod-wy 129, -yd 115, -yssit 'gave' 123
roes, -pwyt, -soed, -sum 155
roth-id 129, -o 155
ruch 2
ruthur 13, 227
rwng 59, 208
rwy (adverb) 221
rwy (ry + pron.) 55
ry 'too' 20
ry (particle) 21, 55, 61–62, 64, 166–9, 172–3, 180
rydit 34
rynnawd 227
ryres 128
ryw 16, 86, 90–91

S

sauan 13
sarff 34
sathra, sathyr 118
sawl 16, 95–96
sef 52–53, 143
seu-i 121, -it 129, -yll 159
seilym 32
seith 4, 16, 22, 45, -wyr 16
sur(h)a 118
syber(w) 11
synyeit 158
syr 'stars' 31

T

tal 116, -as 122, -haur 121, -loef 128, -hoent 129, -wef 128
tal yn tal 225
tan (prep.) 17, 59, 209–10
tarawaf 116
taw 80, 136, 144
tawd 117, 166
tebic 3
tebygach 39
techyn 120
tegach 39
tei 27
teit 32
telediw 166
telitor 120
tereu, tery 116
teu (verb) 116
teulu 3
ti (a) 172
tir-ed 28, 33, -yon 33
titheu 49, 57
to-it, -hid 119
torlan 20
torllwyth 20
tprue 245
tra (adverb) 21
tra (conj.) 21, 55, 56, 210
tra(c) (prep.) 21, 210
tradwy 221
träet 4, 27
traeth-atter, -attor 121
trannoeth 221
trech 41
trefnwy 129
trengh-it 119, -is 122
treigyl, -gweith 226
treithitor 120
trennyd 221
tröi 5
tromhaf 39
tros 17, 59, 210–11
trwy 17 ,59, 211–12

trwy y, trw yt 244
tryd-y(d), -e(d) 47, 48
trywyr 16, 47
tu a(c) 212
tu ac att 212
tu hun 89
twll 36
twryf 12, twrwf 13
twym(y)n 12, 232
ty, -eu 27
tykya 118, 155
tyuit 119
tyno 13
tyrch, -ot 32
tyruit 119
tirran 120
tywyllau 156

U, V

uch 2, (prep.) 17, 60, 212–13, (adj.) 41
uch benn 212
uchel 41
vchet 41
uch law 212
uch-ot 60, 225, -of, -taw, -ti 60
ud 6
ud-u(d) 'to them' 60, -unt 3, 60
vuud, uuyd 3
unben 16, 27, 47
undec 45, -uet 47
urun 3
ussu 3

W

wb 245
weith-ieu, -on 227
weldy 246
wh = chw 11
wi a, wy a 245
wrth 17, 60, 153, 213–14
wrth val y(d) 240
wy 'to his' 53
wy 'is' 75
wy 'they' 49, 57
wylouein 158
wyneb ar wyneb 225
wyth, oeth 4, 16, 22, 45

Y

y *see* yr (y)
ych 'your' (pl.) 53
y(d) 23, 64, 141–2, 171, 180
yt 21, 56, 64, 171, 180, 243
ydiw 4, 138
y velly *see* velly
yng, -ot, -o 60, 225
yg gwarthaf 217
yg gwyd 217
y gyt 'together' 224
y gyt a(c) *see* kyt a(c)
y gyt ac y(d) *see* gyt ac y(d)
yg kyfeir 216
yg kylch 216
yg kylch o gylch 216
ym (pers. pron.) 56
ym (interjectional) 245–6
yma(n) 85, 220
y mae(nt) *see* mae
ymannos 221
ymchoel-ut 11, -yt 158
ymchwelut 11, 158
ymda-af, -vys 156
ymdan 183, -adut, -adunt 58
imteith 135, 156
ymdeith 156, 222–3
ymdiret 157
ymeith 205, 223
ymhoel-awd 119, -ut 11
ymlaen 217
ymor-alw, -awl 11
ym penn 218
ym plith 218
ym pwyth, ymhwyth 218–19, 246
imwaredit 115
ymysc 84, 218
yn (prep.) 21, 60, 84, 94, 108, 110, 138, 162, 214–19
yn (adverbial) 20, 22, 99, 101, 104, 215–16, 228
yn (predicative) 19, 20, 22, 215–16, 139
yn 'there, then' 71–72, 221
yn 'our' 53
ynaeth 221
yn annat 216
yn awr 24, 227
yn drws 216–17
y neb 69–70
y neill ae 86–87, 231
yn erbyn 217
yneuadeu 12

yn gytneit ac y(d) 237
yn herwyd 217
yn hyt 217
yniuer, -oed 12
yn lle 218
yn llwrw 218
yno, ynoeth 221
yn ol 219
ynt 136, 143
ynteu 49–51, 57, ynte 4, 49
yn wysc 219
yny 21, 41–42, 55, 244–5
yr (y) (particle) 23, 62, 64, 169, 172–3, 180
y(r) (article) 24–26, 70
yr (prep.) 42, 60, 77, 93–94, 219–20
y rawc 222
yr hwnn, &c. 66, 69–70
yr llyned 221
yr mwyn 220
yr na(t) 219–20
y rof i a Duw 246
yr pan 219, 242
yr ry, y ry 63
yr un 69–70, 87, 88, 97
y rwng *see* rwng
yr ys 142–3, 219
ys (copula) 51, 136, 139, 141–3, 234, 241
ys (particle) *see* as
ys (pron.) *see* as
y sawl 69–70, 95–96
yscolhëic 5
yscoryssit 123
ysgwyd, -awr 28
yscylueit 158
ysgytw-aw, -eit 158
yspeil 11
yspryt 11–12
ys(s)ef *see* sef
yssit 17, 142
ys(s)-yd 63, 119, -ym, -yn 142
yssywaeth 247
yssy waethiroed 246
ystauell 11
ystlys 11
ystryw 11
ystyr 34, -yeit 158, -yych 6
y taw *see* taw
y tu a(c) *see* tu a(c)
yw 'is' 4, 136, 143
yw 'their' 53
yw 'to his', &c. 53, 54
yw y 'to his', &c. 53, 54

OLD WELSH

ad 187, 188
agit 119, 132
amtanndi 58
anbiic guel 147
anit 176
anu 29, 123
bet 196
boi 137
boit 137
breenhined 32
bryeint 34
cemmein 29
cephitor 120, 149
couer 4
cuinhaunt 120
degion 35
di 201
dicon-es 61, 122, 151, -etent 127, 151
didi 60
diguolouichetic
di-r-gatisse 166
egid 119
enuein 29
erchim 157
Griphiud 6
guar, guor 40, 188
guartha 9
gu(o)tan 209
guolleuni 5
guragun 131
gurth 213
ha(c) 23
hacet 231
hai 63
hanaud 59
hegit 119, 132
henoid 4
hit ni 244
hittoi 138
hois 144
hui 11

hunnuid, hunnoid 4
in pan 72
ir, 'r 24
Iudhail 3, 6
limnint 120
molim 9
Morgetiud 6
nammui 233
naunecant 45
nertheint 120
oraur 234
paniu 4
pi-gurth(r)et 81
piouboi 81
prinit 119
rit 166
ruimmein 29
scamnhegint 120
telu 3
t(o)nou 13
treidin 120
trimuceint 46
triti 10
tru-io, -sso 60

IRISH

ad-gén 148
ad-gnin 148
ainm 10
aithgne 148
amal sin 223
anman 29
ar 188, 193
ar chiunn 193
-benad 122
-bo 138
cách 97
cach 98
can 79
-carad 122
céle 96
cenn 193
ci, ce 80
cia 74
co 97
cú 28
cuit 96
delb 10
di 201
dia 29
dlig-im 13, 151, -ed 13
do 201
duine 105
escarae 192
ess-amin 192
etar . . . ocus 208
fer 105
-fess 127
fiad 217
-fitir 148
fo 205
fo-, for- 5
for 188
fo-ress 128
fri(th) 213
ga(i)b-id 150
gairm 158
garb 10
gni- 132
i mmedón 202
immurgu 233
imthecht 156
i ndorus 217
iss-id 142
iss-um 142
léimm 158
lorg 218
lour 101
marbnad 11
mebul 246
medb 10
medón 10
méit 93
mian 220
móir 38
mos 221
nammá 233
nech 105
no, nu 169
nómad 48
o, úa 205
ochtmad 48
or 103
óre 234
rethid 136
ro 166
sain, -red 59
samlaid 223

sech- 154
serb 10
-slass 127
-tá 144
tarb 10
trén 41
uile 98

CORNISH

an 227
del 237
dues 136
guraf 131
herwydh 195
hynse 97
myns 93
nansyw 170
py gansse 78
speres 11
the 199
the rag 206
the weth / wel 199
-yth (2. sg. pres. indic.) 115

BRETON

an 227
deuz 136
evelhenn 223
-ez (2. sg. pres. indic.) 115
groaff 131
hentez 97
heruez 195
ment 93
spered 11

GAULISH

are 188
legasit 123
oxtumeto(s) 48

LATIN

ad 188
agō 135
amā-re 115
antequam 44
audī-re 115
au-fero 205
corpus 33
Dauīd 10
dē 201
duodecim 45
est 138
fui 138
hic 82
ille 82
ita 231
par(i)ēt- 4
patior 165
piscātus 29
spīritus 11
spolium 11
stā-re 144

GREEK

ἐλαύνω 136
πάρ(α) 188

ENGLISH

at 188
florin 8
for 188
that 82
this 82

FRENCH

voici 246
voilà 246

ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA

p. xxi, l. 15. *The Black Book of Carmarthen.* Cf. M. Watkin, 'The Chronology of the Black Book of Carmarthen on the basis of its Old French Phenomena', CLlGC xiv. 214–26.

p. xxii, l. 3. *The Book of Aneirin.* Now see also K. H. Jackson, *The Gododdin* (Edinburgh, 1969). Cf. M. Watkin, 'The Book of Aneirin, its Old French Remaniments—their Chronology on the basis of the Old French Language', CLlGC xiv. 53–73.

p. xxii, l. 5. The Taliesin historical poems. See now I. Williams, *The Poems of Taliesin.* English version by J. E. C. Williams (Dublin, 1968).

p. xxiv, l. 24. The *englynion* of the graves. Now see Thomas Jones, *The Black Book of Carmarthen 'Stanzas of the Graves'* (Sir John Rhŷs Memorial Lecture, 1967). This contains a discussion of the stanzas as well as a critical text and translation.

p. xxv, l. 18. To the references to editions of religious poetry add RC xliii 385–97.

p. xxv, l. 20. See further B xx. 95–103. Also G. Morgan, 'Nodiadau ar Destun Barddoniaeth y Tywysogion yn Llsgr.N.L.W. 4973', B xxi. 149–50.

p. xxx, l. 3. *The White Book of Rhydderch* (WBRh). Cf. M. Watkin, 'The Chronology of the White Book of Rhydderch on the basis of its Old French Graphical Phenomena', CLlGC xiii, 329–55.

p. xxx, last line. Also R. L. Thomson, *Owein* (Dublin, 1968).

p. xxxi. l. 4. *Peredur vab Evrawc.* Also K. Meyer, *Peredur ab Efrawc* (Leipzig, 1887)—text (from RBH) with a glossary; J. Le Roux, 'Historia Peredur vab Evrawk', *Annales de Bretagne* xxxv. 228–59, 456–95, xxxvi. 96–121, 528–57, xxxvii. 54–67, 384–401—text (from WBRh) with French and Breton translations.

p. xxxii. LAWS. Now cf. H. D. Emanuel, *The Latin Texts of the Welsh Laws* (Cardiff, 1967); also Morfydd E. Owen, 'Llawysgrif Gyfreithiol Goll', B xxii. 338–43. The Laws are examined in a special number of *The Welsh History Review* (Cardiff, 1963).

p. xxxii, l. 19. *The Black Book of Chirk.* Cf. M. Watkin, 'The Black Book of Chirk and the Orthographia Gallica Anglicana', CLlGC xiv. 351–60, also D. Jenkins, ib. xv. 104–7.

pp. xxxiv–xxxvi. HISTORICAL WORKS. Further B. F. Roberts 'Esboniad Cymraeg ar Broffwydoliaeth Myrddin', *c.* 1216–1260—an exposition of the *Prophetiae Merlini* (B xxi. 287–99): Pen. 16 (xiiith century), with variants from Pen. 27. ii (*c.* 1475–1500).

'Un o Lawysgrifau Hopcyn ap Tomas o Ynys Dawy', B xxii. 223–8.

Brut y Brenhinedd, in course of publication by the Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies.

See also E. Reiss, 'The Welsh Versions of Geoffrey of Monmouth's *Historia*', *The Welsh History Review* iv. 97–127.

p. xxxvi. RELIGIOUS AND DEVOTIONAL WORKS. See J. E. C. Williams, 'Medieval Welsh Religious Prose', *Proceedings of the International Congress of Celtic Studies 1963* (Cardiff, 1966), 65–97.

p. xxxvii, l. 35. 'Breudwyt Pawl Ebostol'. See now J. E. C. Williams, 'Welsh Versions of Visio Sancti Pauli', EC x. 109–26: the text from Llan. 4 (*c.* 1400) is printed on pp. 124–6.

p. xlii. *Genealogies*. Now also P. C. Bartrum, *Early Welsh Genealogical Tracts* (Cardiff, 1966); further id. 'Hen Lwythau Gwynedd a'r Mars', GLlGC xii. 201–35, 'Pedigrees of the Welsh Tribal Patriarchs' ib. xiii. 93–146, 'Arthuriana from the Genealogical Manuscripts' ib. xiv. 242–5, 'Notes on the Welsh Genealogical Manuscripts', Cymmr. Trans. (1968), 63–98.

p. xliii. *Varia*. Add 'Das älteste kymrische Traumbuch' (ZCP xiii. 55–92): Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400); also Pen. 26 (*c.* 1456), 172 (1582), Card. 6 (*c.* 1550).

'The Pretended Exhumation of Arthur and Guinevere' (RC xxxiii. 432–49, with translation): Llan. 4 (*c.* 1400), also Llan. 2 (*c.* 1450–1500) and later MSS. See also *Trivium* iii. 30–47.

'Rhai Swynion 'Cymraeg'—some Welsh charms (B xxi. 198–213): Llan. 27 (*c.* 1400), 3 (xvth century) and later MSS.

Cf. also P. C. Batrum, 'Tri Thlws ar Ddeg Ynys Brydain' 'The Thirteen Treasures of the Island of Britain' (EC x. 434–77): Pen. 51 (*c.* 1460), BM Addl. MS. 14,919 (*c.* 1500), 60 (*c.* 1500?), etc. Earlier (in Welsh), E. I. Rowlands, 'Y Tri Thlws ar Ddeg', *Llên Cymru* v. 33–69, 145–7.

p. xliii. GRAMMARS. Cf. two works by L. Fleuriot, *Dictionnaire des Gloses en vieux breton*; *Le vieux breton, éléments d'une grammaire*. Paris, 1964.

p. xliv. PRINCIPAL JOURNALS. Add *Studia Celtica*. Cardiff, 1966–. *Trivium*. Lampeter, 1966–.

p. 2, § 2. In SW *u* also represents [ə] in certain positions, e.g. the accented penult, as in [əxel] *uchel* 'high'. Cf. T. A. Watkins, *Studia Celtica* i. 159.

p. 21, § 24. **The Spirant Mutation** (see LHEB 634–8). Also *Celtica* v. 127–34; and cf. Green, ib. vii. 116–9.

p. 21, § 25. **The Nasal Mutation.** See T. A. Watkins, 'Dulliau Orgraffyddol Cymraeg Canol o ddynodi'r Treiglad Trwynol', B xxiii. 7–13.

p. 28, l. 21. For *ed*: read *-oed*:

p. 28, ll. 29, 32. *edystr-awt* 'steeds' BT 70. 7, *edystr-awr* CA 6. 146. These should be listed under § 30 (*c*) (1) *y* [ï > *y* [ə], pp. 29–30.

p. 37, § 40. For a discussion of this and kindred constructions, cf. P. MacCana, 'An Old Nominal Relative Sentence in Welsh', *Celtica* vii. 91–115.

p. 49, l. 3. Cf. further C. Watkins, 'On the Syntax of the Ordinal, *Lochlann* iii. 287–97.

p. 50, § 55 (*a*). Cf. also E. Evans, B xxi. 142.

p. 51, l. 18. 'Ir'. Read 'It'.

p. 53, l. 11. (*a*) Prefixed: sing. 1. *vy*, *vyn* (before *p*, *t*, *c*). This requires modification, thus: *vyn* occurs before *t* and *d*, *vym* before *p* and *b*, and *vy(n)g* before *c/k*, *g*. For examples see T. A. Watkins, *Studia Celtica* i. 160.

pp. 55–56. For more examples of *nwy/nyw*, see I. Williams, *The Poems of Taliesin*, ed. J. E. C. Williams (Dublin, 1968), 21.

p. 58, N. 2. Cf. also E. Evans, B xxi. 142–5.

p. 60, § 64. THE RELATIVE PRONOUN. For a penetrating discussion of various aspects of the relative construction, cf. D. Howells, 'The Nasalizing Relative Clause', *Studia Celtica* i. 38–62; note further his notes, ib. ii. 130–46.

p. 108. THE VERB. Cf. J. Gagnepain, 'La Sémiologie du verbe celtique: sỳsteme du moyen-gallois', EC x. 413–33.

p. 114, § 127. For Preterite, Pl. 1, *carassom* read *carassam*.

p. 123, l. 37. The *t-* preterite. Cf. following note. Also H. Wagner, 'Keltisches t-Praeteritum, slavischer Wurzel-aorist und germanisches schwaches Praeteritum', ZCP xxviii. 1–18.

p. 128, § 137. For an explanation of the origin of subjunctive forms, and also of the *t-* preterite (pp. 123–4), and the *s-* preterite (pp. 122–3), cf. C. Watkins, *Indo-European Origins of the Celtic Verb 1. The Sigmatic Aorist* (Dublin, 1962), 145–80: it is argued that all three derive ultimately from the *s-* aorist of late Indo-European. Cf. *Ériu* xix. 25–46.

p. 128, § 137, N. In addition to *gwares*, etc., note *rydecho* 'flees' (**tek-s-ā*, indicative in Proto-Brittonic of a new subjunctive sign *-sā-*); see Watkins, op. cit., pp. 151–2.

p. 138, N. 1. *bo* < **bā-* < **bhwā-*. Welsh *bo* derives from a form such as **bā* only in part, and not directly. Cf. Watkins, op. cit. pp. 154–5.

p. 157, § 179. *gauael* 'hold', *ymauael*, *ymauel* 'catch, seize' .These also serve as verbal stems to which the personal endings are added. Cf. T. A. Watkins, *Studia Celtica* i. 160. Likewise *gwassanaeth* 'serve'; later other forms with uncommon endings (e.g. *adeilat* 'build') were adopted as verbal stems.

p. 166, l. 18. PRE-VERBAL PARTICLES. Cf. further D. Howells, *Studia Celtica* ii. 138–46.

p. 210, § 238. **Tra(c), Dra.** For more examples of this rare preposition, see I. Williams, *The Poems of Taliesin*, ed. J. E. C. Williams (Dublin, 1968), 21.

p. 224, l. 25, (*m*). *haeach* 'almost'. Cf. further *The Poems of Taliesin* (v. supra), p. 116.

p. 235, § 262. **Kyn ny(t)** 'although . . . not'. Cf. note by V. Hull, where it is suggested that *kyny* also = 'that . . . not', ZCP xxix. 181–2.